This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Academic French course : in accordance w
Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 04925 5446

ACADEMIC FRENCH COURSE

MUZZARELLI

FIRST YEAR

DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION
LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY

PRESENTED BY THE PUBLISHERS

SCHOOL OF EDUCATION
LIBRARY

TEXTBOOK COLLECTION
GIFT OF
THE PUBLISHERS

STANFORD UNIVERSITY
LIBRARIES

The retail price of this book is $ .....

THE

ACADEMIC FRENCH COURSE

IN ACCORDANCE WITH

THE LATEST GRAMMATICAL RULES ADOPTED BY THE FRENCH ACADEMY

BY

ANTOINE MUZZARELLI

PROFESSOR OF MODERN LANGUAGES AND LITERATURE; AUTHOR OF "LES ANTONYMES DE LA LANGUE FRANÇAISE," "ENGLISH ANTONYMES," ETC.

DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION
LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY

First Year

NEW YORK ·:· CINCINNATI ·:· CHICAGO
AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

605592
C

COPYRIGHT, 1894, BY
AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY.

W. P. 7

INTRODUCTION.

An experience of fifteen years in the teaching of modern languages has convinced the author of this work that the much-vaunted Natural Method is totally inapplicable in schools, — a view which is fully borne out by the experience of the foremost instructors of this country, who have thoroughly tested its merits. Their opinion is to the effect, that, in modern language teaching in the school, we must keep to the standard methods, while ever seeking to improve upon them.

It is with this distinct object in view that the present work has been undertaken. It aims to be preëminently *practical*, advancing from the easiest of first steps to the moderately difficult in a constant gradation. Its great object is *simplicity*. Only those rules which are absolutely indispensable are given in the body of the grammar in connection with the exercises, and they are arranged after a strictly utilitarian plan. The pupil's brain is allowed free course, unimpeded by countless exceptions, or the mass of grammatical baggage which is the delight of the grammarian and the bane of the schoolboy. The author's aim is to supply the pupil with as full and complete a vocabulary as is possible within the narrow limits of a two-years' course, making him acquainted from the beginning with the names of such objects as he comes in contact with in his everyday surroundings. In order that he may secure a thorough grasp of everything presented for study, care has been taken to provide recapitulation exercises, at

short intervals, in the shape of conversations between teacher and pupil, which may take the form of either oral or written exercises, or both, as the teacher may judge expedient.

Further recapitulation exercises of a new character have been given at the end of the regular conjugations, under the form of extracts of moderate difficulty, which have been specially designed as the best method to enable the pupil to master the various parts of speech, so as to employ them correctly and without hesitation. These exercises consist of *transpositions;* i.e., the alteration in gender, number, and person, of various parts of speech occurring in the extracts.

Entirely new features of the present work are, firstly, an introduction to the phonetics of the language, reproducing French sounds with as nearly as possible their English equivalents; and, secondly, the conjugation of the four regular model verbs, with a different object after each person, always appropriate to the verb, and carefully chosen, so that the same object is never found twice. A complete sentence is thus formed, largely increasing the pupil's vocabulary, and eliminating the weary barrenness of the old cut-and-dried method, *je donne, tu donnes, il donne,* etc. Special care has also been taken to explain fully the use of the adjectives and pronouns, with all their changes of gender, number, and person.

The subjunctive mood, the irregular verbs and their derivatives, together with various other instruments of torture to a beginner, have been left over for the second year. Exception has, however, been made in the case of *aller,* which, being of such constant recurrence in both spoken and written French, is conjugated in full in the Appendix, where will be found grouped together those points of syntax, with the more important grammatical exceptions, that have been purposely eliminated from the body of the work.

Another feature of the work consists in the lessons in conversational form, at the end of the course, entitled "A Trip to Paris," replete with information of the most practical kind, and very largely augmenting the student's vocabulary with an extensive variety of expressions in daily use among the educated classes in France, and showing the genius of the language in a manner that is fascinating, and at the same time easy of application.

The whole aim of the present work is to emphasize the *great difference between the two languages* in their respective turns of thought and forms of expression. The author holds the doctrine that the importance of the *eye* is far greater in the matter of learning a language than that of the *ear*, undoubtedly high as is the latter. Accuracy comes, not through the ear, but through the eye.

In translating, the teacher should never lose sight of the fact that *ideas*, and not *words* merely, are of primary importance: hence to guide the pupil away from the great stumbling-block of *literal* renderings from English into French, ought to be his constant care. Such renderings are in many cases not French at all, but *barbarisms* which would be highly ludicrous to a Gallic ear; just as to an American it would appear the height of absurdity to say, "On entering the building, *I uncovered myself*," which is the literal translation of the French locution, *Je me suis découvert*, meaning "I took off my hat."

It is, after all, the power to read a foreign language, and so enjoy its literature, that is of more universal use than the power to converse in that language.

On the other hand, the importance of *good pronunciation* must not by any means be overlooked. It is mainly to the teacher that the pupils must look for success in this department. He should take care, therefore, diligently to train the

ear by pronouncing each French sentence aloud, and insisting on its repetition, sound for sound, by the class, or, when necessary, by the individual pupil.

We would impress upon our colleagues, if we may be allowed to do so, the vital necessity of proceeding *slowly*, of insisting on the *mastery* of the particular lesson that the class is engaged upon, before proceeding to the next. After all, the teacher is the best judge of the amount of work that can be effectively done in the time set apart in his school for the study of French, and we therefore prefer to leave to his judgment the exact division of the lessons as they become more difficult.

In conclusion, the author would draw attention to the fact that he has constantly endeavored to place himself at the point of view of the English-speaking pupil, having from the very start taken in hand the difficulties that beset the American student. This he has been enabled to do through a long residence in this country, which has familiarized him thoroughly with the fundamental differences between the English language and his mother tongue.

A. M.

NEW YORK, September, 1894.

CONTENTS.

Section		Page
I.	Introduction to the Phonetics of the French Language	9
	Orthography	9
	Pronunciation	12
	Quantity	26
II.	Rules on the Parts of Speech and on *Être* and *Avoir*	33
III.	Conjugation of Regular Verbs	127
IV.	Appendix: Syntax	182
	The Articles at a Glance	182
	The Noun or Substantive	183
	The Adjective	189
	The Pronoun	194
	The Verb	199
	The Adverb	229
	Similarity of English and French Words	232
	French-English Vocabulary	237
	English-French Vocabulary	264
	Index	293

ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS.

acad.	=	académie.
acc.	=	accusative.
adj.	=	adjective.
adv.	=	adverb. / adverbial.
aff.	=	affirmative.
art.	=	article.
cond.	=	conditional.
conj.	=	conjunction.
conjug.	=	conjugation.
conjunc.	=	conjunctive.
dat.	=	dative.
def.	=	definite.
demonstr.	=	demonstrative.
dim.	=	diminutive.
dir. obj.	=	direct object.
disjunc.	=	disjunctive.
ex.	=	example.
f. / fem.	=	feminine.
fut.	=	future.
gen.	=	genitive.
imper.	=	imperative.
impf.	=	imperfect.
indef.	=	indefinite.
indic.	=	indicative.
ind. obj.	=	indirect object.
inter.	=	interrogative.
interj.	=	interjection.
intr.	=	intransitive.
irreg.	=	irregular.
lit.	=	literally.
loc.	=	locution.
m. / masc.	=	masculine.
n.	=	noun.
neg.	=	negative.
nom.	=	nominative.
obj.	=	objective.
p.	=	page.
part.	=	partitive.
perf.	=	perfect.
pers.	=	person. / personal.
p.p.	=	past participle.
pl. / plur.	=	plural.
poss.	=	possessive.
prep.	=	preposition.
pres.	=	present.
pres. part.	=	present participle.
pron.	=	pronoun.
reg.	=	regular.
rel.	=	relative.
s. / sing.	=	singular.
subj.	=	subjunctive.
tr.	=	transitive.
trans.	=	translate.
v.	=	verb.

* before h signifies that *h* is aspirate.
† before a word signifies irregular verb.
[ ] signifies that the word or expression inclosed is not to be translated.

SECTION I.

INTRODUCTION TO THE PHONETICS OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

[The pupil is not required to study this section at the start, as it is intended principally for purposes of reference.]

I.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

1. THE ALPHABET.

The French alphabet is composed of twenty-five letters, as follows: —

A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M
ah	be*	ce*	de	e†	fe	ge‡	he	i‖	je‡	ke	le	me

N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	X	Y	Z
ne	o	pe	ke	re	se	te	u§	ve	kse	i‖	ze¶

W (called *double* **v**) is only used in a few foreign words.

A, e, i, o, u, y, are vowels; the rest are consonants.

---

* Pronounce **be** as **bu** in ***butter;*** **ce** as **ce** in ***lancer***, etc.

† Pronounce **e** as **u** in ***muddle***. ‡ Pronounce **g** and **j** as **s** in ***pleasure***.

‖ Pronounce **i** and **y** as the English **e**.

§ To produce this sound neatly, pronounce the English **e**, then prolong the sound in closing the lips a little upwards, and thus will be formed the exact sound of the French **u**.

¶ According to this new naming, all the letters are masculine. As, however, many people continue to make use of the old names of the letters, we give them herewith: —

a	b	c	d	e	f	g	h	i	j	k	l	m
ah	bay	say	day	ay	eff	zhay	ash	ee	zhee	kah	el	em

n	o	p	q	r	s	t	u	v	x	y	z
en	o	pay	kü	err	ess	tay	ü	vay	iks	eegrec	zed

Following this nomenclature, the seven consonants f, h, l, m, n, r, s, are of the feminine gender, while the remaining letters are of the masculine gender.

2. ACCENTS AND OTHER CONVENTIONAL SIGNS.

There are three accents, — the *acute* (**l'accent aigu**), the *grave* (**l'accent grave**), and the *circumflex* (**l'accent circonflexe**).

(1) The **acute** (´), which indicates a sharp sound, is placed upon any *e* closed,* and if at the end of a syllable, whether or not it is followed by the sign of the plural, *s* (*répété, les bontés*); but there is no accent on the *e* closed of *fermez* or *manger*, because it is not the *e* that ends the syllable.

(2) The **grave** (`), which indicates a broad sound, is placed upon any open *e** preceding a mute syllable belonging to the same word (*prophète, il amènera*); or upon any open *e* preceding a final *s* (such as *après, succès*), except in *mes, tes, ces, les, des, ses,* and words ending in *elle, erre, esse, ette,* etc., in which the doubling of the consonant makes the sound of the preceding *e* open and the accent useless. The grave accent occurs also on *a* in a few words (*à, là, déjà, çà*) and on *u* in *où*.

(3) The **circumflex** (^), which indicates a broader sound, is placed upon every vowel save *y*. It is used when the vowel is long, and denotes some letter now discarded (as in *âge, tête, épître, côte,* which were formerly spelled *aage, teste,* etc.); and in some instances merely to distinguish words which are spelled alike (as in *pécher* (to sin), *pêcher* (to fish); *mur* (wall), *mûr* (ripe); etc.).

The other signs are —

(4) The **diæresis** (¨), *le tréma,* which is placed over *e, i,* or *u,* when it is to be pronounced distinct from the preceding vowel: *la-ï-que, Sa-ü-l.*

---

* The *e* "closed" is the sound produced by almost closing the mouth, while the "open" *e* is pronounced with the mouth open.

(5) The **apostrophe** ('), *l'apostrophe*, which is the sign used when *a*, *e*, or *i* is to be dropped or elided before a succeeding vowel: *l'âme, l'arbre, s'il*, for *la âme, le arbre, si il*, etc. The *a* is suppressed only in *la*, article or pronoun; *i* is dropped only from the conjunction *si* before the pronoun *il* or *ils*, never before *elle* or any other word.

(6) The **cedilla** (¸), *la cédille*, placed under the *c* to indicate that it must retain the soft sound of *s*, which it had in the primitive word. Thus, from *France, français; recevoir, reçu;* etc.

(7) The **hyphen** (-), *le trait d'union*, or *tiret*, used to connect two or more words: *donnez-le-moi*, etc.

3. PUNCTUATION, AND USE OF CAPITALS.

There are in French, as well as in English, *ten* punctuation marks, called —

(1) La virgule . . . . . (,), *the comma.*
(2) Le point et virgule . . . (;), *the semicolon.*
(3) Les deux points . . . . . (:), *the colon.*
(4) Le point . . . . . (.), *the full stop*, or *period.*
(5) Le point d'interrogation (?), *the interrogation point.*
(6) Le point d'exclamation (!), *the exclamation point.*
(7) Les points de suspension (...), *the notes of suspension.*
(8) Les guillemets . . . . . ("), *the quotation marks.*
(9) La parenthèse . . . . . ( ), [ ], *the parenthesis* and *bracket.*
(10) L'accolade . . . . . { }, *the brace.*

Capital letters are used in French as in English, except in the case of the pronoun *I* (*je*); the names of the months (*janvier*, etc.); the days of the week (*lundi*, etc.); and adjectives and titles derived from proper names, unless, of course, they begin a sentence (*Un officier français, l'empereur Napoléon*) or are used as nouns (*Un Français*).

II.

PRONUNCIATION.

1. VOWELS.

The most essential part of pronunciation being unquestionably the decomposition of words into their respective syllables, whose articulation can be modified by *quality* or by *quantity*, as will be seen later on, we have devised the following conventional rules, which contain the general principles of the present system of pronunciation.

(1) Each letter, single or combined, on a line with its English equivalent, has the sound of that equivalent.

(2) The sign ‿ indicates that syllables are linked together.

(3) The sign = (equals) means "pronounced like."

Caution. — The following table aims to give, *as nearly as possible*, English equivalents for the French sounds; but, from the nature of the case, the *equivalents are only approximate.*

A	English Equivalents.	Remarks.	Examples.
1. **a, à short***	*cat*	The usual sound.	a-voir, a-ni-mal, i-ra, chat, là.
2. **a, â long**	*far*	When followed by double r, or with a circumflex accent.	bar-re, â-me, châ-teau.
3. **a, silent**		Only in a few words.	août, Caen, Saô-ne.

* By "short" is meant here "pronounced quickly." See p. 26.

E	English Equivalents.	Remarks.	Examples.
1. e mute	*hatter*	The French mute e has a faint guttural sound at the end of a syllable.	le, me, te-nir, re-le-ver.
2. e mute	silent, as in *mute*	At the end of a polysyllable (when the last syllable is theoretically formed by the e); before final s (except as in 3d); before nt of the third person plural of a verb; when used to preserve the soft sound of g; and in *je* when following its verb.	ta-ble, sa-la-de, ma-la-des, ai-ment, donnent, man-geai, son-geons, serai-je? ai-je?
3. e long	*there*	When mute e is followed by s in monosyllables; or by silent t final.	ces, des, les, pou-let, se-cret, ca-chet.
4. e short	*there*	Before r.	fer, mer, cher.
5. è, ê long	*there*	ê is a trifle longer and broader than è.	très, père, fo-rêt, ex-trê-me.
6. é short	*mate*		é-ga-li-té, thé, ca-fé.
7. e short	*mate*	Before final silent r (of the infinitive) or final silent consonant other than s or t. The conjunction *et*=é, the t being always silent.	don-ner, boulan-ger, nez, clef, pied, et.

I			
1. i short	*marine*		il, fi-ni, i-ci.
2. i	*onion*	When followed in the same syllable (and frequently in others) by any vowel except e mute.	mi-el, pi-è-ge, ci-el.
3 i. î long	*machine*	The î circumflex is always long.	vie, rient, gî-te, a-bî-me.

O	English Equivalents.	Remarks.	Examples.
1. o short	*some* (nearly)		hom-me, o-pu-lent, no-tre.
2. o	*nor*	Before final r.	fort, mor-dre, porc.
3. ô long	*note*	Especially when it forms the final syllable of a word.	le nô-tre, nos, vos, re-pos, sup-po-se.
U			
1. u silent	no English equivalent	After g and q, except in a few words, or when followed by a vowel with the diæresis.	fa-ti-gue, quand, qua-tre, am-bi-gu-ë.
2. u short	German ü	Becomes long with a circumflex, or when the syllable ends in e mute.	du, é-lu, mu-gir, mû-re, vue.
Y			
1. y short	*marine*	When alone, or when it is the vowel of the syllable.	y, py-ra-mi-de, sty-le.
2. y short	*onion*	When followed by another vowel in the same syllable.	yeux, ya-ta-gan.
3. y long	*i-i*	Between two vowels and in the word *pays* and its derivatives.	employé (em-ploi-ié), pay-san (pai-i-san).
Combined Vowels forming Simple Sounds.			
1. ai	= mute e (1)	In certain forms of the verb *faire* and its compounds.	faisant (fe-zan), faisais (fe-zè).
2. ai	= è (5)	In all tenses of verbs except those ending in final ai, and *je sais, tu sais, il sait.*	j'a-vais, je se-rais, pai-re, baie.

Combined Vowels forming Simple Sounds.	English Equivalents.	Remarks.	Examples.
3. ai	= é(6)	When final, or when initial before any but a mute syllable.	gai, j'ai, je rece-vrai; ai-mable, ai-san-ce, ai-sé; trai-ter.
4. au, eau	= ô(3)		tu-yau, é-merau-de; chevreaux.
5. eu, œu	= u in *hurt*	Except in certain parts of the verb *avoir*, as *eu*, *eurent*, *eus-sent*, which are pronounced like u (2).	feu, bleu, jeu-ne, œuf, bœuf.
6. ou	= o in *move*		loup, où, partout, cour.

Combined Vowels forming Diphthongs.*

1. ia, io, ieu	i(1) - a(1), i(1) - o(1), i(1) - eu(5)		fi-a-cre, vi-o-let, Di-eu.
2. oi, oy, oê	= wa in *was*	Better represented by pronouncing ou-a as one syllable.	loi, oie, oi-seau; jo-yeux; po-ê-le.
3. ou	= w	When followed in the same syllable by a pronounced vowel, which then retains its own sound; ou-i as one syllable.	ou-i, ou-est, fou-et.
4. uai, ue, ui, uo	u(2) - ai(3), u(2) - e(7), u(2) - i(1), u(2) - o(3)		sa-lu-ai, tu-ez, lu-i, im-pé-tu-o-si-té.

* A diphthong in French is a combination of vowels producing two sounds uttered by a single emission of the voice. French diphthongs are formed with the three vowels *i*, *o*, *u*, and the vowel sound *ou*, followed by some other vowel.

2. NASALS.

English affords no equivalent for the nasalized vowel, whi is best defined as that of the *n* in *lung*, without the *g* sound.

The nasals have four sounds, as follows: —

1. Nasalized *an* in *band* —

aim, ain, ein, im, in, ym, yn; as, *faim, bain, pein-tu-re, im-pe in-grat, sym-pa thie, syn-ta-xe: en* has also this sound whe final after *i* or *y*, and after *i* in all parts of *tenir, venir,* ar their derivatives; as, *paien, tiens, viendrons.*

2. Nasalized *on* in English *bond* —

am, an, em, en; as, *am-bu-lan-ce, Jean, an-ge, em-pi-re, en-voie.*

3. Nasalized *on* in English *long* —

om, on; as, *pom-pe, Lon-dres, on-cle.*

4. Nasalized *un* in English *hung* (nearly) —

un, um, eun; as, *cha-cun, par-fum, à jeun.*

NOTES. — (*a*) In *oin* the *o* serves only to give a *w*-prefix to the ordinary nasal sound of *in* (*foin, coin*).

(*b*) Final *en* after *i* or *y*, and everywhere after *i* in forms of the verbs *tenir* and *venir*, usually after *é*, and in a few foreign words, has the sound of nasal *in* (*Chrê-ti-en, Lynx, ti-ens, vi-ens, Eu-ro-pé-en, sphinx*).

(*c*) When *m* or *n* is followed by a vowel, the preceding vowel is not nasal, because the *m* or *n* belongs to the following syllable (*â-me, se-mer, pro-me-ner, i-nu-ti-le, i-nhu-main;* but by exception it is nasal in *en-i-vrer* and *en-or-gueil-lir*).

(*d*) When *m* or *n* is doubled, the preceding vowel is not nasal (*an-née, fem-me, li-on-ne, in-no-cent*); but it is nasal in *en-nui* and its derivatives, in *en-no-blir*, and in most words beginning with *emm* (from *en-m*), e.g., *em-me-ner, em-mê-ler*, etc.

(*e*) The following vowels are not nasalized: *ent* of the third person plural of verbs (*e* being mute); the *on* of *monsieur* (pronounced as a mute *e*); final *am, em, in,* in foreign names (*Pri-am, A-bra-ham, Jé-ru-sa-lem*); and a few other words of foreign origin (*a-men, E-den, dé-cem-vir*).

3. LINGUALS.

L, when preceded by an *i*, is liquid, and is written *ill* in the middle and *il* at the end of the word (*fa-mi-lle, pé-ril*). Its pronunciation is best rendered by *ee-ye*, with the *ye* very short. The words *vil-la-ge, vil-le, mil-le*, however, are exceptions.

Ill at the beginning of a word is not liquid, because the second *l* belongs to the following syllable (*il-lé-gi-ti-me*).

The lingual *il* is chiefly found in the following combinations: *ail, eille, euil, uille;* as, *dé-tail, bou-teille, deuil, ai-guille* (= *dé-ta-ye, bou-tè-ye*, etc.).

Gn is generally liquid in the middle of a word, and is pronounced like *gn* in the English word *mignonette* (*i-gno-ran-ce, ma-gni-fi-que*).

Y, followed by a vowel, has generally a liquid sound; as, *tuyau, royal* (= *tu-i-yô, rou-a-yal*).

ACCENTS USED FOR GRAMMATICAL DISTINCTION.

Note that the accents ` and ^, besides indicating a long sound, are also used for the sake of grammatical distinction.

du	(of the)	and	*dû*	(p.p. of verb *devoir*, to owe)	To make the sense clear in speech, the accented vowel is slightly prolonged.
cru	(believed)	"	*crû*	(p.p. of verb *croître*, to grow)	
sur	(upon)	"	*sûr*	(sure)	
mur	(wall)	"	*mûr(e)*	(adj. ripe)	
la	(art. the)	"	*là*	(adv. there)	
ou	(or)	"	*où*	(adv. where)	
a	(has)	"	*à*	(prep. to)	
des	(some)	"	*dès*	(prep. since)	

The circumflex is also placed upon the i of verbs ending in **aître** (*paraître*) and in **oître** (*croître*), whenever that letter is followed by t (*qu'il finît*); also upon the preceding vowel of **mes** and **tes** in the first and second persons plural of the preterit of all verbs (*nous finîmes, vous allâtes*), and upon the vowel preceding the final t of the third person singular of the imperfect subjunctive (*qu'il aimât*).

4. THE CONSONANTS.

CHARACTER:	B	C	D	F	G	H	J	K	L	M
Pronounced with the English sound of e in *hatter*.	be	ce (se)	de	fe	ge (je)	he	je	ke	le	me
	N	P	Q	R	S	T	V	X	Z	
	ne	pe	qe	re	se	te	ve	kse	ze	

All the consonants usually have the same sound as at the beginning of a word in English; as, **b** in *butter*, **c** in *certain*.

A consonant at the end of a word is generally mute; as, *grand, beaux, sots, petit.*

B.

B is pronounced at the end of proper names; otherwise it is mute at the end of a word.

C.

C is hard, like **k**, before **a**, **o**, and **u** only, as, *capital, cocu* (= *ka-pi-tal*, etc.); but with a cedilla (ç) it is always soft, like **s**, as *garçon* (= *gar-son*); and when final, it is generally sounded hard, like **ck**, as *sec* (= *seck*).

Exceptions are —

banc, bank	*estomac*, stomach	*tabac*, tobacco
clerc, clerk	*flanc*, flank	*tronc*, trunk

In the word *second*, it takes the sound of *g*.

Ch is usually sounded as the English **sh**, as *cheval* (= *sheval*); but it has the sound of **k** in almost all the words derived from the Greek, as in English.

D.

D final is usually silent, but is sounded in proper names and in *Sud*.

D final, when the following word begins with a vowel or mute **h**, is carried on to the next word, and has the sound of a **t**; as *un grand homme* (= *un grant om'*).

F.

F final is sounded like **v**, in *neuf, dix-neuf,* etc., if the following word begins with a vowel or mute **h**; as *neuf hommes* (= *neuv om'*). When the word following a final **f** begins with a consonant, the **f** is silent; as *neuf livres* (= *neu-livres*).

F is silent in the following words: *cerf,* stag; *clef,* key; and in the *plural* words *bœufs* (oxen) and *œufs* (eggs).

G.

G followed by **a, o,** or **u,** is always pronounced hard, as in *galop;* while before **e, i,** and **y,** it has generally the sound of **s** in *pleasure,* as *gentil.*

G final sounds like **k** before a vowel or mute **h,** as *un long hiver* (*un lonk i-vèr*).

Gn in a word is generally pronounced soft, like **gn** in the word *mignonette;* as *oignon* (= *o-gnon*).

H.

H is the weakest of all the consonants, just as **e** mute is the weakest vowel. There are two kinds of **h**'s: —

H mute does not represent any sound, and permits, therefore, the elision of the vowel of the article **le, la,** and the union of words, as if the article were in contact with the vowel following; thus, *l'homme, les hommes* (= *l'omm', lè zomm'*).

H aspirate is not heard any more than **h** mute, but differs from it by preventing the elision of the vowel of the article as well as the union of words; thus, *le héros, les homards* (= *le-é-ro, lè-o-mar*).

There are about 600 words in French with the **h** aspirate. We give those most usually employed: —

hâbleur, braggart
hache, ax
haggard, haggard
haie, hedge
haillon, rag
haine, hatred
haïr, to hate
halle, market place
halte, halt
hamac, hammock
hameau, hamlet
hanche, hip
hangar, shed
harasser, to harass
harceler, to torment
hardi, bold
hareng, herring
haricot, bean
harnais, harness
harpe, harp
hasard, hazard
hâter, to hasten
haut, high
hauteur, height
Havre, Havre
héler, to call some one
hennir, to neigh
Henri, Henry
héros,* hero
hêtre, beech tree
heurter, to strike against
hibou, owl
hideux, hideous
hiérarchie, hierarchy
hisser, to hoist
homard, lobster
honte, shame
honteux, shameful
honteuse, shameful
hors, out
houblon, hops
houille, coal
housse, cover for furniture
houx, holly
huit,* eight
hurler, to howl
hussard, hussar
hutte, hut

J.

J is sounded like **s** in *pleasure*.

K.

K is used only with a few words of foreign origin.

---

* If h is aspirate in a word in its simplest form, it is also in its derivatives, except in the case of *héros*, in the derivatives of which the h is silent, as *l'héroïne, l'héroïsme* (= *l'é ro-ï-ne, l'é-ro-ïs-me*). As for *huit*, the h becomes silent in *dix-huit, vingt-huit, soixante-dix-huit, quatre-vingt-dix-huit* (= *diz-u-it', vint-u-it', sois-sant'diz-u-it', qua-tre-vin-diz-u-it'*); but it is aspirate in *quatre-vingt-huit* (= *qua-tre-vin-u-it'*). Mark also that neither elision nor union of words ever takes place before the following words: *onze, onzième, ouate, oui, uhlan, yacht, yatagan, yawl.*

L.

L is sounded as in English, except in the middle and at the end of words, when it is preceded by **i**. It is then liquid, as described on p. 17.

In the following words it is not pronounced at all: —

baril, barrel	*outil*, tool
fusil, gun	*sourcil*, eyebrow

M.

When a word commences with **emm**, the first syllable is nasal, and is pronounced like **on** in *bond* (No. 2, p. 16), while the second **m** begins the next syllable; as *emmener* (= *em-me-né*).

N.

N final has always a nasal sound, except as on p. 16, note *e*.

P.

Ph has the sound of **f**, as in English.

Q.

Q is sounded like **k**, but in *cinq*, if it is followed by a consonant, it is mute; as, *cinq sous*, *cinq arbres* (= *cin-sou*, *cink ar-bre*). In financial parlance, however, the **q** is sounded in *cinq pour cent* (= *cink' pour cen*), as also whenever it stands at the end of a sentence.

When **q** is not final, it is followed by **u**, and is generally pronounced like **k**; as, *quand*, *qui* (= *kan*, *ki*). But, as in English, the **u** is sounded after the **q** in *équestre*, *équilatéral*, *équitation*, *quintuple*, *questeur*, *questure* (= *é-qu-es-tre*, etc.).

The **u** is sounded after **q**, as in English, in *aquatique*, *équateur*, *équation*, *quadrupède*, *quadruple* (= *a-qu-a-tik*, etc.).

R.

R final is usually sounded, but is silent in the terminations **er** and **ier**; in the infinitive of verbs ending in **er**; as, *boucher, premier, parler* (= *bou-ché*, etc.). It is silent in *monsieur* and *messieurs*, but is sounded in *sieur* (= *mon-si-eu, mè-si-eu, si-eur'*).

R final is sounded in *monosyllables* and *dissyllables* (except in the verb *fier* = *fi-é*); as, *mer, fier, amer, cuiller, cancer* (= *mèr'*, etc.).

Rh has always the sound of **r**; as *rhum* (= *rum*).

S.

S has the sound of **z** when placed between two vowels in the body of a word; and at the end of a word it is carried on to the next one, if the latter begins with a vowel or mute **h**; as, *reposer, mes amis* (= *re-po-zé, mè-za-mi*). By way of exception, *obus* = *o-buz*.

S has its usual sound (**s** in *sir*) in compound words when the simple word begins with **s**; as, *vraisemblable* (= *vrai-sem-bla-ble*), compounded of *vrai* and *semblable*.

S final is sounded in words coming from the Latin, as, *bis, chorus, gratis* (= *bis'*, etc.), also in the word *tous* when a *pronoun* (= *tousse*); but in *pain-bis* the **s** is silent (= *pain-bi*).

Sc is sounded like **s**, as in English, in *scène, sceptique, science* (= *sèn'*, etc.).

T.

T at the beginning of a word has always the same sound as in English, also in the middle of words before a consonant.

T in the middle of words, when followed by **i**, is pronounced sometimes like **t**, and sometimes like **s**. It is sounded like **s** in *patience* and its derivatives,* and in all words ending in **atie, étie, itie, otie, utie, tial, tiel, tio, tieux, tient, tion, tium, tiaux, tiaire,** and **tien,** when it terminates a proper name; as, *partial, partiel, caution, pénitentiaux, plénipotentiaire, ambitieux, pétiole, Actium, Helvétius, Capétien,* etc. (= *par-si-al,* etc.); *aristocratie, facétie, calvitie, La Béotie* (= *a-ris-to-cra-sie,* etc.). It is also sounded as **s** in a few other words; as, *ineptie, balbutier, satiété* (= *i-nep-sie,* etc.).

T in the middle of words, when followed by **i**, is sounded as **t** in words ending in **artie, ortie, astie, istie, ostie, ôtie, antie, entie, athie, arthier, itié, tien** and **tienne, astion, estion,** when not proper names, and in all tenses of verbs whose present participle ends in **tant**; as, *amnistie, digestion, amitié, Poitiers, garantie, sortie, centième, chrétien, chrétienne, nous partions, vous sortiez* (= *am-nis-tie,* etc.).

T final is silent, except when followed by another word beginning with a vowel; as, *est-elle?* (= *èt-el.*) It is silent in the conjunction *et* (*and*), also in *sept* and *huit,* when the following word begins with a consonant or **h** aspirate; as, *sept haches, sept francs, huit coûteaux* (= *sè-ash,* etc.). By way of exception, the **t** of *vingt* is sounded in the numbers from 22 to 29; as, *vingt-deux,* etc. (= *vint'-deu*). Also the **t** of *sept* and *huit,* when standing at the end of a sentence, is sounded.

Th is always sounded like **t**; as, *théâtre* (= *té-â-tre*).

W.

W is sounded as in English in words taken from that language, and as **v** in words taken from the German and Northern languages; as, *wagon* (= *wa-gon*), *Westphalie* (= *Vest-pha-lie*).

* This sounding of **t** like **s** will be found to correspond almost invariably with the pronunciation of the English **t** as **sh**.

In the middle of a word it is sounded like **eux**; thus, *Newton, New York,* are pronounced *Neu-ton, Neu-York.*

X.

X has the sound of **ks** whenever followed by **c**; in all words having **axi, axe, axo**; generally before a consonant; at the end of proper names; and at the end of the words *index, lynx, larynx, phénix, préfixe, thorax, luxe, sexe,* etc.; as, *excepter, excellent, excès, exciter, exception, maxime, extrème, expert, Ajax, Pollux, Styx,* etc. (= *in-deks,* etc.).

X has the sound of **gz** in all words having **exa, exe, exi, exo, exu**; and at the beginning of proper names; as, *exercise, examen, inexact, Xavier, Xantippe,* etc. (= *eg-zer-cise,* etc.).

X has the sound of **ss** in *Bruxelles, Auxerre, Aix-en-Provence, soixante, six, dix* (= *Brus-sel,* etc.).

X has the sound of **z** in *deuxième, sixième, dixième, sixaine, dixaine,* and a few other words; at the end of most words when followed by a vowel or mute **h**; as, *Beaux-Arts, deux amis, six oranges, dix hommes, dix-huit, dix-neuf* (= *beauz-ar,* etc.).

X final is always silent in *faix, paix, crucifix, perdrix, prix, chaux, faux, beaux,* and in *six* and *dix,* and most other words when followed by a consonant or aspirate **h**, or when they end a sentence; as, *six homards, dix pommes* (= *si-o-mar,* etc.). However, in *six* and *dix* standing at the end of a sentence, the *x* is sounded.

Z.

Z final is not sounded before a word beginning with a consonant, except in *gaz.*

Z final sounds like a *hard* **s** in proper names; as, *Metz, Rodez, Suez, Alvarez, Cortez* (= *Mess,* etc.).

5. THE DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

The best way to acquire a good pronunciation is to begin by dividing each word of a sentence into its respective syllables, without paying attention to the meaning. Then, when one is sure of the pronunciation, the whole sentence should be pronounced in accordance with the general sense, which sometimes has quite a considerable effect on the combination of the sounds. Moreover, it should be borne in mind that when the last syllable of a word is *mute** (that is, when it consists of a consonant immediately followed by an unaccented **e**, as *ra-ce;* by **es**, as *pè-res;* or by **ent**, for verbs only, as *aiment*), it must be joined in pronunciation with the preceding syllable, so as to form only one sound with it. The preceding syllable becoming long, the consonant following is distinctly heard, as in the English word *mute.*

The following are the general rules to be followed: —

(1) Any single consonant, except **x**, between two vowels, always begins a new syllable; as, —

é-ga-li-té, *a-to-me,* *po-pu-la-ri-té.*

(2) When the consonant is doubled, the first one belongs to the preceding, and the second one to the succeeding, syllable; as, —

in-no-cem-ment, *con-fes-sion-nal,* *ap-pel-la-tif.*

(3) If the two consonants are different, the division generally takes place between the two; as, —

in-ten-ter, *ad-mi-rer,* *res-pec-ter.*

---

* Called by some grammarians the *feminine* termination, probably from the circumstance that about eighty per cent of nouns ending in e mute are feminine.

(4) The following double consonants, however, being indivisible, are always considered as single consonants, and the division consequently takes place according to Rule 1; viz., **bl, br, ch, cl, cr, dr, fl, fr, gl, gn, gr, il** and **ill** (when liquid), **ph, pl, pr, rh, sc, sg, sl, sm, sn, sp, sr, st, th, tl, tr,** and **vr**; as, —

é-plo-rer, *in-co-gni-to,* *pho-no-gra-phe.*

(5) When a vowel in the body of a word begins a syllable, it is always preceded by another vowel, and the division takes place between them; as, —

o-bé-ir, *é-blou-ir,* *Na-po-lé-on.*

III.

QUANTITY.

1. DURATION OF SOUND.

In language it is a well-known fact that sounds are not of the same duration. The variations of this duration form what is called *quantity,* and must not in any way be confounded with *accentuation,* which marks the *modulation,* or raising and lowering of the voice, in the pronunciation of the various syllables; whereas *quantity* distinguishes the duration of a sound, and thus gives to the pronunciation its exactness and melody, and frequently prevents ridiculous perversions and *quid-pro-quo's.*

There are many words in French which have two entirely different significations, according to whether they are long or short; as, —

tâche (*a task*)	and	tache (*a stain*),
pêcher (*to fish*)	"	pécher (*to sin*),
mâtin (*a mastiff*)	"	matin (*morning*).

The duration of the sound in the first examples is longer than in the second, thereby indicating the sense to be attached to each word.

In French every syllable is relatively either short or long.

A short syllable is one whose sound is of short duration, as *il peut* (he can); and a long syllable is one which is pronounced with emphasis or longer duration, as *il veut* (he wishes). Thus, in the word *abondance*, *a* is short, *bon* is long, *dan* is still longer; and the five syllables of the word *ré-ci-pro-ci-té* are all short. In the words *la leçon* the three syllables are all short, but the middle syllable (*le*) is shorter than the others; whereas in the phrase *ces leçons du professeur* (these lessons of the professor) the syllable *çons*, which is in the plural, becomes long; if it were pronounced short, the sense of the phrase would be entirely altered, and would mean *c'est le son du professeur* (it is the sound [voice] of the professor), which shows how important it is to pay proper attention to quantity, though in French it is much less marked than in English.

2. GENERAL RULES.

An **e** mute at the end of a word has, just as in English, the effect of lengthening the preceding vowel. Ex.: *Rose, épine, mange.*

All circumflexed vowels are long; as, *extrême, grâce.*

A vowel immediately followed in the same word by an **e** mute is long (as, *finie, vue*), but short when followed by any other vowel: **i**, for instance, is long in *je lie*, and short in *nous lions.*

All final syllables ending in **s**, **z**, or **x**, are long; as, *le temps, le nez, la voix.* Those ending with any other consonant are short; as, *sac, sel, nectar.*

Penultimate syllables are generally short when followed by a doubled consonant (as, *patte, butte, belle*), except when that

doubled consonant is rr (as in *pierre, terre, verre, carré,* etc.) in which case the penultimate is long.

3. NASALS.

All nasal syllables followed by a consonant beginning another syllable are long (as, *jambe, craindre,* etc.); but when the **m** or **n** is doubled, as the nasal sound disappears, the vowel becomes short (as, *épigramme, personne,* etc.).

4. LINGUALS.

All final syllables are short that end with a liquid **l** (as, *éventail, soleil*); but **aille** is long in all words except *médaille, travaille, détaille, émaille,* and in all the tenses of these verbs.

5. THE TONIC ACCENT.

Rule. — In French, without exception, the *tonic accent,* or slight raising of the voice, always falls on the last *sounded* syllable of a word.* Thus, *manger, partie, richesses, je mange, tu manges, ils mangent,* must be pronounced *man-ger', par-tie', ri-chés'-ses, je man'ge, tu man'ges, ils man'gent.*

But let it be remembered that this tonic accent is at all times very weak, and has nothing in common with the strong stress constituting the tonic accent of the English tongue.

6. THE ELISION OF THE MUTE *E* IN SPEAKING.

Euphony being the fundamental law of French pronunciation, every hiatus, or concurrence of vowels, must be avoided. Thus, whenever in pronunciation it is possible to pass from one consonant to another without *any effort* or harsh sound, then the intervening **e** mute must be dropped; thus, *mon ami*

---

* See The Division of Words into Syllables, p. 25.

est venu me voir, mais je n'ai pu le recevoir, et je le regrette infiniment, must be pronounced *mon ami est v'nu m'voir, mais j'n'ai pu le r'cevoir, et j' le r'grett' infiniment.* It is this frequent suppression which makes foreigners imagine that the French speak very quickly.

The following rules will be found useful: —

(1) **E** mute final, when followed by a word beginning with a vowel or silent **h**, is not only dropped, but the syllable to which it belongs is joined to the next one, both thus forming, as it were, but one word; as, *un livre ouvert,* which would be pronounced *un livr' ouvèr.*

(2) When a mute syllable precedes an accented one, the mute **e** is dropped, and the two consonants are joined; thus, *médecin, cavalerie, mademoiselle,* are pronounced *méd'cin, caval'rie, mad'moiselle.*

(3) In like manner, when a word begins with a mute syllable, as *petit,* the **e** is dropped if the preceding word ends with an accented one, as *mon petit, mon p'tit;* but the **e** is sounded if the preceding syllable is mute, as *une petite.*

(4) The **e** of the monosyllables *je, me, te, se, ce, le, ne, que, de,* which is sounded when these words are pronounced by themselves, is dropped wherever they are preceded and followed by consonants which can be joined together without effort: thus, *je demande, il te veut,* are pronounced *je d'mand', il te veut;* but *on me parle, si je veux,* are pronounced *on m'parl', si j'veu.*

(5) The **e** of the monosyllables *je, me, te, se, le, ne, que, de,* when followed by a word beginning with a vowel or silent **h**, is dropped in writing as well as in speaking; thus, *j'ai, il m'aime, ils s'entendent,* for *je ai, il me aime, ils se entendent.* An exception, however, is to be noted in the case of *onze, onzième,* and *oui,* before which the **e** is never elided; as, *le onze mars,* March 11.

(6) At the end of a word, **e** followed by **s** (plural) and by **nt** (third person plural of all verbs) is entirely silent, while the **ent** (final of nouns) is sounded; thus, *ils précèdent* (verb) is pronounced as *précèd'*, while *précédent* (noun) is pronounced in full (*pré-cé-dant*).

(7) When there are several unaccented **e**'s consecutively in a sentence, each alternate one is dropped; thus, *je ne le reprêterai pas* is pronounced *je n' le r'prêt'rai pas.* In all such cases, the speaker's ear must guide him, the end desired being a euphonious combination of sounds.

(8) It is precisely for this sake of euphony that the mute **e** of the penultimate of certain verbs is changed into the sound of **e** in *there,* as in *mène* from *mener;* that *je chante, je mène,* become *chanté-je? mené-je?* in the interrogative form; and that *ce, ma, beau,* become *cet, mon, bel,* before a word beginning with a vowel or a mute **h**; as, *cet arbre, mon orange, bel homme,* for *ce arbre, ma orange, beau homme.*

7. THE UNION OF WORDS IN SPEAKING.

It is also in order to give to the French its characteristic smoothness and harmony, that the final consonant, even though otherwise silent, is carried on to the initial vowel of the word following; as, *mon ami est un bon enfant.* The sentence thus becomes a continuous chain, whose words are euphoniously linked together; and there is no interruption except during the pauses, which are always indicated by the punctuation.

*The following are the principal rules for the pronunciation of final consonants before vowels or **h** mute:—*

(1) **D** takes the sound of **t**; as, *grand enfant, grand homme.*

(2) **C** and **g** sound like **k**; as, *tabac à fumer, de rang en rang,* which are pronounced *tabak à fumé, de rank en ran.*

(3) **S** and **x** take the sound of **z**; as, *mes arbres, leurs histoires, je veux y aller.*

(4) When **d**, **s**, or **t** is preceded by **r**, in most cases the **r** alone is sounded. Thus, in *je meurs enfant, il est fort et doux, un abord aimable,* the **s** of *meurs,* the **t** of *fort,* and the **d** of *abord,* are silent, while the preceding **r** is in each case joined to the initial vowel of the noun following.

(5) The **n** of the words *bien, rien, un, en, on,* and of an adjective followed by its substantive, is pronounced with its consonant value, without, however, losing its nasality; as, *on assure qu'un Arabe est un vilain homme.* When, however, *on* follows its verb, the **n** is not linked to the next vowel; as, *a-t-on eu faim?*

(6) **P** is only sounded in *trop* and *beaucoup;* as, *trop âgé, beaucoup à faire.*

(7) **R**, in verbs ending in **er**, is joined to the next vowel only in public speaking.

(8) **S** and **t** are also joined to the next vowel; as, *de braves enfants, ils désirent aller en voyage.*

(9) The **t** of *et* (*and*) is never sounded, nor the **s** of the second person singular of the present indicative of verbs ending in **er**.

(10) The last consonant of short and frequently recurring words (such as *les, des, aux, mon, ton, son, mes, tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs, bon, ont, sont, un, très, pas, en, rien, bien*) is always sounded as if it were a part of the following word, if it begins with a vowel, because a pause cannot be made between the two words: thus, *les amis* is pronounced *lè zami; mon enfant* is pronounced *mon nenfan.*

8. GENERAL PRINCIPLES.

The union of many words, which is indispensable in public speaking, reading, and declamation, would be considered quite

pedantic in familiar conversation, in which only those word are thus connected whose sense does not allow of their bein separated; e.g., when the first word determines, qualifies, o modifies the second: as the article or the adjective before it substantive, the personal pronoun or *en* before its verb, anc *vice versâ;* the adverb before the adjective or participle whicl it modifies; the preposition and its complement; and the conjunction *quand* with the words following.

Note, that, as this union of words is employed for the purpose of making the language more harmonious, all linking together of words which would produce a harsh or disagreeable sound must be absolutely avoided. It should ever be borne in mind that an irregularity is much preferable to a discordant sound; for, as somebody has well said, "Frenchmen would rather forgive a foreigner twenty barbarisms than one accent too long or too short. Their language is to them a kind of music that perhaps may not be better than any other; but if they hear a false tone, they cannot help making faces and feeling inward pain."

It must now, therefore, become apparent, that to pronounce French correctly, — that is, to give to the various French syllables their peculiar lightness and evenness of sounds, with a nearly uniform stress upon them all, — three things are of special importance; namely, —

(1) *To put aside altogether the strong accentuation of the English language.*

(2) *To articulate well the r*, which in the body of a syllable has a very weak sound in English.

(3) *To avoid carefully the sounding of final consonants wherever they are not to be linked to the initial vowel of the following word*, which is quite the opposite of that which holds good in English pronunciation.

SECTION II.

RULES ON THE PARTS OF SPEECH AND ON ÊTRE AND AVOIR.

LESSON I.

Rule 1. — In French there are only two genders, masculine and feminine. As there is no neuter, the names of inanimate objects are either masculine or feminine.

The indefinite article is as follows: —

un (m.) } *a, an.*
une (f.) }

VOCABULARY.

mouchoir (m.), *handkerchief.*		tête (f.), *head.*
poche (f.), *pocket.*		paletot (m.), *coat.*
chapeau (m.), *hat.*		canne (f.), *stick.*
et, *and.*	dans, *in, into.*	sur, *on, upon.*

EXERCISE 1.

(*a*) 1. Un paletot. 2. Un mouchoir dans une poche. 3. Un chapeau sur une tête. 4. Une canne et un paletot.

(*b*) 1. A coat. 2. A stick. 3. A hat on a head, and a handkerchief in a coat. 4. A handkerchief and a hat.

LESSON II.

The definite article is as follows: —

Sing.		Plur.	
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Both Genders.*	
le	**la**	**les**	*the.*

Rule 2. — French nouns generally form their plural by adding **s**, as in English.

VOCABULARY.

cravate (f.), *necktie.*
soulier (m.), *shoe.*
gant (m.), *glove.*
main (f.), *hand.*
coin (m.), *corner.*
pied (m.), *foot.*
chaussette (f.), *sock.*
parapluie (m.), *umbrella.*
robe (f.), *dress, gown.*
deux, *two.*

avec, *with.*

EXERCISE 2.

(*a*) 1. La robe et le paletot. 2. Le mouchoir et les gants dans une main. 3. La canne et le parapluie dans le coin. 4. Les pieds dans les souliers. 5. Une main dans un gant.

(*b*) 1. The hand and the foot. 2. A necktie and a glove on the dress. 3. The feet in the socks. 4. The hands in the gloves. 5. A sock in the shoe. 6. An umbrella with the two dresses.

LESSON III.

Rule 3. — **L'** is used for **le** or **la** before a word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

Ex. — *L'homme* for *le homme; l'école* for *la école.*

VOCABULARY.

eau (f.), *water.*	ardoise (f.), *slate.*
carafe (f.), *bottle.*	école (f.), *school.*
huile (f.), *oil.*	arbre (m.), *tree.*
huilier (m.), *casters, cruet stand.*	table (f.), *table.*
homme (m.), *man.*	île (f.), *island.*
pupitre (m.), *desk.*	oui, *yes;* non, *no.*

est, *is.* sont, *are.* où, *where.*

EXERCISE 3.

(*a*) 1. L'eau est dans la carafe. 2. L'huile est dans l'huilier. 3. La carafe et l'huilier sont sur la table. 4. Un homme est dans l'île. 5. Où sont les ardoises? 6. Les ardoises sont sur les pupitres. 7. L'île est dans l'eau. 8. Les arbres sont dans l'île.

(*b*) 1. A school is on the island. 2. The water is in the bottle. 3. The oil is in the casters. 4. The slate, the stick, and a shoe are on a table in the school. 5. Where is the umbrella? 6. The umbrella is with the hat, on the table.

LESSON IV.

Rule 4. — **De** (*of*) and **à*** (*to*) can never be used with **le** and **les**; preposition and article are contracted into one word, as follows: —

Sing.		Plur.	
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Both Genders.*	
du, de l' (*for* de le)	**de la, de l'**	**des** (*for* de les)	*of the.*
au, à l' (*for* à le)	**à la, à l'**	**aux** (*for* à les)	*to the.*

There is no contraction in the feminine singular.

* The accent on the preposition **à** (*to*) is simply used to distinguish it from the verb **a** (*has*): it has no effect on the pronunciation.

Rule 5. — The English sign **'s** for the singular, and **s'** f the plural, denoting possession, must be rendered by the prep sition **de** (*of*).

Ex. — *The teacher's desk* must be turned into *the desk of the teacher the little boys' handkerchiefs*, into *the handkerchiefs of the littl boys.*

VOCABULARY.

professeur (m.), *professor.*	garçon (m.), *boy.*
maître (m.), *teacher, master.*	fille (f.), *girl, daughter.*
élève (m. and f.), *pupil.*	chaise (f.), *chair.*
monsieur (m.), *sir, Mr.*	bouche (f.), *mouth.*
madame (f.), *madam.*	petit, *small, little, short.*
mademoiselle (f.), *miss.*	grand, *large, big, tall.*

a, *has.* ont, *have.* pris, *taken.*

EXERCISE 4.

(*a*) 1. Le maître *des* élèves est dans l'école. 2. Un garçon a pris les gants *de la* fille. 3. L'ardoise *de l'*élève est dans le pupitre. 4. La canne *du* professeur est avec le chapeau *du* petit garçon. 5. Les parapluies *des* élèves sont sur la table. 6. Le petit garçon a un grand pied.

(*b*) 1. The hands *of the* pupils are on the desks. 2. The girl'*s* handkerchief is in the master'*s* pocket. 3. A hat is on the professor'*s* head. 4. The boys have taken the shoes and the socks *of the* man. 5. Where are the pupil'*s* gloves? 6. In the boy'*s* pocket. 7. The girl'*s* glove is small.

There are in French only two auxiliary verbs, **avoir** and **être**. These two verbs, like their English equivalents *to have* and *to be*, are auxiliaries only when used to help conjugate another verb. Thus, when we say, *j'ai pris un mouchoir* (I have taken a handkerchief), **avoir** is used as an auxiliary; but

in the sentence *nous avons des yeux* (we have eyes), it is an independent transitive verb, implying possession.

Conjugation of **avoir** (*to have*).

(*The forms of the verb, and the words used with them, to be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Present Indicative, *now* (maintenant).

Affirmative.

j'ai une tête,	*I have a head.*
tu * **as** deux mains,	*thou hast two hands.*
il / **elle** / **on** } **a** { un parapluie,	*he has an umbrella.*
une robe,	*she has a dress.*
deux pieds,	*one has two feet.*
nous avons une bouche,	*we have a mouth.*
vous * **avez** la carafe,	*you have the bottle.*
ils / **elles** } **ont** { un maître,	*they have a master.*
un professeur,	*they have a professor.*

Interrogative.†

ai-je un mouchoir ?	*have I a handkerchief ?*
as-tu une chaise ?	*hast thou a chair ?*
a-t-‡ { **il** / **elle** / **on** } une table ?	*has he a table ?*
un pupitre ?	*has she a desk ?*
une bouche ?	*has one a mouth ?*
avons-nous l'huilier ?	*have we the casters ?*
avez-vous l'eau ?	*have you the water ?*
ont- { **ils** / **elles** } les chaussettes ?	*have they the socks ?*
les souliers ?	*have they the shoes ?*

* Although no mention of it is made in the conjugation, the second person singular and plural has in reality two personal pronouns in French, **tu** and **vous**. The pronoun **tu**, being the language of friendship, tenderness, and love, is used among relatives, intimate friends, schoolfellows, and children. An adult addressing a little child will say **tu**; while the child, in speaking to its elders, outside the family circle, must always employ **vous**, which is used as a mark of respect and among strangers, and, like the English *you*, may refer to one person or to several.

† Notice that the only difference between the French interrogative and the affirmative form lies in the place of the pronoun subject, which follows the verb instead of preceding it.

‡ When the third person singular ends with a vowel, it is followed by a euphonic **t** before **il, elle,** and **on**. The pupil must be careful to insert the hyphens.

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons I.–IV.)

VOCABULARY.

Un maître de français, *a French teacher.*	Marie, *Mary.*
	Seulement, *only.*

ORAL EXERCISE (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Où est le maître de français ?	Il est à l'école avec les élèves.
Ont-ils les ardoises ?	Oui, monsieur, ils ont les ardoises.
Où est l'école ?	L'école est dans l'île.
Avez-vous un mouchoir ?	Oui, madame, j'ai un mouchoir.
Où est-il ?	Il est dans la poche.
Et où est la poche ?	Elle est dans le paletot.
As-tu une tête ?	Oui, madame, j'ai une tête, deux mains et deux pieds.
Avez-vous la carafe, Marie ?	Non, madame, la carafe et l'huilier sont sur la table.
Le professeur et les élèves ont-ils pris les parapluies ?	Oui, monsieur, ils ont pris les parapluies et les cannes.
Le petit garçon a-t-il une chaise ?	Non, madame, les filles et les garçons de l'école ont pris les chaises avec les ardoises.
Où avez-vous les gants et les souliers ?	J'ai les gants aux mains, et les souliers aux pieds.
Marie a-t-elle un grand pied ?	Non, monsieur, elle a un petit pied.

Have you a necktie, Mary ?	Yes, sir ; I have a necktie, a handkerchief, two little shoes, and a dress.
Have the pupils a professor ?	Oh (*Oh*), yes ! The professor is at the school. He has a large desk and a chair.
Is the water on the table ?	Yes ; the water is in the bottle, and the oil in the cruet stand.
Has Mary a stick ?	No, sir ; she has only a little umbrella.
Where is the stick ?	It is with the little boy's hat.

Where are the pupils' umbrellas?	They are on the desks with the slates.
Hast thou a coat?	Yes, madam; I have a coat, a hat, and a stick.
Where are the handkerchiefs and the gloves?	They are in the pocket of the coat.
And where is the hat?	It is on the master's head.
And where is the master?	He is on (in) the island.

NOTE. — It is suggested that the teacher require the pupils to change, wherever possible, the *number*, *gender*, and *person* of the *nouns* and *pronouns* in the Oral Exercises throughout the course. This is the best method of training eye and ear alike.

LESSON V.

Rule 6. — The article in French must be repeated before every noun.

VOCABULARY.

cahier (m.), *copy book.*	encre (f.), *ink.*
livre (m.), *book.*	chambre (f.), *room.*
crayon (m.), *pencil.*	dame (f.), *lady.*
plume (f.), *pen.*	monsieur (m.), *gentleman.*
camarade (m.), *schoolfellow, companion.*	fils (m.), *son.*
	enfants (m. pl.), *children.*

donné, *given.* apporté, *brought.*

EXERCISE 5.

(*a*) 1. La dame et le monsieur ont donné les livres *aux* élèves *de l'*école. 2. Un homme a donné le cahier *à la* fille *du* professeur. 3. Un élève a apporté le crayon *au* fils *du* maître. 4. Le professeur a donné une plume *à l'*élève. 5. Les maîtres ont apporté les ardoises *aux* camarades *des* élèves.

(*b*) 1. The professor's son and daughter have brought a dress *into the* lady's room. 2. The pupils have given the books *to the* lady and gentleman. 3. The lady's shoes and gloves are

small. 4. The professor's daughter has brought a necktie umbrella, handkerchief, and hat *to the* lady.

LESSON VI.

Rule 7. — The **e** of the monosyllables **je, ne, de, me, te, se, le,** and **que,** when followed by a word beginning with a vowel or silent **h**, is dropped, and replaced by an apostrophe.

Ex. — *L'arbre* (tree) for *le arbre; j'ai* (I have) for *je ai; l'huilier* (casters) for *le huilier.*

The negation *not* is expressed by the two words **ne** and **pas,** and the verb is placed between them.

Present Indicative (negative) of *avoir* (to have).

Je **n'**ai **pas,** *I have not.*	nous **n'**avons **pas,** *we have not.*
tu **n'**as **pas,** *thou hast not.*	vous **n'**avez **pas,** *you have not.*
il, elle, on } **n'a pas,** *he, she, one, has not.*	ils, elles } **n'ont pas,** *they have not.*

VOCABULARY.

ami (m.), *friend.*	tapis (m.), *carpet.*
rideaux (m. pl.), *curtains.*	plancher (m.), *floor.*
fenêtre (f.), *window.*	riche, *rich.*
porte (f.), *door.*	pauvre, *poor.*

fermé, *shut.* ouvert, *opened.* mis, *put.* mais, *but.*

EXERCISE 6.

(*a*) 1. Où est le tapis ? 2. Il est sur le plancher. 3. Le petit garçon n'a pas ouvert la porte de la chambre, mais il a fermé les fenêtres de l'école. 4. J'ai mis les cahiers du maître sur la table. 5. J'ai apporté les ardoises et les crayons à

l'ami du professeur. 6. Il a mis le chapeau sur une chaise. 7. Le petit garçon n'est pas riche; l'ami de l'homme est pauvre.

(*b*) 1. The big boy has taken the little boy's books. 2. I have not the man's umbrella. 3. Have you the little boy's gloves? 4. She has opened the windows, but she has not closed the doors. 5. Mr. X's friends are rich: they have given the tables and chairs to the masters of the school.

Conjugation of **être** *(to be).*

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Present Indicative, *now.*

Affirmative.

je **suis** américain,*	*I am an American.*
tu **es** anglais,	*thou art an Englishman.*
il / elle / on } **est** à l'école,	*he, she, one, is at school.*
nous **sommes** vilains,	*we are homely.*
vous **êtes** charmants,	*you are charming.*
ils / elles } **sont** { mineurs,	*they are under age.*
ils / elles } **sont** { majeures,	*they are of age.*

Negative.

je ne **suis** pas laid,	*I am not ugly.*
tu n'**es** pas joli,	*thou art not pretty.*
il / elle / on } n'**est** pas sur l'arbre,	*he, she, one, is not in the tree.*
nous ne **sommes** pas négligents,	*we are not careless.*
vous n'**êtes** pas distraits,	*you are not inattentive.*
ils / elles } ne **sont** pas { polis,	*they are not polite.*
ils / elles } ne **sont** pas { impolies,	*they are not impolite.*

NOTE.—Before nouns used adjectively, the indefinite article **un, une,** is omitted. EX.: I am *a* Frenchman, *je suis français;* he is *a* lawyer, *il est avocat.*

* Girl pupils should put all the above adjectives in the feminine when speaking of themselves or to one another; thus, *je suis américaine,* etc. (See Rule 8, p. 42.)

LESSON VII.

Rule 8. — French adjectives agree with their nouns in gender and number. They form their feminine by adding **e** mute to the masculine,* and their plural by adding **s** to the singular.

Ex. — *Grand, grande; petit, petite: grand, grands; petite, petites.*

NOTE. — When the masculine already ends in **e** mute, there is no change for the feminine. Ex.: *Un homme pauvre, une femme pauvre.*

VOCABULARY.

voisin (m.) } *neighbor.*
voisine (f.) }
capitaine (m.), *captain.*
médecin (m.), *doctor, physician.*
encrier (m.), *inkstand.*
brosse (f.), *eraser, brush.*
tableau (noir) (m.), *blackboard.*
canif (m.), *penknife.*
thème (m.), *exercise.*
maison (f.), *house.*
craie (f.), *chalk.*
bon, bonne,* *good.*
mauvais, *bad.*
vide, *empty.*

écrit, *written.* demandé, *asked.* compris, *understood.*
acheté, *bought.* très, *very.* si, *if.*

EXERCISE 7.

(*a*) 1. Le garçon de monsieur X. est petit, mauvais et laid. 2. La fille de madame X. est grand*e*, bon*ne* et charmant*e*. 3. Le petit garçon est distrait et la petite fille est négligent*e*. 4. Le voisin de monsieur X. est très laid et très riche; il a acheté la jolie maison du † capitaine Monfort. 5. Le maître a pris la craie de ‡ la main d'un élève, il a écrit un petit thème au tableau, et il a demandé si l'élève a

---

* See Formation of the Feminine of Adjectives, Appendix, p. 189.

† Titles of profession or rank require the definite article in French, even when the proper name follows; thus, *le docteur Martin, le professeur Latour*, etc.

‡ **De** often means *from*, and **à**, *at;* the context will determine the sense.

compris. 6. Le canif est bon, mais les plumes sont mauvais*es*, et l'encrier est vide.

(*b*) 1. Professor Agassiz' pupils are in the school on the island. 2. Captain Monfort's son has bought a very large house from the neighbor, and a little desk of Dr. Martin. 3. The pupils have written a short exercise on the blackboard. 4. The lawyer's daughter has bought a pretty carpet: she is not very rich. 5. The masters have asked if the girls have understood. 6. The boys are very inattentive in school, and the girls are careless.

NOTE. — The pupil should take particular notice of the French *difference of form* in both article and adjective, which is used to distinguish gender and number, and contrast this with the unchangeable form of article and adjective in English. The difference between the two languages in this respect is best shown thus: —

un grand homme,	*a*	*great*	*man, woman.*
une grande femme,	*a*	*great*	*man, woman.*
le grand homme,	*the*	*great*	*man, woman.*
la grande femme,	*the*	*great*	*man, woman.*
les grands hommes,	*the*	*great*	*men, women.*
les grandes femmes,	*the*	*great*	*men, women.*

LESSON VIII.

Rule 9. — *Some* or *any*, which are often understood in English, must always be expressed in French. They are rendered by the so-called **partitive article**: —

du, before a masculine noun;
de la, before a feminine noun;
de l', before any noun beginning with **h** mute or a vowel;
des, before any plural noun.

Ex. — ***De l'eau***, some water; ***de la viande***, some meat; ***du papier***, paper; ***des plumes***, pens.

Note. — The *auxiliary* **do, did,** etc., has no equivalent in French. We must turn such sentences as, *Do you want any vegetables?* into *Want you,* etc.; *Did you put the wine on the table?* into *Have you put,* etc. In such a sentence as, *Shall I give the book to your sister? No, don't,* the verb and its object must be repeated; thus, *Non, ne le lui donnez pas.*

VOCABULARY.

nappe (f.), *tablecloth.*	boulanger (m.), *baker.*
assiette (f.), *plate.*	pomme de terre (f.), *potato.*
couteau (m.), *knife.*	légumes (m. pl.), *vegetables.*
fourchette (f.), *fork.*	lait (m.), *milk.*
verre (m.), *glass.*	plat (m.), *dish.*
cuiller (f.), *spoon.*	propre, *clean.*
serviette (f.), *napkin.*	oui, *yes.*
viande (f.), *meat.*	non, *no.*
pain (m.), *bread.*	ou, *or.*
domestique (m. and f.), *servant.*	aussi, *also, too.*

donnez-moi, *give me.*	de rien / il n'y a pas de quoi — *not at all, don't mention it, don't speak of it.*
passez-moi, *pass me.*	
s'il vous plaît / je vous prie — *if you please.*	
voulez-vous? / désirez-vous? — *do you want?*	le couvert est mis — *the table is set.*
merci, *thank you.*	

EXERCISE 8.

(*a*) 1. Le couvert est mis. 2. Voulez-vous du pain, monsieur? 3. Non, merci. 4. Donnez-moi du lait, je vous prie. 5. Passez-moi les pommes de terre et les légumes, s'il vous plaît. 6. Nous avons un plat, des assiettes, des couteaux * et des fourchettes. 7. Avez-vous des verres et des serviettes? 8. Oui, madame. 9. Voulez-vous du lait? 10. Non, merci. 11. Donnez-moi de la viande et des légumes, je vous prie. 12. Petite fille, désirez-vous du pain et du lait? 13. S'il vous plaît, madame. 14. Marie, passez l'assiette au petit garçon, je vous prie.

* This plural forms an exception, to be explained later on.

(*b*) 1. Did you put the plates on the table? 2. Yes, madam. 3. Do you want any forks? 4. Yes, please; and give me some knives, glasses, and napkins also. 5. The teacher's little daughter has taken some vegetables with a spoon. 6. Pass me some meat on a plate, if you please, and give some potatoes to the little boy's companion. 7. Please give the big dishes to the servant: they are on the table. 8. I have no (*pas de*) glass. 9. Pass me some glasses and a napkin, if you please.

LESSON IX.

Rule 10.—After a negation, *some* or *any*, whether expressed or understood, is rendered simply by **de** (or **d'**).

Ex.—*Ils n'ont pas de crayons*, they have no pencils.
Nous n'avons pas d'eau, we have not any (no) water.

NOTE.—The indefinite article **a** or **an**, after a negative verb, meaning *any*, must be so translated. Ex.: *Je n'ai pas acheté de tapis*, I have not bought a carpet.

Rule 11.—In the same manner, **de** (or **d'**) is used for *some* or *any* when a noun is preceded by an adjective.

Ex.—*Du vin*, some wine; *de bon vin*, some good wine.
De la viande, some meat; *de bonne viande*, some good meat.
De l'eau, de bonne eau; des pommes, de bonnes pommes.

VOCABULARY.

pomme (f.), *apple.*	poisson (m.), *fish.*
sel (m.), *salt.*	leçon (f.), *lesson.*
poivre (m.), *pepper.*	mur (m.), *wall.*
vin (m.), *wine.*	tendre,* *new, tender.*
vinaigre (m.), *vinegar.*	dur,* *stale, hard.*
eau glacée (f.), *ice water.*	plein, *full.*
plafond (m.), *ceiling*	comprendre, *to understand.*
mouche (f.), fly.	qui, *who, which.*

* The pupil must place these adjectives after the noun.

mangé, *eaten.*	bu, *drunk.*
mettez, *put.*	pourquoi, *why.*
asseyez-vous { *sit down (seat yourselves).*	nous voulons / nous désirons } *we want.*

EXERCISE 9.

(*a*) 1. Où est la carafe? 2. Sur la table, elle est pleine d'eau. 3. Voulez-vous du pain dur? 4. Non, merci, j'ai de bon pain tendre. 5. Je n'ai pas de vin, j'ai seulement de l'eau. 6. Le voisin de mademoiselle X. a mangé avec un couteau! 7. Une pomme? 8. Non, des légumes! 9. La domestique a mis le couvert; nous sommes à table, asseyez-vous aussi. 10. Je n'ai pas demandé de serviette. 11. Désirez-vous de la viande ou des légumes? 12. Non, merci, nous ne voulons pas de viande; nous désirons du poisson avec des pommes de terre. 13. Marie, passez-moi le poivre et le sel, je vous prie. 14. Pourquoi ne voulez-vous pas d'eau?

(*b*) 1. Thou hast not a stick. 2. Put some wine on the table. 3. We have not eaten any meat, and you have drunk no water. 4. Sit down to table: the servants have no glasses. 5. If they have not any wine, they have some good milk and some ice water. 6. They have also fish and vegetables, with pepper and salt. 7. We want new bread: the bread (which is) on the table is stale. 8. She has drunk a small glass of good wine. 9. A fly is in the glass; flies are on the ceiling and on the wall.

Conjugation of **avoir** (*to have*).

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Past Indefinite, or Perfect, *last year* (l'année passée), *yesterday* (hier), *this morning* (ce matin).

Affirmative.

j'ai eu* de la joie,	*I had joy.*
tu as eu de l'amusement,	*thou hadst enjoyment.*

* Of course, the literal translation of **j'ai eu** is "I have had," but the use of the tenses differs in the two languages. Thus, when the time mentioned is fully past, the *passé*

il / elle / on } a eu la migraine,	*he, she, one, had the headache.*
nous **avons eu** du plaisir,	*we had (some) pleasure.*
vous **avez eu** de la peine,	*you had trouble.*
ils / elles } **ont eu** bon appétit,	*they had a good appetite.*

Interrogative.

ai-je eu la fièvre ?	*had I fever?*
as-tu eu de l'eau glacée ?	*hadst thou ice water?*
a-t-il / a-t-elle / a-t-on } eu un médecin ?	*had he, she, one, a doctor?*
avons-nous eu des oranges ?	*had we any oranges?*
avez-vous eu un bon maître ?	*had you a good master?*
ont-ils / ont-elles } eu des billets de théâtre ?	*had they theater tickets?*

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons V.–IX.)

VOCABULARY.

enfant (m. and f.), *child.*	Jean, *John.*
Clarisse, *Clarissa.*	Jeanne, *Jane.*
Lucie, *Lucy.*	Louis, *Lewis, Louis.*
Alice, *Alice.*	Louise, *Louisa.*

ORAL EXERCISE (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Qui a donné des livres au petit garçon ?	Une dame a donné des livres au petit garçon.
À qui a-t-elle donné les ardoises ?	Elle a donné les ardoises aux élèves de l'école.
Qui a apporté un cahier à Lucie ?	Louis a apporté un cahier à Lucie.

indéfini is rendered by the English preterit; as, ***Hier j'ai eu la migraine***, yesterday I ***had*** a headache. When, however, the time is either not fully elapsed or not definitely mentioned, the ***passé indéfini*** is translated by the perfect; as, ***Aujourd'hui nous avons eu des billets de théâtre***, to-day we ***have had*** theater tickets (given us); ***nous avons souvent eu la fièvre***, we ***have*** often ***had*** fever.

À qui a-t-il apporté le cahier ?	Il a apporté le cahier à Lucie, fille du professeur.
Où est le camarade de l'élève Jean ?	Il est dans la chambre. Il a ouve les fenêtres et fermé les portes.
Qui est riche ?	Les deux Américains sont riches.
Où sont les cahiers ?	Les maîtres ont donné les cahie aux élèves, et maintenant le cahiers sont dans les pupitres.
Qui a des crayons ?	L'avocat a eu des crayons hier mais il a acheté des plumes e du papier.
Louis, as-tu mis un tapis sur le plancher ?	Oui, madame ; et j'ai mis de rideaux aux fenêtres.
Avez-vous acheté une table, Alice ?	Oui, monsieur ; j'ai acheté une grande table.
Es-tu malade (*ill*), Louise ?	Non, madame ; pas maintenant, mais j'ai été (*been*) bien (*very*) malade ce matin (*this morning*).
Avez-vous eu des billets de théâtre hier, mademoiselle Jeanne ?	Non, madame ; nous avons eu des billets ce matin.
Les enfants, ont-ils eu du poisson ce matin ?	Oui, madame ; mais ils n'ont pas mangé de pommes.
Avez-vous eu de bon lait ce matin, mademoiselle Alice ?	Oui, madame ; nous avons eu de bon poisson aussi.
Le domestique, a-t-il mangé ?	Non, monsieur ; il n'a pas bon appétit.
A-t-on donné du pain tendre ce matin aux domestiques ?	Non, madame ; ils ont eu du pain dur et de l'eau glacée.
Qui a eu la migraine hier ?	Le fils du capitaine Milon a eu la migraine hier matin.

Who is poor ?	Captain Richard's daughter is poor; the captain is poor also.
Have you any wine in the house ?	No, sir ; we had some wine yesterday, but now we have only milk and ice water.
Who has put carpets on the floor ?	Dr. Lagrange's servant has put carpets on the floors of two rooms, and curtains in the windows.
Had he any apples this morning ?	Yes, madam ; he had apples and oranges, and some fish and new bread, too, with a glass of wine.

Sit down, Mary; you have not had any fish.
Do you want any pepper and salt?

Where are you, children?

Did the master ask (has the master asked) if I understood?
Had the pupils trouble to understand the lesson?
Mary, had you vegetables yesterday on the table?
The table is set; sit down, please.

Do you want a clean napkin, Miss Lucy?
Where are the little boys and girls?

Why did she shut the windows?

No, thank you, madam; I have had some meat.
Yes, madam; and please give me a glass of wine.
We are in (on) the tree. Do you want any apples?
Yes; he asked if you understood the exercise this morning.
Yes; but the master wrote the exercise on the blackboard.
No, madam; we had no vegetables, but we had good meat.
Thank you; please pass me a knife and fork.
No, madam, thank you; I had a napkin this morning.
They are on the island; they had some amusements yesterday.
The room is full of * flies.

LESSON X.

	Used before a Singular Noun.		Used before a Plural Noun.	
	Masc.	*Fem.*	*Both Genders.*	
1st pers. sing.	mon,	ma,	mes,	*my.*
2d " "	ton,	ta,	tes,	*thy.*
3d " "	son,	sa,	ses,	*his,† her, its.*
1st pers. pl.	notre,		nos,	*our.*
2d " "	votre,		vos,	*your.*
3d " "	leur,		leurs,	*their.*

* The partitive article is never used before a substantive directly following the preposition de, meaning *of.*

† As is the case with the article and the adjective, the possessive adjective shows in a visible way its agreement with the noun it qualifies, —

mon père, ma mère, mes parents, — *my* { *father. mother. parents.*

See Appendix, p. 194.

NOTES. — (*a*) Like all other French adjectives (Rule 8), the possessiv adjectives agree with the nouns which they qualify, and never, as in th English third person, with the possessor. Hence a girl should say *mo frère*, and not *ma frère;* and a boy, *ma sœur*, and not *mon sœur*.

(*b*) Unlike the English, they must be repeated before every substan tive, as must the prepositions **à** and **de**; as, *Il a donné les billets d théâtre de votre père et de votre mère à son frère et à ses sœurs*, he ha given the theater tickets of your father and mother to his brother anc sisters.

(*c*) For the sake of euphony, the masculine form **mon, ton, son,** is used instead of **ma, ta, sa,** before feminine nouns beginning with a *vowel* or a *mute* h; as, *mon opinion*, for *ma opinion* (my opinion); *son histoire*, for *sa histoire* (his or her history).

VOCABULARY.

père, papa (m.), *father, papa.*	café (m.), *coffee.*
mère, maman (f.) { *mother, mamma.*	thé (m.), *tea.*
frère (m.), *brother.*	beurre (m.), *butter.*
sœur (f.), *sister.*	pain grillé (m.), *toast.*
salle à manger (f.), *dining-room.*	jambon (m.), *ham.*
salon (m.), *drawing-room.*	fruit (m.), *fruit.*
opinion (f.), *opinion, advice.*	soupe (f.), *soup.*
crème (f.), *cream.*	lard (m.), *bacon.*
sucre (m.), *sugar.*	tasse (f.), *cup.*
	soucoupe (f.), *saucer.*

déjà, *already.* peut-être, *perhaps.* pour, *for.*
je veux, je désire, *I want.* elle veut, elle désire, *she wants.*

Rule 12. — When a pronoun, an adjective, or a participle refers to two nouns, — one masculine, the other feminine, — it is put in the masculine.

EXERCISE 10.

(*a*) 1. Mon père et ma mère sont à table dans la salle à manger; ils ont déjà mangé leur* soupe. 2. Mon ami, tu

* The pupil must be careful to distinguish rightly between the use of **ses** and **leur**. **Ses** is merely that form of **son, sa,** which is required before plural nouns: it never stands for more than *one possessor*. **Leur,** on the contrary, marks *two* or *more possessors*, although

n'as pas d'eau. 3. Je désire une tasse de thé ou de café avec du sucre. 4. Lucie, passez la crème à papa et à maman, s'il vous plaît. 5. Où sont vos cousins et vos cousines, mademoiselle Jeanne? 6. Ils sont dans la chambre avec leur sœur Émilie. 7. Donnez-moi du café, s'il vous plaît, pour mon frère. 8. Voulez-vous du café noir? 9. Non, je désire du café au* lait. 10. Papa et maman sont grands. 11. Nos amis sont à table; leur domestique a apporté du pain grillé, du beurre, du jambon, du lard et des fruits dans leur chambre. 12. Tu veux mon opinion sur ton tableau de Meissonier? 13. Oui. 14. Il est très joli. 15. Mademoiselle Alice, votre frère et votre cousine sont charmants. 16. Merci! 17. Il n'y a pas de quoi.

(*b*) 1. Emily has already given her brother and sister a cup and saucer. 2. Where are the plates and glasses, Mary? 3. They are on the table, madam. 4. Do you want bread and butter with your bacon? 5. No, thank you; I want a glass of water or milk. 6. Have you (*tu*) already eaten your toast, my child? 7. Yes, mamma. 8. Please, sir, pass me some cups and saucers. 9. Yes, madam; do you want some spoons also? 10. Yes, please; but the servant has taken the spoons. 11. Miss Emily wants some tea for her mother and brother. 12. Where are they? 13. In their room. 14. Her father and sisters are very tall. 15. Her sisters are with their father, and her brother with his mother. 16. Where? 17. They are at table in the dining-room. 18. Clarissa wants your opinion on Lewis's sister. 19. She is very pretty. 20. Is she of age? 21. No; she is under age.

---

it stands before a noun in the singular. Thus, the sentence *Notre domestique a donné ses gants à sa mère* reads in the plural: *Nos domestiques ont donné leurs gants à leur mère* (and not *ses mère*).

* Au is used here to express "with."

LESSON XI.

To form the Plural.

Rule 13. — Nouns ending in **s**, **x**, and **z**, do not change.

Sing.	*Plur.*
un avis, *counsel.*	des avis.
une voix, *a voice.*	des voix.
un nez, *a nose.*	des nez.

Rule 14. — Nouns ending in **al** change the **al** into **aux**.

Sing.	*Plur.*
un caporal, *a corporal.*	des caporaux.
un mal, *an evil.*	des maux.
un amiral, *an admiral.*	des amiraux.

Rule 15. — Nouns ending in **au** or **eu** add **x**.

Sing.	*Plur.*
l'eau, *water.*	les eaux.
un jeu, *a game.*	des jeux.

VOCABULARY.

cheval (m.), *horse.*
animal (m.), *animal.*
journal (m.), *newspaper.*
peau (f.), *skin.*
château (m.), *castle.*
chevreau (m.), *kid.*
moineau (m.), *sparrow.*
oiseau (m.), *bird.*
vaisseau (m.), *vessel.*
cheveux (m. pl.), *hair.*
fleuve (m.), *river.*
campagne (f.), *country.*
colline (f.), *hill.*
montagne (f.), *mountai*
mer (f.), *sea.*
chair (f.), *flesh.*
âgé, *aged, old.*
gris, *gray.*
comique, *comical.*
utile, *useful.*
vulgaire, *common.*
quel (m.) } *what, which,*
quelle (f.) } *what a.*
sous, *under.*

lu, *read.* on fait, *one does, makes.* on mange, *one eat*

aimez-vous ? { *do you like?* / *are you fond of?*
ni . . . ni, *neither . . . nor.*
ce, *this, that.*

EXERCISE 11.

(*a*) 1. Avez-vous lu les journaux? 2. Je n'ai pas de journaux. 3. Aimez-vous les grands nez? 4. Je n'*aime ni les grands nez, ni les grandes bouches, ni les grands pieds. 5. Ce général est âgé; il a les cheveux gris. 6. Les vaisseaux des amiraux sont sur le fleuve. 7. Les généraux de Négrier et de Gallifet sont dans leurs châteaux à la campagne. 8. Les chevreaux sont des animaux très utiles; on mange leur chair, et on fait des gants avec leur peau. 9. Les oiseaux de mon château sont de vulgaires moineaux. 10. L'eau est utile à l'homme et aux animaux.

(*b*) 1. Generals perhaps have castles in the country; but the castles of admirals are the vessels on the sea. 2. We do not want gray hairs, my friends. 3. Two sparrows are on our horse's head; are they not comical? 4. The waters of rivers flow into (*vont à*) the sea. 5. The kids are on the hills; what pretty little animals, papa! 6. Yes, my child, they are very pretty and also very useful [animals]. 7. Give me your advice, please, if you have understood. 8. My cousin Alice has very pretty hair. 9. Yes, and a pretty voice, also.

LESSON XII.

Relative Pronouns.

Nom.	(subject),	**qui**, *who, which, that.*
Acc.	(direct object),	**que**, *whom, which, that.*
Gen.	(possessive),	**dont**, / **de qui**, *of whom, of which, whose.*
Dat.	(indirect object),	**à qui**, *to whom.*

* **Ni**, like **pas**, always requires the negative particle **ne**.

NOTE. — These pronouns are *conjunctive*, i.e., used with the verb. ***Qui***, ***que***, ***dont***, refer to persons or things; ***de qui***, ***à qui***, to persons only.

Rule 16. — When *who* or *which* stands directly before the verb, translate it by **qui**; when it is separated from the verb, use **que**.

EX. — I do not know who is here, ***je ne sais pas qui est ici.***
The book (which) I have read is on the desk, ***le livre que j'ai lu est sur le pupitre.***

Rule 17. — In French, the relative pronoun must *always be expressed*, never understood, as in English. It must always be placed directly after the noun to which it relates.

NOTE. — **Dont** is very frequently used for the relative **de qui**, as being much simpler. EX.: ***La personne dont je vous ai parlé est dans le jardin***, the person of whom I spoke to you is in the garden; ***voici la robe dont vous m'avez parlé***, here is the dress of which you spoke to me.

VOCABULARY.

oncle (m.), *uncle.*
tante (f.), *aunt.*
neveu (m.), *nephew.*
nièce (f.), *niece.*
cousin (m.), cousine (f.), *cousin.*
repas (m.), *meal, repast.*
petit déjeuner (m.), *early breakfast.*
déjeuner (m.), *breakfast.*
maison de campagne (f.) { *country-house.**
collation (f.), *lunch.*
dîner (m.), *dinner.*
souper (m.), *supper.*
morceau (m.), *piece.*
tranche (f.), *slice.*
bœuf rôti (m.), *roast beef.*
gigot (m.), *leg of mutton.*
bouilli (m.), *boiled beef.*
bien cuit, *well done.*
saignant, *under-done, rare.*

vu, *seen.*
parlé, *spoken.*
déjeuné, *breakfasted.*
ne ... personne,† *nobody.*
envoyé, *sent.*
ne ... rien,† *nothing.*
ici, *here.*

---

* When a compound substantive is composed of *two nouns*, one of which fulfills the office of an adjective, the French put the principal noun first, and insert the preposition **de** between it and the qualifying noun. Thus, ***country*** (adjectival noun) ***house*** = ***maison de campagne.***

† **Personne**, **rien**, and **pas** omit the negative when not governed by a verb.

EXERCISE 12.

(*a*) 1. Le monsieur *qui* a demandé le journal *que* vous avez lu est très laid. 2. L'amiral *que* vous avez vu a donné une collation à nos voisines et à leurs filles. 3. Nos amis ont acheté le cheval *que* mon frère a envoyé. 4. Ma nièce et son père, *qui* ont envoyé des fruits à leur tante Clarisse, sont ici. 5. Où sont-ils? 6. Ils sont dans la salle à manger pour leur petit déjeuner. 7. Je n'ai rien mangé; je désire une tranche du rôti *qui* est sur la table, et non (*not*) le morceau de lard *que* vous avez mis dans mon assiette. 8. Aimez-vous le gigot bien cuit ou saignant? 9. J'aime le gigot saignant et le bœuf bien cuit. 10. Les personnes *dont* (or *de qui*) vous avez acheté les oiseaux ont ouvert leur fenêtre. 11. La cousine, *à qui* j'ai écrit, est âgée et laide; elle n'a envoyé personne* à notre maison de campagne! 12. Hier j'ai bu des eaux de Saratoga.

(*b*) 1. Where is the carpet *which* you have bought? 2. It is with the umbrella you have put in the corner of the dining-room. 3. My little friend, *to whom* I have written, is here. 4. The child *whom* you saw (*avez vu*) has shut the door. 5. The gentleman *whose* handkerchief I have taken has bought some newspapers. 6. Sit down, my friend; you have eaten nothing. 7. I have already breakfasted. 8. Is Dr. Lagrange, *to whom* I have written, here? 9. No, sir; but the doctor *of whom* you spoke to Miss Lucy is here. 10. The lady *who* has bought the horse *that* I (have) sent to my aunt is my cousin. 11. *Who* has taken Lucy's slate? 12. I do not know. 13. *Who* has given your mother the pretty birds *which* are in the dining-room? 14. The baker *whom* we sent to our lawyer this morning.

---

* The French use **ne** only, without **pas**, with other negative expressions.

LESSON XIII.

Interrogative Pronouns.

	Persons.	Things.
Nom. (subject),	qui? *who?*	—
Acc. (dir. obj.),	qui? *whom?*	que (qu')? quoi? (disjunc.), *what?*
Gen. (possessive),	de qui? *of, from whom?*	de quoi? *of what?*
Dat. (indir. obj.),	à qui? *to whom?*	à quoi? *to what?**

À qui used interrogatively with the verb *être* expresses *whose.*

Ex. — Whose dress is this? *à qui est cette robe?* Whose children are these? *à qui sont ces enfants?*

VOCABULARY.

panier (m.), *basket.*
lettre (f.), *letter.*
leçon (f.), *lesson.*
devoir (m.), *duty, task, work.*
classe (f.), *class.*
salle d'étude (f.), *schoolroom.*
carte géographique (f.), *map.*
règle (f.), *ruler.*
récompense (f.), *reward.*
punition (f.), *punishment.*
mûr, *ripe.*
satisfait (de), *satisfied (with).*
content (de) { *contented, satisfied (with).*
mécontent, *dissatisfied.*
est, *belongs.*

pensez-vous, *do you think?*
prêté, *lent.*
trouvé, *found.*
puni, *punished.*
je pense, *I think.*
reçu, *received.*
fait, *done.*
tant, *so much.*
été, *been.*
perdu, *lost.*
situé, *situated.*

EXERCISE 13.

(*a*) 1. *À qui* est le journal *que* vous avez lu? 2. À la personne *dont* j'ai parlé à ma mère. 3. *À quoi* pensez-vous?

---

* See third footnote to Exercise 7 on de and à, p. 42.

4. Je pense à (*of*) l'ami de mon père, *à qui* j'ai envoyé un livre *qui* a été perdu. 5. *De quoi* êtes-vous mécontent? 6. Je suis mécontent du devoir *que* j'ai fait et *que* j'ai perdu. 7. *À qui* avez-vous prêté votre canif? 8. À l'élève *à qui* le maître a parlé. 9. *De qui* Jean a-t-il reçu sa punition? 10. Du professeur D. 11. *Que* pense votre maître; est-il satisfait du devoir *que* vous avez fait? 12. Oui, monsieur, il a été content. 13. *Que* vous a-t-il donné? 14. Une récompense *dont* je suis satisfait. 15. *À qui* est la règle *qui* est sur la carte géographique dans la salle d'étude? 16. Elle est à ma nièce. 17. *À qui* est le cheval *que* nous avons vu sur la colline? 18. Il est au monsieur *de qui* (ou *dont*) j'ai parlé à table. 19. *Qui* a été puni? 20. L'élève Jean, *qui* n'a pas fait ses devoirs. 21. *Qui* mon frère a-t-il vu? 22. Il a vu la personne *qui* a trouvé les livres. 23. Quels livres? 24. Mes livres de classe.

(*b*) 1. My task is done, and I want my supper. 2. Have you understood the book *which* I have written? 3. Has she received the basket of fruit (pl.) *which* I sent? 4. Yes; but it is not ripe. 5. *Whose* pen is this? 6. It belongs to the little boy *to whom* I gave some paper. 7. Alice and Lucy are the pupils *with whom* we are satisfied. 8. *Of what* is he thinking? 9. Perhaps of his cousin (f.), *who* is in (*à*) the country. 10. The castle is situated on a hill. 11. Which castle? 12. The castle *of which* we have spoken. 13. I have seen in the papers that your friend is here. 14. *What!* my friend *to whom* I wrote yesterday? 15. *Whom* do you like? 16. We like the good lady *who* sent the repast *which* we have eaten. 17. Is the person *of whom* I spoke to you yesterday in the drawing-room? 18. *Who,* Miss Alice? 19. Yes. 20. I do not think [so]. 21. What has the little boy done? 22. He has lost his basket.

LESSON XIV.

Which, of which, and *to which,* followed by *of* (expressed or understood), is a pronoun, and must be translated by —

	Sing.		Plur.	
	Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*
Subject, Direct object,	**lequel,**	**laquelle.**	**lesquels,**	**lesquelles,** *which* (of).*
Possessive,	**duquel,**	**de laquelle.**	**desquels,**	**desquelles,** *of which (of).*
Indirect object,	**auquel,**	**à laquelle.**	**auxquels,**	**auxquelles,** *to which (of).*

These interrogative pronouns are *disjunctive;* i.e., they are used alone or apart from the verb. They refer to both persons and things, and agree in gender and number with the nouns which they represent.

VOCABULARY.

funérailles (f. pl.), *funeral obsequies.*
jour (m.), *day.*
nuit (f.), *night.*
après-midi (m. and f.), *afternoon.*
matin (m.), *morning.*
soir (m.), *evening.*
commode (f.) { *chest of drawers, bureau.*

vous préférez, *you prefer.*
cassé, *broken.*
dire, *to say, tell.*
vers, envers, *towards.*
par, *by, through.*

M. or Mr, *Sir, Mr.*
Messieurs, or MM., *gentlemen, sirs.*
Mme, *Madam, Mrs.*
Mesdames, Mmes, *ladies.*
Mlle, *Miss.*
Mesdemoiselles, Mlles { *misses, the misses.*
demoiselle (f.) { *daughter, young lady.*
bleu, *blue.*
deux, *two.*
plus, *more.*
moins, *less.*
jeune, *young.*
ces, *these, those.*

---

* As we have seen in the case of the article and possessive adjectives (Lesson X., p. 49), so for the pronoun **lequel** there are different forms used to distinguish gender and number, which the pupil will do well to contrast with the *solitary* English form *which.*

Forms of Salutation.

Bonjour,	messieurs,	*Good morning,*	*gentlemen.*
Bonsoir,	mesdames,	*Good evening,*	*ladies.*
	mesdemoiselles,		*young ladies.*
Comment vous portez-vous ?		*How do you do ?*	
Très bien, merci.		*Very* (or *quite*) *well, thank you.*	
Bonne nuit.		*Good night !*	
Dormez (dors) bien.		*Sleep well !*	

EXERCISE 14.

(*a*) 1. Nous avons acheté un des chevaux de M. X. 2. *Lequel* avez-vous pris ? 3. Nous avons acheté le gris. 4. Donnez-moi une chaise, Marie. 5. *Laquelle,* madame ? 6. Une des chaises qui sont dans le salon. 7. Où sont mes gants ? 8. *Lesquels,* madame ? 9. Mes gants gris. 10. Ils sont sur la commode de votre chambre. 11. *Lesquelles* de ces robes préférez-vous ? 12. La bleue et la grise. 13. *Auquel* de ces enfants avez-vous donné des fruits ? 14. Au plus petit. 15. *Auxquelles* de ces petites filles avez-vous donné des récompenses ? 16. Aux deux plus grandes. 17. À *laquelle* de ces demoiselles avez-vous écrit ? 18. J'ai écrit à la plus âgée. 19. *Lequel* des enfants a cassé ma jolie tasse bleue ? 20. La petite fille, madame. 21. Qui, Louise ? 22. Oui, madame. 23. Où est-elle ? 24. Elle est maintenant dans sa chambre.

(*b*) 1. Good morning, young ladies, how do you do ? 2. Quite well, thank you; and you ? 3. Very well, thank you. 4. *Which* of these rooms is yours (*à vous*) ? 5. *To which* of these ladies have you written ? 6. I have spoken to your friends of the young boy. 7. *Of which ?* 8. Of the young boy you have seen at my country house. 9. Please shut the windows. 10. *Which ?* 11. The windows in (*de*) my room. 12. Good evening, madam; how do you do ? 13. Very well, thank you; and you ? 14. I am not well this evening. 15. Have you taken

the waters? 16. *Which?* 17. The Vichy waters. 18. No; they are not good. 19. What! not good? 20. A lady has bought a paper. 21. Who is she? 22. The lady *to whom* our cousin read his book. 23. The man *to whom* these maps were sent is dissatisfied. 24. *To which* of these little boys have you given my basket of fruit? 25. To Lewis, *who* is more polite than (*que*) his companions. 26. Good night, mamma! Sleep well! 27. Thank you, my child.

Conjugation of **être** (*to be*).

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Past Indefinite, or Perfect, *last year, a week ago* (il y a huit jours), *the day before yesterday* (avant-hier).

Affirmative.

j'ai **été** à Londres,	*I was* in London.*
tu **as été** soigneux,	*thou wast careful.*
il / elle / on **a été** jardinier,	*he was a gardener.*
il / elle / on **a été** économe,	*she was economical, sparing.*
il / elle / on **a été** prodigue,	*one was extravagant.*
nous **avons été** punis,	*we were punished.*
vous **avez été** à l'école,	*you were at school.*
ils / elles **ont été** bons,	*they were good.*
ils / elles **ont été** méchantes,	*they were naughty.*

Negative.

je **n'ai pas été** à la campagne,	*I was not in the country.*
tu **n'as pas été** en ville,	*thou wast not in town.*
il / elle / on **n'a pas été** arrogant,	*he was not arrogant.*
il / elle / on **n'a pas été** humble,	*she was not humble.*
il / elle / on **n'a pas été** vain,	*one was not conceited.*
nous **n'avons pas été** injustes,	*we were not unjust.*
vous **n'avez pas été** studieux,	*you were not industrious.*
ils / elles **n'ont pas été** acteurs,	*they were not actors.*
ils / elles **n'ont pas été** actrices,	*they were not actresses.*

* See footnote, pp. 46, 47.

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons X.–XIV.)

VOCABULARY.

forêt (f.), *forest.*
Émile, *Emile.*
Émilie, *Emily.*
George, *George.*
Baptiste, *Baptist.*
que, *that* (conj.).
national, *national.*
vous voyez, *you see.*
appris, *learned.*
dormi, *slept.*
près (de), *near.*
œuf (m.), *egg.*

Oral Exercise (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Bonjour, mesdemoiselles.	Bonjour, monsieur.
Comment vous portez-vous ?	Très bien, merci. Et vous ?
Très bien. Avez-vous bien dormi ?	Pas très bien ; j'ai eu la migraine.
Qu'avez-vous eu à déjeuner ce matin ?	Nous avons eu du lard, du jambon, des œufs, du pain grillé et des fruits, avec du café au lait.
Vos enfants ont-ils mangé ?	Oui, monsieur, ils ont bu et mangé à leur repas.
Quels beaux enfants a Mme de Lacy !	Oui, les petites filles ont de beaux cheveux et sont très jolies.
Où sont les tasses et les soucoupes ?	Les soucoupes sont sur la table, mais le domestique a cassé les tasses.
Bonsoir, messieurs.	Bonsoir, monsieur ; bonne nuit.
Avez-vous vu mes deux amis ?	Oui, dans la salle à manger, il y a quelques minutes.
Qui est le monsieur que j'ai vu hier soir au théâtre avec vous ?	C'est (*He is*) le neveu de l'amiral Courbet, dont les journaux ont tant parlé, et à qui la France a fait des funérailles nationales.
Avez-vous acheté une maison de campagne ?	Oui, la maison qui est près de la grande forêt dans laquelle nous avons été hier.
Et à qui est la forêt ?	Elle est au général de Négrier, à qui on a donné le château voisin.
Avez-vous été au château ?	Non, monsieur, mais j'ai été à la maison voisine.

Laquelle ?	La maison de l'amiral X., de qui nous avons parlé ce matin.
De quoi votre professeur est-il mécontent, Baptiste ?	Il est mécontent du devoir que j'ai fait avant-hier matin.
Lequel ?	Le thème français que vous voyez.
Où a-t-il été écrit ?	Il a été écrit à l'école dans mon cahier de français.
Auquel de ces messieurs as-tu prêté ton livre ?	Au monsieur de qui j'ai reçu des journaux.
Vos cousines n'ont-elles pas été à Paris l'année passée ?	Desquelles de mes cousines parlez-vous, mademoiselle ?
De mesdemoiselles Clarisse et Lucie.	Non ; elles sont toujours à la campagne.

Where is your little boy, madam ?	He is at school ; he has been punished by his teacher.
Which teacher ?	His French teacher.
From whom did your sister receive a letter this morning ?	From the gentleman of whom my son spoke yesterday evening.
To which of these little girls did you give the apples ?	To Emily, to whom my brothers spoke this morning, and who found the knife I lost last week.
Which French actresses do you prefer ?	I prefer the actresses of the Grand Opera and of the Théâtre-Français, who are now in London.
You have written that I was unjust ; will you please say to (*envers*) whom I was unjust ?	You were unjust towards Captain Lorillard's son, who is one of your good pupils.
To which (pl.) of the pupils did Professor Dunlop give a reward ?	To the pupils who learned their lessons well.
Of which of my nephews have you spoken ?	I have spoken of George.
To whom have you spoken ?	To his English teacher.
Whose book is this ?	Which ?
The book we read yesterday.	I do not know, but I think that it is my sister's.
Who are those two men ?	They (*ce*) are corporals Baptist and Emile.
What animals [do you think] are pretty ?	I think that horses and kids are very pretty.
Good night, ladies ! Sleep well !	Thank you, sir ! Good night !

LESSON XV.

The Past Participle with être and avoir.

Rule 18. — The past participle, when used in tenses with être, agrees with its *subject* in gender and number. (See Appendix, p. 229.)

Ex. — *Tes sœurs sont parties aujourd'hui,* thy sisters have set out to-day.
Une maison a été achetée dans un pays lointain,* a house has been bought in a distant country.

The following ten participles require the auxiliary être: —

entré, *entered.*	arrivé { *arrived,* / *happened.*	devenu, *become.*
sorti, *gone out.*	allé, *gone.*	revenu { *returned,* / *come back.*
parti { *gone away,* / *set out, left.*	venu, *come.*	tombé, *fallen.*
	resté { *remained,* / *stayed.*	

VOCABULARY.

Amérique (f.), *America.*	mine (f.), *mine.*
gâteau (m.), *cake.*	troupeau (m.), *flock.*
femme (f.), *woman.*	il y a une semaine, *a week ago.*
dessert (m.), *dessert.*	gagné, *won.*

pendant, *during, for.* pendant que, *while.* parce que, *because.*

EXERCISE 15.

(*a*) 1. Nous sommes devenus riches à la campagne, où nous avons des mines. 2. Pourquoi ta mère n'est-elle pas ici? 3. Parce qu'elle est sortie. 4. Où est-elle allée? 5. Elle est allée dans le jardin avec mon frère; mon frère et elle sont restés sous les arbres pendant une heure. 6. Nos amis, qui

* We have seen (Rule 8, note) that an adjective ending in e mute in the masculine remains the same in the feminine. As participles are sometimes used as adjectives, the pupil must be careful to note that a final é (acute) has a distinct separate sound, and therefore takes an *additional* mute e to form its feminine.

sont tombés de cheval hier, sont venus d'Amérique il y a une semaine. 7. L'homme que vous avez vu près de la porte est arrivé il y a deux semaines.

(*b*) 1. Our friends stayed with their neighbors yesterday. 2. Your aunt has gone to the country. 3. They arrived the day before yesterday. 4. A girl has fallen from the window. 5. The flocks returned from the hills a week ago.

Rule 19. — The past participle used with **avoir** agrees with its *direct object,* if the latter precedes the verb (see p. 229).

Ex. — *La lettre que j'ai écrite. Les chambres que votre ami a vues.*

NOTE. — The *object* in such case is a pronoun, either *personal* or *relative.*

VOCABULARY.

Europe (f.), *Europe.*	bateau (m.), *boat.*
serin (m.), *canary.*	feuille (f.), *leaf.*
cage (f.), *cage.*	beau (m.), belle (f.), *beautiful.*
tableau (m.), *picture.*	mort, *dead.*
portrait (m.) { *picture, likeness.*	vert, *green.*
	salué, *bowed to, greeted.*

EXERCISE 15 (*continued*).

(*c*) 1. Les moineaux que ton camarade a pris sont morts. 2. Les tableaux que vous avez achetés sont très beaux. 3. Les beaux oiseaux que vous voyez dans la cage sont des serins que j'ai apportés d'Europe. 4. Les fruits que vous avez mangés ne sont pas mûrs. 5. Les cartes géographiques que le maître a perdues ont été trouvées par un des élèves.

(*d*) 1. I have not spoken to the woman who returned to day, and whom you saw a week ago. 2. To whom did you speak? 3. To the gentlemen you saw this morning, to whom you gave your little boat. 4. The lady whose picture I have is dead. 5. The ladies my father bowed to are Admiral Dufour's nieces.

LESSON XVI.

Rule 20. — In questions, if the subject is a *noun*, it begins the sentence, and is repeated as a pronoun after the verb.

Ex. — *Le général a-t-il remporté la victoire?* Has the general gained the victory?

NOTE. — Instead of this method, the *affirmative* order may be used, in which case the formula **est-ce que** is used to begin the question, similarly to the English *do*, *did*, etc.; as, *Est-ce que le général a remporté la victoire?* Did the general gain the victory?

VOCABULARY.

marchand (m.) { *merchant*, *storekeeper*.
facteur (m.), *postman*.
berger (m.), *shepherd*.
pâturage (m.), *pasture*.
mouton (m.), *sheep*.
fable (f.), *fable*.
étranger (m.), *stranger*.

nègre (m.) { *colored man*, *negro*.
lavabo (m.), *wash-stand*.
mot (m.), *word*.
difficile, *difficult*.
cher (m.), chère (f.), *dear*.
bon marché, *cheap*.
apprendre, *to learn*.

je peux } *I can*.
je puis }
tu sais, *thou knowest*.

il aime, *he likes*.
fatigué, *tired*.
enseigné, *taught*.

mené, *led*.
dit, *said*, *told*.
trop, *too*, *too much*.

EXERCISE 16.

(*a*) 1. Je ne peux pas apprendre les mots que vous avez écrits. 2. Quels mots? 3. Les mots anglais. 4. Pourquoi, mon enfant? 5. Parce qu'ils sont trop difficiles, monsieur. 6. Les petites filles sont-elles très fatiguées? 7. Quelles petites filles? 8. Les filles du marchand dont* je vous ai parlé avant-hier. 9. Le professeur a-t-il enseigné à Jeanne les jolies fables de La Fontaine? 10. Est-ce que son maître de

* See Appendix, pp. 198, 199.

français est venu hier? 11. Oui, monsieur. 12. Les bergers ont-ils mené les moutons au pâturage? 13. Est-ce que les dames du château ont reçu les lettres que vous avez écrites? 14. Je ne sais pas de quelles lettres vous parlez. 15. Des lettres que vous avez envoyées il y a une semaine. 16. Le facteur est-il venu, Marie? 17. Oui, monsieur, il a apporté des journaux. 18. Où sont-ils? 19. Sur la table de la salle à manger.

(*b*) 1. Has not Emily found the gloves which I bought yesterday? 2. No, madam. 3. What! They were (*étaient*) in my room, on the wash-stand. 4. Has the servant seen any stranger in the house? 5. Yes, madam; a negro entered (into) the garden yesterday; perhaps he came into (*est-il entré dans*) the room through the window, which was (*était*) open. 6. What a beautiful picture! 7. Did your father sleep well?* 8. Yes, thank you; he likes the room you gave him (*lui*). 9. Are you tired, Miss Emily? 10. Yes, madam, I am tired, because my pupils are neither industrious nor careful. 11. Did you see the person yesterday of whom I spoke to you? 12. No; but I think that she has received the letter I wrote.

LESSON XVII.

Comparison of Adjectives.

Rule 21. — The *comparative* is formed by putting **plus** (*more*) or **moins** (*less*) before the adjective; the *superlative*, by putting **le plus** (*the most*) or **le moins** (*the least*) before the adjective. After a comparative, *than* is rendered by **que**.

* In French the adverb is placed after the verb, but *before* a past participle.

Ex. — *Plus savant*, wiser. *Moins savant*, less wise.
Le plus savant, the wisest. *Le moins savant*, the least wise.

The following are the most frequently used examples of irregular comparison: —

(*a*) **bon**, *good.*	**meilleur**, *better.*		**le meilleur**, *the best.*
(*b*) **mauvais**, *bad.*	**pire** / **plus mauvais**	*worse.*	**le pire** / **le plus mauvais** — *the worst.*
(*c*) **petit** *little, short, small.*	**moindre** / **plus petit**	*less, shorter, or smaller.*	**le moindre** / **le plus petit** — *the least, shortest, smallest.*

The comparative of equality, expressed by the English *as . . . as*, is rendered by **aussi . . . que**, the adjective being placed between them.

Ex. — You are as rich as my uncle, *tu es aussi riche que mon oncle.*

In negative sentences, **si** replaces **aussi**.

Ex. — *Tu n'es ni si riche ni si intelligent que mon oncle*, thou art neither so rich nor so intelligent as my uncle.

Note. — After a superlative, *in* is translated by **de**. Ex.: *Tu es le meilleur garçon du monde*, you are the best boy *in* the world.

VOCABULARY.

doigt (m.), *finger.*
pouce (m.), *thumb.*
index (m.), *forefinger.*
médius (m.), *middle finger.*
annulaire (m.), *ring finger.*
jambe (f.), *leg.*
bras (m.), *arm.*
ongle (m.), *nail.*
orteil (m.), *toe.*
famille (f.), *family.*
certainement, *certainly, indeed.*
oreille (f.), *ear.*
défaut (m.), *bad quality, fault.*
gourmandise (f.), *gluttony.*
long (m.), longue (f.), *long.*
court, *short.*
gros (m.), grosse (f.), *thick.*
fort, *strong.*
faible, *weak.*
gauche, *left, awkward.*
droit, *right.*
curieux, *inquisitive.*
accepter, *to accept.*
si, *so, as.*

EXERCISE 17.

(*a*) 1. La jambe gauche est aussi forte que la jambe droite 2. Les enfants de ma sœur ne sont pas si grands que leur mère. 3. La main droite est aussi longue que la main gauche. 4. Les bras ne sont pas si forts que les jambes. 5. Le pouce est moins long mais plus gros que le petit doigt. 6. L'annulaire est moins gros et moins long que le médius. 7. Le bras est plus faible que la jambe. 8. Le pouce est le doigt le plus court. 9. La femme n'est ni si grande ni si forte que l'homme. 10. Les ongles des doigts sont plus petits que les ongles des orteils. 11. Émilie est bonne; elle est meilleure que son frère Émile, qui est mauvais; mais Jean est pire qu'Émile. 12. Est-il le pire de la famille? 13. Oui, certainement il est le pire, et sa sœur Émilie est la meilleure. 14. Mon frère George n'est pas très bon; mon frère Louis est mauvais; ma sœur Louise est pire, et je suis certainement le pire. 15. Le morceau de viande est petit, mais le morceau de sucre est moindre. 16. Le moindre de mes défauts est la gourmandise.

(*b*) 1. The right arm is stronger than the left. 2. The ears are as long as the nose. 3. The left leg is as thick as the right. 4. The toe nails are not so large as the finger nails. 5. The little finger is not so thick as the ring finger. 6. The forefinger and thumb are stronger than the middle finger. 7. Their brother is not worse than my cousin (m.), who is not so bad as his brother Baptist. 8. Is the bread good? 9. Yes, the bread is good, but the cake is better, and the oranges are the best; the roast beef is bad, and the dessert worse. 10. My sister Emily is the best of the family. 11. Father is small, mother is smaller, and my sister Clarissa is the smallest of the family. 12. Which is the least of your bad qualities? 13. You are too inquisitive, my dear sir!

LESSON XVIII.

This and *that*, used to point out a noun, are adjectives, and must be translated as follows: —

Masc.		*Fem.*	*Plur.*
Before Consonant.	Before Vowel or h mute.		Both Genders.
ce	cet	cette	ces

Ex. — *Ce bâton est de bois dur*, this stick is of hard wood.
Cet enfant a été souvent malade, this child has often been sick.
Cet homme est sorti de prison, this man has come out of prison.
Cette femme est très triste, this woman is very sad.
Ces grandes forêts sont toujours silencieuses, these great forests are always silent.

This and *that*, used alone in place of a noun, are pronouns, and are translated thus: —

Sing.		Plur.	
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*
celui	celle	ceux	celles

Ex. — *Votre jardin est plus beau que celui de mon ami*, your garden is more beautiful than *that* of my friend.
Cette lettre est celle que j'ai écrite, this letter is *that* which I have written.
Quels sont les meilleurs arbres? Ceux qui sont chargés de fruits. Which are the best trees? *Those* which are laden with (full of) fruit.
Nous avons vu vos fleurs et celles de votre voisin, we have seen your flowers and *those* of your neighbor.

Notes. — (*a*) To render the idea of the *nearness* or *distance* of the object spoken of, ci and là are added to the noun. Ex.: *Ces fruits-ci sont mûrs, pendant que ceux-là sont verts;* these fruits are ripe, while those are green. *Quelle poire veux-tu, mon enfant? Je veux celle-là, la grosse.* Which pear do you want, my child? I want that one, the big one.

(*b*) When *this* and *that* are used to point out something not mentioned specifically, they are translated by ceci and cela. Ex.: *Donnez ceci à*

votre tante, give this to your aunt; *apportez-moi cela*, bring me that; *j'a appris ceci: être toujours studieux et poli*, I have learned *this*, to be always industrious and polite; *vous n'avez pas fait vos devoirs, n'oubliez pas cela*, you have not done your work, don't forget *that!*

Rule 22. — Contrary to English usage, nouns used in a *general sense* must have the *definite article* in French.

Ex. — *La paresse est la mère de tous les vices*, laziness is the mother of all the vices.

Les chevreaux sont de frétillants petits animaux, kids are frisky little animals.

VOCABULARY.

hiver* (m.), *winter.*
printemps (m.), *spring.*
été (m.), *summer.*
automne* (m. and f.), *autumn, fall.*
saison (f.), *season.*
chaleur (f.), *heat, warmth.*
froid (m.), *cold.*
neige (f.), *snow.*
pluie (f.), *rain.*
glace (f.), *ice.*
humidité (f.), *moisture.*
terre (f.), *earth.*
air (m.), *air.*
soleil (m.), *sun.*
lumière (f.), *light.*
absence (f.), *absence.*
produit, *produces, produced.*
visité, *visited.*
dernier, dernière, *last.*
bavard, *talkative.*
quatre, *four.*
il y a, *there is, there are.*

EXERCISE 18.

(*a*) 1. Il y a quatre saisons: le printemps, l'été, l'automne, et l'hiver. 2. La chaleur est produite par le soleil, et le froid par son absence. 3. Le printemps est la plus belle des saisons; *cette* saison est *celle* des fleurs. 4. *Cet* hiver a été plein d'humidité, de neige et de glace, pendant que *celui* de l'année dernière a été moins froid. 5. *Ces* petites filles-*ci* sont *celles* de ma sœur, et *ces* grands garçons-*là* sont *ceux* du neveu du général Lafayette. 6. Avez-vous acheté *ces* légumes? 7. *Ceux-ci* sont bons à manger, *ceux-là* sont trop durs. 8. *Cet* homme-*là* est très silencieux, mais *cette* femme-*ci* est très bavarde.

* Pronounce *hi-vèr*, and drop the m of automne (*au-tonn'*).

(*b*) 1. In (*en*) autumn the heat is not so great as in summer. 2. Winter is the coldest of the seasons. 3. It is (*c'est*) the season of rain and snow. 4. Cold is produced by the absence of the sun, which gives (*donne*) heat and light to the earth. 5. This wood is full of moisture. 6. This fall is warmer (*plus chaud*) than that of last year. 7. Please pass me those cakes; they are better than these which I have taken. 8. This stick is finer than that which you have brought. 9. Our companions have set out for that great forest of which we spoke a week ago. 10. Which forest? 11. That which we saw from the castle of Fontainebleau. 12. Oh, that is the beautiful Forest of Fontainebleau.

LESSON XIX.

C'est, *he, she, it is.* | **Ce sont,** *they are.*

Rule 23. — **C'est** and **ce sont** are generally used to translate *he, she, it is,* and *they are,* —

(*a*) When a superlative follows.

Ex. — ***C'est la plus belle des filles***, she is the prettiest of girls.
Ce sont les meilleurs chasseurs du pays ennemi, they are the best hunters in the enemy's country.

(*b*) Before a noun.

Ex. — ***C'est une perte d'argent***, it is a loss of money.
Ce sont mes frères Louis et Jean, it is my brothers Louis and John.

(*c*) Before a pronoun.

Ex. — ***Ce sont ceux de mon voisin***, they are those of my neighbor.
C'est vous, it is you. ***Ce sont elles***, it is they (f.).

Notes. — (*a*) **Ce sont** is only used for the third person plural, and not always then, if the sentence is interrogative; as, *Est-ce elles?* Is it they?
(*b*) The expression *it must be* is translated by **ce doit être.**

VOCABULARY.

grand-père (m.), *grandfather.*
grand'mère (f.), *grandmother.*
artiste (m. and f.), *artist.*
chambre à coucher (f.), *bedroom.*
meubles (m. pl.), *furniture.*
fauteuil (m.), *armchair.*
berceuse (f.), *rocking-chair.*
lit (m.), *bed.*
glace (f.) { *mirror,* *looking-glass.*
tabouret (m.), *stool.*
faire une visite, *to pay a visit.*
cadre (m.), *frame.*
feu (m.), *fire.*
coin du feu (m.), *fireside.*
célèbre, *celebrated.*
peint, *painted.*
facile, *easy.*
magnifique, *magnificent.*
regardez / voyez } *look at.*
en effet, *in fact.*
précisément, *precisely, exactly.*
connaissez-vous? *do you know?*
on frappe, *somebody is knocking.*

EXERCISE 19.

(*a*) 1. Quel beau salon! 2. C'est le plus joli de ceux que j'ai vus. 3. Voyez les meubles de cette grande chambre; ne sont-ils pas magnifiques? 4. Ce sont les plus beaux de ceux que j'ai vus et peut-être aussi les plus chers. 5. Asseyez-vous dans cette berceuse, qui a été celle de ma grand'mère. 6. On frappe. 7. Qui est-ce? 8. Je ne sais qui c'est. 9. Ce doit être mon frère; ouvrez la porte, s'il vous plaît. 10. Mettez ce fauteuil-ci au coin du feu pour mon grand-père, et ce tabouret-là près de la fenêtre pour ma petite sœur qui est au lit, et qui est très fatiguée. 11. J'ai fait une visite à vos sœurs il y a quatre jours; est-ce elles qui sont arrivées avant-hier? 12. Non, madame, ce sont les dames de ce château-là que vous voyez près du bois. 13. Est-ce que ce sont les mères des demoiselles que nous avons vues ce matin? 14. Précisément, ce sont elles.

(*b*) 1. Look at those pictures in those fine frames; they were painted by the celebrated artists Meissonier and Bouguereau. 2. I do not like the furniture of these bedrooms;

it is ugly. 3. This bed is my father's; it is the one (*celui*) in which he has slept (*couché*) for four years. 4. There are two rocking-chairs in the drawing-room; they are my grandmother's and my uncle's (that of my grandmother, etc.). 5. Who is in the dining-room? 6. It is Mary and her cousin. 7. Did you see the trees of which I spoke? They are the biggest in the forest. 8. Who is it that has come back from the country? 9. It must be those pretty girls whom our friend the artist saw at Mr. Cleveland's house (*chez M. Cleveland*); they are, in fact, the prettiest girls in our (the) city. 10. Are they as good as pretty? 11. I have already told you that you are too inquisitive. 12. That is an easy answer to (for) a difficult question. 13. Somebody is knocking; who is it? 14. It must be my French teacher. 15. Open the door, please.

LESSON XX.

Sing.		Plur.		
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes,	*mine.**
le tien,	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	*thine.*
le sien,	la sienne,	les siens,	les siennes,	*his, hers, its.*
le nôtre,†	la nôtre,	les nôtres,		*ours.*
le vôtre,†	la vôtre,	les vôtres,		*yours.*
le leur,	la leur,	les leurs,		*theirs.*

Note that these words not only denote possession, but *also stand in place of a noun;* they are therefore pronouns.

* Note once more the contrast between the *one* English form *mine*, etc., and the various French forms used to distinguish gender and number: *le mien, la mienne, les miens, les miennes*, etc.

† Notice that this pronoun differs from the adjective, in that it takes not only the article, but also a circumflex accent, which lengthens its vowel sound.

Rule 24. — In French, pronouns must agree in gender and number with the noun which they represent.

NOTE. — For the sake of politeness, the French put the courtesy title *monsieur*, *madame*, *mademoiselle*, and their plurals, before the names of relatives of the person they are addressing (as, *Mademoiselle votre sœur est-elle venue dans le pays pour toujours ?* Has your sister come into the country for good ?); but when the person referred to is an intimate friend, the courtesy title is left out.

VOCABULARY.

village (m.), *village.*
rue (f.), *street.*
cloche (f.), *bell.*
toit (m.), *roof.*
église (f.), *church.*
bâtiment (m.), *building.*
clocher (m.), *steeple.*
perron (m.), *flight of steps.*
pierre (f.), *stone.*
pavage (m.) { *paving*, *pavement.*
cheminée (f.), *chimney.*
fumée (f.), *smoke.*
brique (f.), *brick.*
habité, *inhabited*, *lived in.*
voiture (f.), *carriage.*
large, *broad.*
étroit, *narrow.*
bien aise, *glad.*
sale, *dirty.*
haut, *high.*
bas, *low.*
savoir, *to know.*
tiré, *drawn*, *dragged.*
rencontré, *met.*
remarqué, *noticed.*
couvert, *covered.*
attelé (de) { *drawn* (*by*) (of a *carriage*).
pays (m.), *land*, *country.*

EXERCISE 20.

(*a*) 1. J'ai remarqué dans la ville de Baltimore beaucoup de rues sales et étroites avec de jolies maisons, mais pas une si grande que la mienne. 2. Les cheminées de ma maison ne sont-elles pas aussi hautes que les vôtres ? 3. Comment puis-je le (*it*) savoir ? 4. Le clocher de votre église est-il aussi haut que le nôtre ? 5. À qui est ce beau bâtiment, avec son toit couvert d'ardoises ? 6. Il est aux fils du capitaine Véron. 7. Et à qui sont ces beaux chevaux et cette belle voiture ? 8. Ce sont aussi les leurs. 9. Qui a apporté ce joli petit mouchoir à madame votre mère ? Est-ce le sien ? 10. Est-ce que ces

cravates sont à mademoiselle votre sœur? 11. Oui, monsieur, ce sont les siennes. 12. Voyez-vous cet homme sur mon perron? 13. Il n'est pas sur le vôtre, il est sur le mien. 14. Regardez, il est entré dans la maison! 15. Oui, dans la mienne! 16. J'ai trouvé les gants que j'avais (*had*) perdus. 17. Où étaient- (*were*) ils? 18. Dans le salon. 19. Non, ce ne sont pas les tiens; ma mère a mis ces gants sur un fauteuil du salon, et ce sont les siens. 20. Ce qui est à la mère est à la fille; ces gants sont les nôtres.

(*b*) 1. We have a very large church in our village. 2. Yes; but it is not so fine as ours. 3. The pavement of the town in which we lived is better than that in yours. 4. My brother says that our streets are not so clean as those of his village. 5. His village! Which village is his? 6. It is Windham, the streets of which are very pretty, with their great trees. 7. We saw a fine carriage drawn by two magnificent horses; whose is it? 8. How do I know? 9. General Daguerre is in town; perhaps it is his. 10. What a fine castle is theirs! 11. It is one of the most magnificent in the land. 12. Have you noticed the church at (of) N.? 13. No; but I know it has a very tall steeple, the bells of which are larger than those in your church. 14. Yes; they are the largest in the country. 15. The roofs of these buildings are too low — are they yours? 16. No, my friend, they are not mine. 17. Whose handkerchief is this? Is it yours? 18. No, madam, it is not mine; it is your father's. 19. Oh, thank you! 20. Not at all. 21. Whose are those carriages which your cousin has? 22. Don't you know? They are her own.* 23. Who is that tall lady, Clarissa? 24. Oh, she is a friend of mine.†

---

* *My own, thy own*, etc., when they stand alone, must be translated simply as if they were *mine, thine*, etc.

† All such sentences as this must be turned before translating; thus, *one of my friends.*

Conjugation of être (to be).

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Future, *to-morrow* (demain), *in a few days* (dans quelques jours), *next year* (l'année prochaine).

Affirmative.

je **serai** soldat,	*I shall be a soldier.*
tu **seras** persévérant,	*thou wilt be persevering.*
il / elle / on **sera** voyageur,	*he will be a traveler.*
il / elle / on **sera** gentille,	*she will be gentle.*
il / elle / on **sera** habile,	*one will be clever.*
nous **serons** malheureux,	*we shall be unhappy.*
vous **serez** francs,	*you will be frank.*
ils / elles **seront** craintifs,	*they will be timid.*
ils / elles **seront** naïves,	*they will be simple.*

Negative.

je ne **serai** pas actif,	*I shall not be active.*
tu ne **seras** pas oisif,	*thou wilt not be idle.*
il / elle / on ne **sera** pas laborieux,	*he will not be industrious.*
il / elle / on ne **sera** pas courageuse,	*she will not be courageous.*
il / elle / on ne **sera** pas lâche,	*one will not be a coward.*
nous ne **serons** pas ingrats,	*we shall not be ungrateful.*
vous ne **serez** pas reconnaissants,	*you will not be grateful.*
ils / elles ne **seront** pas attentifs,	*they will not be attentive.*
ils / elles ne **seront** pas inattentives,	*they will not be inattentive.*

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons XV.–XX.)

VOCABULARY.

Nellie, *Nelly.*
secours (m.), *help.*
minute (f.), *minute.*
travail (m.), travaux (pl.), *work.*
battu, *beaten.*
descendu, *come down, descended.*
attaqué, *attacked.*
assis, *seated.*

ORAL EXERCISE (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Avez-vous vu les troupeaux ?
Les troupeaux de moutons que nous avons vus hier sur la montagne.
Quels troupeaux ? (Lesquels ?)
Ils sont descendus des pâturages, et sont maintenant dans le village.

Que seront-ils devenus dans quelques années ?	Qui, ces moutons-là ? Ils auront été (*will have been*) mangés.
Et les bergers qui ont mené les troupeaux aux pâturages, que seront-ils devenus ?	Ils seront peut-être morts.
Serons-nous attaqués par ces hommes ?	Lesquels ?
Ceux à qui vous avez donné de l'argent.	Non, non, ma chère, ils ne seront pas assez lâches.
Les hommes ne sont-ils pas souvent ingrats ?	Mais oui, très souvent, mais ceux-là seront reconnaissants.
Quels meubles votre mari a-t-il achetés ?	Il a acheté une commode, une berceuse, un fauteuil, et ce beau lavabo que nous avons vu hier.
Qui a remporté la victoire ?	Les ennemis ont remporté la victoire, qu'ils n'ont pas gagnée sans beaucoup de pertes.
L'armée ennemie sera-t-elle entrée dans la ville demain soir ?	Dans quelle ville ; celle que nous avons habitée pendant tant d'années ?
Oui, la nôtre.	Non, jamais (*never*) ! demain matin des secours seront arrivés.
Mais si les généraux ennemis sont plus habiles que les nôtres ?	Nos soldats sont plus forts et plus courageux que les leurs ; ils seront battus !
Ces rues-ci sont beaucoup moins étroites que celles-là.	Oui, mais celles-là ont de plus belles maisons.
Ces enfants sont actifs et laborieux dans leurs travaux ; seront-ils reconnaissants des récompenses que nous leur avons données ?	Oui, certainement. Ils sont très gentils et très francs, et seront heureux de leurs récompenses.

Which are your houses ?	They are those which you see in this street, and that great building with the open door is mine also.
When will the children be soldiers ?	Whose children ? Yours (2d sing.) or mine ?
Those of my neighbors, to whom we sent some fruit a week ago.	When they are of age ; they are still under age.

Do you think they are pretty children?	No, I think they are weaker and less intelligent than ours.
My grandfather's little finger is neither so thick nor so strong as mine; is it as small as hers?	As whose? (that of whom?)
As that of the girl who was (*était*) here a few minutes ago.	How can I know? I have never noticed that girl's hand.
Do you know the gentleman whom we had at supper last night?	I do not know of whom you are speaking (*vous parlez*).
Did you not notice the two gentlemen who sat (*étaient*) by me (*près de moi*) at table?	Oh, yes! but I do not know those gentlemen. Who are they?
They are merchants who came from America last month; they will be very rich in a few years.	
Look at those beautiful birds in those big cages! What birds are they?	They are canaries which have been brought from distant (*lointaines*) islands.
Are those trees as full of fruit as these?	Oh, yes! they are fuller of fruit, and their fruit is larger and riper than that of these trees.
They are magnificent trees.	Yes, and they are mine.
Shall you be in (à) Paris next year?	No. Mother says I do not know French well enough.

LESSON XXI.

Sing.			Plur.		
Nom.	Obj. Direct.	Obj. Indirect.	Nom.	Obj. Direct.	Obj. Indirect.
je, *I;*	me, *me;*	me, *to me.*	nous, *we;*	nous, *us;*	nous, *to us.*
tu, *thou;*	te, *thee;*	te, *to thee.*	vous, *you;*	vous, *you;*	vous, *to you.*
il, *he, it;* elle, *she;*	le, *him, it* la, *her, it*	lui, *to him, it. her, it.*	ils elles	*they;*	les, *them;* leur, *to them.*

These pronouns are *conjunctive;* that is, they are used *together with a verb.*

Rule 25. — Conjunctive personal pronouns, either as nominative or objective, *precede* the verb, the nominative coming first.

Ex. — *Je leur* ai parlé,* I spoke to them. *Elles m'ont vu,* they have seen me.

Note. — The *subject* stands as in English; whereas the *object* (*direct* or *indirect*) differs from the English, as it is placed *before* the verb.

Rule 26. — The negative **ne** is placed between the nominative and objective; but an *adverb* can never separate them, as in English.

Ex. — *Tu ne les as pas vus,* you have not seen them.
Nous les avons souvent rencontrés, we have often met them.

Rule 27. — When the pronouns of both the *indirect* and *direct* objective are required before the verb, the *indirect* comes first, *except* when *both* pronouns are in the third person, and when the governing verb is in the *imperative affirmative,* in which case the *direct object* comes first.

Ex. — *Vous me l'avez montré,* you have shown it to me.
Ont-elles vu ma robe? Oui; ta sœur la leur a apportée. Have they seen my dress? Yes; thy sister has brought it to them.
Vendez-le-lui, sell it to him.

Note. — For the distinction between the article and the pronoun **le, la, les,** see Appendix, p. 197.

VOCABULARY.

roman (m.), *novel.*
jeune, *young.*
vous lisez, *you read.*
je connais, *I know.*
ils désirent, *they want.*
lire, *to read.*
je lis, *I read, am reading.*
rendre, *to give back.*
rendu (p.p.), *given back, rendered.*
voir, *to see.*
emprunté, *borrowed.*
oublié, *forgotten.*
répondu, *answered.*
vendu, *sold.*
combien (de), *how many.*
beaucoup (de), *much, many.*
loin, *far, far off.*
une fois (*one time*), *once.*

* Notice that leur as a personal pronoun never takes an s.

EXERCISE 21.

(*a*) 1. Où sont mes tableaux? 2. Le marchand *les* a; je *les lui* ai envoyés hier. 3. Quand voulez-vous *me* rendre l'argent que je *vous* ai prêté? 4. Je *vous l'*ai rendu il y a une semaine. 5. Votre cousine *vous* a-t-elle écrit? 6. Oh, oui, elle *m'*écrit (*writes*) souvent. 7. Nos camarades *nous* ont oubliés, peut-être. 8. Non, messieurs, ils *nous* ont demandé si vous étiez (*were*) en ville. 9. Connaissez-vous ces jeunes filles? 10. Non, je ne *les* connais pas. 11. Monsieur le général N. *vous* parle, pourquoi ne *lui* répondez-vous pas? 12. Je ne *l'*ai pas entendu. 13. Puis-je *vous* demander si vous avez lu le dernier roman de Pierre Loti? 14. Oui, monsieur; je *l'*ai lu la semaine dernière. 15. Et mademoiselle votre sœur, *l'*a-t-elle lu aussi? 16. Je *le lui* ai prêté pour *le* lire. 17. Il y a beaucoup d'oiseaux dans cette forêt, je *les* entends (pres. ind.) du matin au soir; pendant la nuit ils sont silencieux. 18. Le monsieur dont nous avons parlé ce matin *nous* est venu de la campagne. 19. Combien de fois *vous* a-t-il écrit? 20. Il a écrit seulement une fois. 21. *Lui* avez-vous rendu le roman qu'il *vous* a prêté? 22. Non, je ne *le lui* ai pas encore rendu. 23. Avez-vous salué les dames que nous avons rencontrées à l'église? 24. Certainement, je *les* ai saluées. 25. *Leur* avez-vous parlé? 26. Non, je ne *leur* ai pas parlé. 27. Pourquoi? 28. Parce qu'elles étaient trop loin.

(*b*) 1. Did they (f.) come to see *us?* 2. No, they did not come to see *you.* 3. Look at this pretty little stool; I have bought *it,* and I give *it to you.* 4. Where is your horse? 5. The huntsman has *it;* I have sold *it to him.* 6. I asked you to (*de*) send those pictures to my cousins (f.); have you sent *them to them?* 7. Yes, I have sent *them to them,* and they returned *them to me* the day before yesterday. 8. Why have you this child's map? 9. He lent *it to me.* 10. And his copy-

books? 11. He lent *them to me* also. 12. Do you like to (à) hear the professor? 13. I do not know; I have heard *him* once only. 14. My daughters have your book; did you give *it to them?* 15. No, I did not give *it to them.* 16. Do you know Admiral Dufour? 17. Oh, yes! very well. 18. He likes these novels very much;* do you read *them to him?* 19. Yes, I read *them to him* in the evening, at the fireside. 20. Did we not meet *you* at Liverpool? 21. No, I have not met *you.* 22. My aunt wishes to buy your school. 23. I have already sold *it to her.* 24. Your daughters want these gloves; give *them to them,* please. 25. Did you meet the Misses Monclair this afternoon? 26. I did. 27. Did you bow *to them?* 28. Yes, but I didn't speak *to them.*

LESSON XXII.

moi, *I, me.*	**nous,** *we, us.*
toi, *thou, thee.*	**vous,** *you, you.*
lui,† *he, him.*	**eux** } *they, them.*
elle,† *she, her.*	**elles** } *they, them.*

These pronouns are *disjunctive;* that is, they are used alone, or when *separated from the verb.*

Rule 28. — The disjunctive personal pronouns are used, —

(*a*) As the nominative after **c'est** and **ce sont,** expressed or understood.

Ex. — ***C'est moi,*** it is I. ***Ce sont eux,*** it is they (m.).
Qui chante? — ***Moi.*** Who is singing? — I.
Qui mange? — ***Elles.*** Who is eating? — They (f.).

* The *very* of *very much* and *very many* is not translated in French. Both expressions are rendered by **beaucoup.**

† The pron. **se, soi, soi-même,** being reflexive, will be found in Course II.

(*b*) As the indirect object after a preposition.

Ex. — *Elle est sortie avec lui*, she went out with him.
Il travaille pour moi, he works for me.

(*c*) After the idiomatic expression **chez** (*at* or *to the house of*).

Ex. — *J'ai été chez eux*, I have been at their house.
Avez-vous été chez moi? have you been at my house?
Elles sont allées chez elles, they have gone to their house.

(*d*) When there is more than one subject of the verb, in which case they take the place of the conjunctive.

Ex. — *Louis et moi sommes revenus hier*, Louis and I came back yesterday.
Toi et lui avez fait trop de bruit, you and he made too much noise.

Note. — **Moi** is used with the imperative affirmative; as, —

Donnez-moi de l'eau, give me some water.
Laissez-moi tranquille, leave me alone.

The following pronouns are used as in English: —

moi-*même*, *myself.*	**nous-*mêmes***, *ourselves.*
toi-*même*, *thyself.*	**vous-*mêmes***, *yourselves.*
lui-*même*, *himself.*	**eux-*mêmes*** } *themselves.*
elle-*même*, *herself.*	**elles-*mêmes*** } *themselves.*

VOCABULARY.

bague (f.), *ring.*	dîner, *to dine.*
chanson (f.), *song.*	montrer, *to show.*
étoile (f.), *star.*	chanté, *sung.*
milieu (m.), *middle, midst.*	éveillé, *awoke.*
toqué, *idiot.*	jeté, *thrown.*
honnête, *honest.*	laissé, *left.*
seul, *alone.*	trompé, *deceived.*
autre, *other.*	assez, *enough, rather.*
quelque, *some.*	tard (adv.), *late.*
ils descendent, *they come down.*	tôt (adv.), *early.*
je crois, *I think, believe.*	donc, *then.*
vous savez, *you know.*	encore, *yet, still; again.*
admirer, *to admire.*	ne . . . jamais, *never.*

EXERCISE 22.

(*a*) 1. Qui a jeté des pierres? 2. Ce n'est pas *nous*, ce sont *eux*. 3. Qui a chanté? 4. *Elle*. 5. Qui est là? 6. *Moi*. 7. Qui, *toi?* 8. Tu as pris ma bague! 9. Non, ce n'est pas *moi*. 10. Mais je l'ai laissée là sur le lit, et *toi*, seul, es entré dans la chambre. 11. Je te dis (*tell*) que ce n'est pas *moi*. 12. Qui est-ce donc? 13. Comment puis-je le savoir? 14. Cet homme-là est toqué; il m'a éveillé au milieu de la nuit pour admirer les étoiles! 15. Qui donc? 16. Le monsieur qui était (*was*) près de *toi* il y a quelques minutes? 17. Oui, *lui-même*. 18. *Vous* et *moi* avons déjeuné trop tôt; les autres ne sont pas encore descendus. 19. *Eux!* ils descendent toujours trop tard! 20. Un de mes amis m'a demandé si les marchands à qui il a écrit [illegible] honnêtes. 21. Non, beaucoup de personnes ont été trompées par *eux; moi-même*, ils m'ont trompé deux fois. 22. Ces messieurs n'ont jamais chanté si bien. 23. Qui? *eux!* 24. Oui, ils ont chanté assez bien; ce sont de belles chansons qu'ils ont chantées.

(*b*) 1. *You* and *he* are good friends. 2. For whom is this pretty inkstand? 3. It is for *us*. 4. And these broad tables? 5. They are for *them* (m.). 6. We met them yesterday at their house. 7. Whom? 8. Your aunts. 9. *They!* but they left for the country four days ago. 10. Well, (*eh bien!*) they have come back now. 11. How many songs has this gentleman sung? 12. *He?* I do not know, but he has sung them well. 13. My child's plate was on the table a minute ago; is it *you* who took it? 14. No, madam, it is not *I*. 15. Who, then? 16. *He*. 17. Those professors are very learned; these books have been written by *them*. 18. How do you know it (*le*)? 19. I know it through my French master, who told me so a few days ago. 20. Come with *me!* 21. Where? 22. To my house. 23. Why? 24. To dine with *us*. 25. Thank you.

I am too tired; I did not sleep well last night; my companions dragged me out of bed. 26. Why did they not let you alone? 27. *They?* Oh, they wanted (*désiraient*) to show me the stars, I believe. 28. To-morrow I shall be at home, and *you* (2d sing.) — shall you be at home? 29. Certainly, I shall be at home. 30. Have you been to Mrs. Villar's? 31. Yes, I was at *her house* yesterday.

LESSON XXIII.

Rule 29. — The French indefinite pronoun **on** corresponds to the English indefinite pronoun *one*, and the word *people* used indefinitely.

Ex. — ***On peut dire*, one may say.**

The pronouns *we*, *you*, and *they*, when they mean nobody in particular, are all translated by **on**.

Ex. — *We* ought to forgive our enemies, ***on doit pardonner à ses ennemis.***
You cannot get fruit from a thorn, ***on ne peut obtenir des fruits d'une épine.***
They say you are already married, ***on dit que vous êtes déjà marié.***

Rule 30. — The English passive voice is usually translated in French by the active, with **on** for the subject, when the idea is somewhat indefinite. (For passive voice, see Appendix, p. 225.)

Ex. — You have been forbidden to smoke, ***on vous a défendu de fumer.***

VOCABULARY.

In the following idioms, *to be*, with an adjective, is rendered by **avoir** with a noun, but they cannot be used impersonally: —

avoir	faim	*to be*	*hungry.*	**avoir**	chaud	*to be*	*warm.*
	soif		*thirsty.*		froid		*cold.*
	raison		*right.*		honte		*ashamed.*
	tort		*wrong.*		peur		*afraid.*
	besoin		*in need.*		sommeil		*sleepy.*

cocher (m.), *coachman.*
cuisine (f.), *kitchen.*
cuisinier (m.), -ère (f.), *cook.*
armée (f.), *army.*
anglais (m.), *English language.*
nord (m.), *north.*
sud (m.), *south.*
lieue (f.), *league.*
obligation (f.), *obligation.*
chose (f.), *thing.*
heure (f.), *hour.*
pardon (m.), *pardon.*
marché, *walked, marched.*
offert, *offered.*
prendra, *will take.*
on tourmente, *one torments.*
plusieurs,* *several.*
possible, *possible.*
quand, *when.*
plaît-il ? *I beg your pardon?*
au contraire, *on the contrary.*
pour (before an inf.), *to, in order to.*

EXERCISE 23.

(*a*) 1. Le cocher doit *avoir* froid, il a fait (*driven*) plusieurs lieues, et on ne lui a pas offert à boire. 2. Quelle honte! vous n'avez pas encore payé ces robes. 3. Plaît-il? Où avez-vous trouvé cela†? 4. Vous avez tort, je les ai payées la semaine dernière. 5. Un soldat ne doit pas *avoir* peur. 6. J'ai marché pendant plusieurs heures; je suis maintenant fatigué, et j'*ai* faim et soif. 7. Toi? tu *as* soif? est-il possible? 8. Le général de l'armée du Sud *a* besoin de secours; l'ennemi l'a attaqué. 9. On ne t'a pas dit que mon ami est allé chez toi? 10. Non, mais je sais bien où il est quand j'*ai* besoin de lui. 11. On peut acheter ici des journaux, du papier, de l'encre et de la craie. 12. Ici l'on‡ parle français. 13. On *a* toujours tort quand on tourmente les animaux. 14. Doit-on *avoir* sommeil, quand on a beaucoup à faire? 15. Certainement non; au contraire! 16. Mes souliers ont été perdus. 17. Par qui? 18. C'est toi qui les as perdus; où les as-tu laissés? 19. Je ne sais pas. 20. Mon ami, on ne perd pas ses souliers quand on est soigneux. 21. Alice, as-tu rendu le livre à Mlle Nellie? 22. Non, maman, je ne l'ai pas encore lu.

---

* **Plusieurs** has no separate form for the feminine.
† Translate, "who has told you that?"
‡ **L'on** is used for **on** for euphony, but must never begin a sentence.

(*b*) 1. Is not the cook too warm by this great fire? 2. No, I do not think so; she is always cold when she is not in the kitchen. 3. English is spoken here. 4. We are satisfied when we have done our duty. 5. You have already been forbidden once to read these novels; if you read them again, they will be taken from you (*on vous les prendra*). Have you understood me? 6. Yes, sir. 7. Very well; give me them now, and sit down to table. 8. People say that you have been married once already. 9. I beg your pardon? 10. One may be too tired to (*pour*) read a book. 11. The pictures I sent to the town have not been received (use *on*). 12. We ought not to be ashamed of being (*d'être*) poor. 13. You (*On*) do not often see a village situated in the middle of a wood. 14. Our armies have been attacked in the mountains by the enemy.

LESSON XXIV.

1, un, une.	15, quinze.	72, soixante-douze.
2, deux.	16, seize.	78, soixante-dix-huit.
3, trois.	17, dix-sept.	80, quatre-vingts.
4, quatre.	18, dix-huit.	81, quatre-vingt-un, *etc.*
5, cinq.*	19, dix-neuf.	90, quatre-vingt-dix.
6, six.*	20, vingt.	91, quatre-vingt-onze, *etc.*
7, sept.*	21, vingt et un.	100, cent.†
8, huit.*	22, vingt-deux, *etc.*	101, cent un, *etc.*
9, neuf.*	30, trente.	200, deux cents.
10, dix.*	40, quarante.	248, deux cent quarante-huit.
11, onze.	50, cinquante.	1,000, mille.†
12, douze.	60, soixante.	100,000, cent mille.
13, treize.	70, soixante-dix.	1,000,000, un million.
14, quatorze.	71, soixante et onze.	1,000,000,000, un milliard.

* The final consonant of the cardinal numbers **cinq**, **six**, **sept**, **huit**, **neuf**, and **dix**, is not sounded when the following word begins with a consonant or **h** aspirate, except in **dix-neuf**; as, *cinq portes* (cin porte), *huit hauts étages* (ui auz étage).

† Unlike the English, *a* or *one* is not expressed before *hundred* or *thousand;* as, *cent francs, mille hommes.*

Rule 31. — The conjunction *and,* used in so many English numbers, finds its French equivalent only in the following numeral adjectives: 21 (*vingt et un*), 31, 41, 51, 61, and 71.

Rule 32. — **Cent** and **vingt** take **s** when multiplied by a number, and not followed by another.

Ex. — *Quatre cents francs, quatre-vingts francs.*

NOTES. — (*a*) **Mille** is written **mil** in dates A.D. Ex.: 1893, *mil huit cent quatre-vingt-treize.*

(*b*) The numbers from 17 to 99, either alone, or used with 100 and 1000, etc., are written with hyphens (21, 31, 41, 51, 61, and 71 excepted).

Rule 33. — Unlike English, French requires the use of the cardinal numbers in stating the days of the month, with the single exception of the 1st, *le premier.*

Ex. — *Le quatre mars,* March 4; *le vingt-six août,* the 26th of August.

NOTE. — To ask a person's age, the French say, *Quel âge avez-vous?* (How old are you?) and reply by saying, *J'ai dix-huit ans* (I am eighteen). The adjective **âgé** with **de** is also used, but less frequently: *Ma nièce est âgée de seize ans,* my niece is sixteen years old.

VOCABULARY.

janvier, *January.*
février, *February.*
mars, *March.*
avril, *April.*
mai, *May.*
juin, *June.*
juillet, *July.*
août, *August.*
septembre, *September.*
octobre, *October.*
novembre, *November.*
décembre, *December.*

an (m.), *year.*
année commune (f.), *common year.*
année bissextile (f.), *leap year.*
franc (m.), *franc.*
grand'route (f.), *highway.*
mois (m.), *month.*
prix (m.), *price.*
quinzaine (f.), *fortnight.*
sorte (f.), *kind, sort.*
sou (m.), *cent.*
dangereux, *dangerous.*
vrai, *true.*
splendide, *splendid.*
compte, *counts.*
font, *make.*
il commande, *he commands.*
né, *born.*
récemment, *recently.*
alors, *then.*
autant, *as many, as much.*
depuis, *since.*
environ, *about.*

EXERCISE 24.

(*a*) 1. Il y a deux sortes d'années, les années communes et les années bissextiles. 2. Il y a deux cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf pages dans ce livre. 3. Il y a cinquante-deux semaines dans une année. 4. L'année a douze mois. 5. Il y a vingt-trois maisons dans cette rue. 6. Combien de soldats y a-t-il dans cette armée? 7. Il y a environ cinquante-cinq mille soldats. 8. Quel âge a le général qui la commande? 9. Il a plus de* soixante ans. 10. Nous avons perdu récemment quatre cents dollars. 11. Ce n'est rien! mon ami a perdu environ quatre-vingt mille trois cents dollars. 12. Le général Lafayette est mort le vingt mai, mil huit cent trente-quatre (*or* dix-huit cent trente-quatre). 13. Mon frère est arrivé il y a une quinzaine. 14. Depuis le dix-huit décembre de l'année dernière l'hiver a été plein de glace et de neige. 15. Il y a trente et un jours dans le mois de juillet. 16. Trente-deux et soixante et onze font cent trois.

(*b*) Pupils should write down in French the following numbers: 9, 18, 27, 36, 45, 54, 63, 72, 81, 90, 99; 135, 277, 996; 1,012, 4,779, 8,341; 10,271, 1,692,551. 75 and 91 make 166. 89 and 69 make 158.

(*c*) 1. We have received $891 and 61 cents. 2. There are 59 trees in this garden, and only 33 in that. 3. How many leagues have the soldiers marched (*fait*) recently? 4. They have marched 77 leagues in (*en*) a week, and they are too tired now to attack (*pour attaquer*) the enemy. 5. How many men are there in the enemy's army? 6. There are about 195,000 men. 7. How many men has the French army? 8. About three millions. 9. As many as that? 10. Yes, they have (France has) now a splendid army. 11. There are 365 days in a year, 366 days in a leap year, and 7 days in a week.

---

* **De** (and not **que**) is used to translate *than* before a number.

12. Why, then, do they say in French "huit jours" for a week? 13. Because they count [both] the first day and the last. 14. The month of February is less long than the others; it has only 28 days in a common year, and 29 in a leap year. 15. The first month, January, is the coldest, and July is the hottest. 16. The admiral set out [on] the 31st of last month. 17. I was (*je suis*) born [on] the 20th [of] September, 1847; and you, my friend, when were you born? 18. Who? I? 19. Yes. 20. Oh, about 45 years ago. 21. Which of us is the younger, then, or, rather (*plutôt*), the less old? 22. Oh! I don't want to know (it). 23. How old is your little brother? 24. He is six. 25. And your sister? 26. She is nineteen.

Conjugation of **avoir** (*to have*).

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Future,* *the day after to-morrow* (après-demain), *next month* (le mois prochain), *in future* (à l'avenir).

Affirmative.

j'**aurai** une pneumonie,	*I shall have pneumonia.*
tu **auras** la rougeole,	*thou wilt have measles.*
il / elle / on } **aura** des rhumatismes,	*he, she, one, will have rheumatism.*
nous **aurons** notre névralgie,	*we shall have (our) neuralgia.*
vous **aurez** la fièvre scarlatine,	*you will have scarlet fever.*
ils / elles } **auront** la variole,	*they will have the small-pox.*

Negative.

je n'**aurai** pas un catarrhe,	*I shall not have catarrh.*
tu n'**auras** pas une bronchite,	*thou wilt not have bronchitis.*
il / elle / on } n'**aura** pas la goutte,	*he, she, one, will not have the gout.*

* We give the tenses according to their importance in practice, — the present, past, and future, first, as being more necessary at this point in our study.

nous n'aurons pas une sciatique,	*we shall not have sciatica.*
vous n'aurez pas mal aux dents,	*you will not have toothache.*
ils / elles } n'auront pas mal à la gorge,	*they will not have a sore throat.*

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons XXI.-XXIV.)

VOCABULARY.

cahier de chansons (m.) { *book of songs.*	tu vas, *you go.*
rentré, *come home, returned.*	prendre froid, *to catch cold.*
il sait, *he knows.*	ouvrez, *open.*
	Charles, *Charles.*

ORAL EXERCISE (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Bonjour, madame, comment vous portez-vous ce matin ?	Je ne suis pas très bien.
Avez-vous mal aux dents ?	Non, j'ai pris froid.
Ces messieurs ont-ils salué mesdemoiselles vos sœurs ce matin ?	Certainement, ils les ont saluées à la porte de l'église, et leur ont parlé.
Leur ont-ils rendu les romans qu'ils leur ont emprunté il y a une semaine ?	Non, ils ne les leur ont pas encore rendus.
Pourquoi alors sont-ils allés chez elles hier soir ?	Pour leur lire les journaux anglais qui sont restés chez eux pendant une semaine.
Est-ce que mesdemoiselles vos sœurs aiment à lire les journaux ?	Certainement ; on n'a pas beaucoup à faire à la campagne.
Quelles lettres la tante de Charles vous a-t-elle lues ?	Elle m'a lu celles que vous lui avez écrites de Paris l'année dernière.
N'est-ce pas que ces lettres sont bien écrites ?	Certainement, elles sont beaucoup mieux écrites que les livres que nous avons achetés la semaine dernière chez le marchand du village.
Voulez-vous me prêter votre cahier de chansons pour ce soir ?	Je vous le prêterai (*will lend*) avec plaisir, si vous me le rendez demain matin.

Connaissez-vous ce grand monsieur-là ?	Il y a deux messieurs qui sont grands ; duquel parlez-vous ?
Le plus grand des deux ; celui que vous avez vu hier soir avec mon frère.	Lui ? Non, je ne le connais pas. Qui est-il ?
C'est un des deux frères à qui on a offert cette belle maison.	Pourquoi la lui a-t-on offerte ?
Parce qu'il aura beaucoup d'argent dans quelques mois.	
On dit que tu as donné tes chevaux et ta voiture à ta nièce ; est-ce vrai ?	Non, mon ami, mais elle les aura l'année prochaine.
N'a-t-on pas eu tort de m'attaquer dans les journaux ?	Je ne sais pas ; on ne vous a peut-être pas attaqué sans raison, mon cher.

Captain Renfort spoke to you ; why did you not answer him ?	Because I did not hear him.
Why don't you (*tu*) go to the theater to see Mr. Emile ?	I do not want to see him ; I am tired, and I shall stay (*resterai*) at home to-night.
Where are the novels which I lent you to read ?	I have forgotten them. I shall have them with me to-morrow.
Why will not Louis have a reward ?	Because he never knows his lessons.
My nephews have come back ; will you not pay (*ferez*) them a visit ?	I shall be glad to (*de*) see them after so long an absence.
They have shown me your letters.	Which ? Those which I wrote to them two years ago ?
Yes ; did you not write those letters to them from France ?	Yes ; I sent them to them when I was in Paris.
Your brothers got back home (to their house) very late last night.	Yes ; they like (*aiment*) to admire the stars.
Will they have studied (*étudié*) them enough to-morrow morning ?	I do not know, but I will ask (*demanderai*) them (it to them), if you wish.
Is this the dress which you gave your friend, Jane ?	It is the dress I lent her ; I did not give it to her.
It is not so pretty as the one I saw at the theater yesterday ; did you notice it ?	Yes ; but look at this other dress. It is mine, too ; and it is prettier than yours.

Somebody is knocking. Who is it? Who is "I"?	I. It is I, your brother Charles. I have two letters for you from Aunt Louisa.
From her? Give them to me.	I shall give them to you if you open the door.
It is open now. She has answered (to) my letter, then.	Yes; she is very fond of you, and wants to see you very much.

LESSON XXV.

1st, premier.	10th, dixième.
2d, second *or* deuxième.	20th, vingtième.
3d, troisième.	21st, vingt et unième, *etc.*
4th, quatrième.	92d, quatre-vingt-douzième, *etc.*
5th, cinquième.	100th, centième.
6th, sixième.	101st, cent unième.
7th, septième.	1000th, millième.
8th, huitième.	1,000,000th, millionième.
9th, neuvième.	

Rule 34. — The ordinal numbers, with the exception of **premier** and **second**, are formed by adding **ième** to the cardinal numbers. (See notes below.)

NOTES. — (*a*) If the cardinal ends in **e**, that **e** is dropped; as, *onze*, *onzième*.

(*b*) If the cardinal ends in **f**, the **f** becomes **v**; as, *neuf*, *neuvième*.

(*c*) A **q** not final must always be followed by **u**; as, *cinq*, *cinquième*.

(*d*) *First*, in its *compounds*, is never translated by **premier**, but by **unième**; as, *soixante et unième*.

(*e*) **Second** is never used in compounds. EX.: *quarante-deuxième*.

Rule 35. — Numbers used as sovereigns' titles are translated in French by the *cardinal* numeral, except **premier**. The article is suppressed.

EX. — Henry IV., King of France, *Henri IV* (*quatre*), *roi de France*.
Napoleon I., born in 1769, died at St. Helena in 1821; *Napoléon Ier* (*premier*), *né en 1769, est mort à Sainte-Hélène en 1821*.

Rule 36. — To tell the time, the nearest hour is named first, and the parts afterwards added or deducted.

Ex. — 4.15, *quatre heures* et quart;* 8.49, *neuf heures moins onze*: 11.30, *onze heures et demie.*

VOCABULARY.

dimanche (m.), *Sunday.*
lundi (m.), *Monday.*
mardi (m.), *Tuesday.*
mercredi (m.), *Wednesday.*
jeudi (m.), *Thursday.*
vendredi (m.), *Friday.*
samedi (m.), *Saturday.*
histoire (f.), *history.*
grammaire (f.), *grammar.*
étude (f.), *study.*
saumon (m.), *salmon.*
truite (f.), *trout.*
ruisseau (m.), *brook.*
pêche (f.), *fishing.*
livre (f.), *pound.*
montre (f.), *watch.*

cœur (m.), *heart.*
Floride (f.), *Florida.*
héroïque, *heroic.*
aîné, *elder, eldest.*
cadet, *younger.*
avancé, *advanced.*
avant-dernier, *last but one.*
avance de, *is fast.*
retarde de, *is slow.*
va bien, *keeps good time, is right.*
pèse, *weighs.*
conquis, *conquered.*
presque,† *almost.*
comme, *as.*
quelle heure est-il? } *what* { *time* / *o'clock* } *is it?*

EXERCISE 25.

(*a*) 1. Mon maître m'a demandé mon cahier samedi dernier. 2. Quel thème écris-tu maintenant? 3. J'écris le vingt-cinquième. 4. Combien de thèmes y a-t-il? 5. Il y a soixante thèmes dans cette grammaire. 6. Henri IV, roi de France, est mort en mil six cent dix. 7. Quel jour est-ce aujourd'hui? 8. C'est jeudi. 9. Déjà! et j'ai fait seulement vingt et un des quarante et un devoirs qui m'ont été donnés à écrire il y a quinze jours! 10. Ma fille Lucie est la première de sa classe,

---

* Though *o'clock* is often omitted in English, **heures** can never be left out in French; on the other hand, *minutes* after the number is not expressed in French. Thus, *Il est quatre heures vingt-cinq*, it is 25 (minutes) past 4. Notice also that *12 o'clock* is rendered by **midi** (noon) and **minuit** (midnight); *never* by **douze heures.**

† The **e** of *presque* is elided in *presqu'île* only.

et la vingt-deuxième de l'école. 11. Quel âge a-t-elle? 12. Elle est âgée de * onze ans seulement. 13. Elle est très jeune pour être si avancée dans ses études. 14. Oui; et son frère cadet, qui a neuf ans, est presque aussi avancé qu'elle. 15. On m'a envoyé dix belles truites, qui ont été prises dans le fleuve St. Jean en Floride. 16. Mon cousin, qui est allé à la pêche, m'a écrit de la campagne qu'il a pris un saumon qui pèse vingt-six livres. 17. C'est une de ces histoires héroïques, que j'ai déjà entendues plusieurs fois.

(*b*) 1. Is your elder brother as old as his cousin John? 2. Who? Baptist? Oh, yes! he is two years older and much cleverer. 3. On † Wednesday we set out for the third time to see the brook where George caught the big salmon, but we did not find it. 4. What! the salmon? 5. No, papa, the brook. 6. Children, there is no brook there. 7. What time is it? 8. It is 28 minutes past 5, or almost half-past five. 9. James says (*dit*) it is 18 minutes to 6, but I know his watch is fast. 10. Is yours right? 11. It is just a little slow,—one minute, perhaps. 12. This is the one hundred and ninety-sixth picture that this artist has painted. 13. Louis XIV. was king of France for (*pendant*) 72 years; he died in the year 1715. 14. What is the date (*la date*)? 15. It is the 11th, mamma. 16. Do you like French? 17. Yes, madam, but I don't much like the study of grammar. 18. Were you the first of your class in French last month, Lucy? 19. Oh, no, no! I was the last but one. 20. Oh, I know now why! You don't like grammar. 21. How old are you? 22. I am eleven; I am the smallest girl in the French class. 23. Is your sister Alice older than you? 24. No, madam, she is two years younger; she is quite a big girl (*elle est grande*) for her age (m.).

---

* By way of exception, the e mute is never elided before onze: therefore say, "the eleventh," *le onze.*

† The English word *on*, used before dates, is never rendered in French.

LESSON XXVI.

Rule 37. — Adjectives, and participles used as adjectives, are usually placed after their substantives in French.

Ex. — *Voulez-vous un roman amusant?* do you want an amusing novel?
C'est un enfant gâté, he is a spoiled child.
La religion chrétienne est puissante et très répandue*, the Christian religion is powerful and very widespread.

Rule 38. — Usually adjectives shorter than their substantives are placed *before* them, but those denoting *color, form,* and *nationality* come *after.*

Ex. — *Un fameux général*, a famous general; *de jeunes philosophes enseignent*, young philosophers teach.
Mon habit noir, my black coat; *l'armée prussienne*, the Prussian army.

Note. — When two or more adjectives qualify the same noun, they are generally placed after it; as, *Ces hommes gros et forts*, these great, strong men.

VOCABULARY.

Suède (f.), *Sweden.*
parc (m.), *park.*
mari (m.), *husband.*
douleur (f.), *suffering.*
chagrin (m.), *sorrow, grief.*
ouvrier (m.), *workman.*
monarque (m.), *monarch.*
sujet (m.), *subject.*
dentelle (f.), *lace.*
cadeau (m.), *present.*
protecteur (m.), *protector.*
polytechnique, *polytechnic.*
spéciale, *special.*
protestant, *Protestant.*
catholique romain, *Roman Catholic.*
monde (m.), *world.*
délicieux, *delicious, delightful.*
redoutable, *redoubtable.*
heureux, *happy.*
triste, *unhappy, sad.*
intéressant, *interesting.*
instruit, *well-educated.*
connaître, *to know.*
quelquefois, *sometimes.*
voici, *here is, here are* } pointing out
voilà, *there is, there are* } an object.

* The pupil will notice that an adjective never begins with a capital, even when derived from a proper noun.

EXERCISE 26.

(*a*) 1. Votre sœur aînée a-t-elle encore du chagrin? 2. Oui, elle ne peut pas oublier la triste mort de son mari si jeune et si bon. 3. Un cœur tendre est souvent plus malheureux qu'un cœur dur, mais il trouve des plaisirs délicieux que ce dernier ne peut jamais connaître. 4. Mon voisin Jean a donné à mon père de très jolies cannes, qui lui ont fait beaucoup de plaisir. 5. Les romans anglais que vous avez prêtés à ma cousine sont très intéressants. 6. Notre maître de français nous donne des devoirs difficiles. 7. Gustave-Adolphe, roi de Suède, un des monarques les plus célèbres de l'histoire, et un des plus puissants protecteurs de la religion protestante en Europe, est mort en mil six cent trente-deux. 8. La religion catholique est encore la plus répandue en Europe. 9. Napoléon Ier, à la tête de l'armée française, a attaqué et conquis la plus grande partie de l'Europe. 10. Quelle robe splendide! quelles dentelles magnifiques! ce sera un joli cadeau pour votre fille. 11. C'est un homme habile, instruit et aimable; désirez-vous le connaître? 12. Qui donc? 13. L'acteur Coquelin, de qui on a tant parlé pendant qu'il était en Amérique.

(*b*) 1. The greatest professors in France are those of the Sorbonne and of the Polytechnic School; they are intelligent and learned men who have made special studies in (*sur*) the subjects which they teach; they are known by their works in all Europe. 2. Please bring some better wine and some warm water, Mary, with two cups of black coffee. 3. This is very beautiful work; I have never seen more magnificent laces; they will be a very rich present for the fine lady for whom they have been made. 4. We have read some very interesting novels which our French friends brought with them from Paris a month ago. 5. Some very bad water has been drunk in New York this last year. 6. French wines are better than American

wines; they are perhaps the best of all (*tous*). 7. Look at that high house near the gates of the park; it is the house of a celebrated actress. 8. Henry IV. was one of the most celebrated monarchs of the world; he was a French Protestant king who became a Roman Catholic. 9. Whose are these pretty little books? 10. They are mine; I bought them the day before yesterday. 11. Paris is one of the greatest, richest, and most beautiful cities in the world. 12. Here is my seat; there is yours near the fireside. 13. What high chimneys these splendid houses have; are they not a little dangerous?

LESSON XXVII.

Rule 39. — Adjectives, to form their plural, follow the same rules as nouns. (See Rules 2, 13, 14, 15.)

Ex. — *Riche, riches,* rich; *royal, royaux,* royal; *beau, beaux,* beautiful. *Bleu* (blue), an exception, has *bleus* in the plural.

Adjectives, as we have seen, form their feminine by adding **e** (Rule 8); but those ending in **er, f, eux** change as follows: —

-er	into	**-ère,**	as,	*léger,*	*légère,*	light.
-f	"	**-ve,**	"	*vif,*	*vive,*	lively.
-eux	"	**-euse,**	"	*victorieux,*	*victorieuse,*	conquering.

Note. — There are other forms, but the student will acquire these as they occur. The following substantives with irregular plurals, and adjectives with irregular feminines, however, being very frequently used, should be *committed to memory:* —

Nouns with Irregular Plurals.			Adjectives with Irregular Feminines.		
bal,	ball,	*bals.*	*beau,*	fine, beautiful,	*belle.*
travail,	work,	*travaux.*	*fou,*	foolish, silly,	*folle.*
ciel,	heaven,	*cieux.*	*gros,*	big, stout,	*grosse.*
œil,	eye	*yeux.*	*pareil*	such,	*pareille.*
bijou,	jewel,	*bijoux.*	*nouveau,*	new,	*nouvelle.*
genou,	knee,	*genoux.*	*vieux,*	old,	*vieille.*

Notes. — (*a*) The words **beau, fou, nouveau,** and **vieux** have a second masculine form which is used before a vowel or **h** mute: **bel, fol, nouvel, vieil.** Ex.: *Un bel arbre*, a fine tree; *le nouvel an*, the new year; *le vieil homme*, the old man; *le fol enfant*, the foolish child.

(*b*) Frequently in English an assertion is repeated in the form of a question at the end of a sentence, as if seeking the assent of the person addressed. In such case the French use the idiomatic locution, "*N'est-ce pas?*" (is it not so?) at the end of the sentence. Ex.: *Tu as été bien souvent au nouvel opéra, n'est-ce pas?* you have often been at the new opera, have you not? *Vous étiez dans la chambre quand je suis venu, n'est-ce pas?* you were in the room when I came, were you not?

VOCABULARY.

Italie (f.), *Italy.*
charité (f.), *charity, alms.*
vertu (f.), *virtue.*
caractère (m.), *character, disposition.*
poids (m.), *weight.*
fortune (f.), *fortune.*
reproche (m.), *reproach.*
profit (m.), *benefit.*
banc (m.), *bench.*
ménage (m.), *housekeeping.*
place (f.), *place.*
observation (f.), *remark.*
généreux, *generous.*
amer, *bitter.*
charitable, *charitable.*
sérieux, *serious.*
paresseux, *idle.*
sans, *without.*
aveugle, *blind.*
sourd, *deaf.*
muet (-te), *dumb, silent.*
je deviens, *I become.*
faire, *to make.*
régné, *reigned.*
essayé, *tried.*
commencé, *commenced.*
tourné, *turned.*
réussi, *succeeded.*
à genoux, *kneeling.*
il y avait, *there was.*
aujourd'hui, *nowadays.*
autrefois, *formerly.*
puis, *then.*
assez bien, *quite well.*
vraiment, *truly, indeed.*
cependant, *still, nevertheless.*

EXERCISE 27.

(*a*) 1. Aujourd'hui les filles sont presque aussi actives que les garçons. 2. Mes sœurs sont revenues du bal à cinq heures du matin, et ont commencé les travaux du ménage après avoir * pris leur café au lait. 3. Elles sont plus vives et moins pares-

* The verb directly following a preposition must stand in the infinitive. The sole exception is in the case of **en**, which requires the present participle.

seuses que toi, alors, mais je crois que ce soir elles auront les yeux fatigués. 4. Ont-elles mis les bijoux que ton père leur a donnés pour leur fête (*birthday*)? 5. Ne sais-tu pas qu'elles les ont vendus au profit des pauvres? 6. Vraiment! elles sont très bonnes et très généreuses alors. 7. Non, elles ne sont que (*only*) charitables, et pour une femme la charité est le plus beau des bijoux, parce qu'elle est la plus belle des vertus. 8. Tu es heureux d'avoir des sœurs pareilles; elles sont meilleures et plus sérieuses que la mienne, qui est folle (*crazy*) des bals et des théâtres et peu charitable. 9. Que fait-elle de sa fortune alors? 10. Je ne sais pas; tout ce que je sais, c'est qu'elle n'est guère généreuse; l'autre jour nous avons rencontré un vieil homme et une vieille femme, l'un aveugle, l'autre sourde, qui n'avaient ni bu ni mangé depuis douze heures, et crois-tu que ma sœur ne leur a donné que deux sous. 11. À ta place, je lui aurais fait d'amers reproches. 12. J'ai bien essayé, mais je n'ai pas réussi. Elle m'a répondu que j'étais trop jeune pour lui faire des observations. 13. Elle a mauvais caractère, n'est-ce pas? 14. Comment se porte ta vieille grand'mère? 15. Assez bien pour son âge, mais elle est toujours un peu faible.

(*b*) 1. Have you been at church this morning, Louisa? 2. Yes, Mrs. Smith. 3. What kind of people did you see? 4. There was an old blind woman kneeling at the church door, who asked me for alms. "Why don't you work?" said I. She turned her (*la*) head towards me, and answered that she was too old and too blind to do common work (pl.). 5. Why did you not offer her (a) light work? 6. Why (*eh*), dear madam, you know well that we are not rich enough to have servants. 7. Good day, Mr. Smith; how are you? 8. Thank you, I am always well; too well even (*même*). I am becoming stouter every day. 9. What is your weight? 10. About 219

pounds. 11. Well (*eh*), that is a good weight for a man of your age; I am glad I am not (*de n'être*) as large as you. 12. Why are you so silent and sad, Mrs. Ricard? 13. Because I have lost the beautiful jewels which my husband bought for me in Paris, and I cannot go to the ball without them. 14. The hunter returned towards evening, very sad; he had (*avait*) seen nothing. 15. Yesterday morning I saw five or six birds on the green benches in our garden; they turned their little heads when I opened the window, and looked at me; they were so comical! 16. For New Year's my uncle has given me eight beautiful pictures which he bought in Italy; he has a generous heart, has he not? 17. Did you ever (*jamais*) see such a general?

Conjugation of être (to be).

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Imperfect, *while we were young* (quand nous étions jeunes).

Affirmative.

j'étais agile,	*I was (used to be) agile.*
tu étais lourd,	*thou wast heavy.*
il / elle / on } était { robuste,	*he was robust.*
il / elle / on } était { faible,	*she was weakly.*
il / elle / on } était { vigoureux,	*one was vigorous.*
nous étions gais,	*we were gay, merry.*
vous étiez mélancoliques,	*you were melancholy.*
ils / elles } étaient { sévères,	*they were strict.*
ils / elles } étaient { indulgentes,	*they were lenient.*

Negative.

je n'étais pas maigre,	*I was not (used not to be) thin.*
tu n'étais pas gras,	*thou wast not fat.*
il / elle / on } n'était pas { indolent,	*he was not sluggish.*
il / elle / on } n'était pas { bête,	*she was not stupid.*
il / elle / on } n'était pas { raisonnable,	*one was not reasonable.*
nous n'étions pas sages,	*we were not good.*
vous n'étiez pas respectueux,	*you were not respectful.*
ils / elles } n'étaient pas { malades,	*they were not ill.*
ils / elles } n'étaient pas { bien portantes,	*they were not healthy.*

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons XXV.-XXVII.)

VOCABULARY.

vérité (f.), *truth.*
boîte (f.), *box.*
proverbe (m.), *proverb.*
Adrien, *Adrian.*
Arthur, *Arthur.*
chacun, *each.*

ORAL EXERCISE (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

N'étiez-vous pas plus fort, monsieur le caporal, quand vous étiez plus jeune ?

Oh, oui, quand j'étais jeune, alors j'étais beaucoup plus fort et plus vigoureux que maintenant.

N'avez-vous pas été à la pêche récemment ?

Oui, mon enfant, j'ai pêché il y a une quinzaine.

N'avez-vous rien pris ?

J'ai pris trois poissons, qui étaient si gros que je n'ai pu les tirer de l'eau (*couldn't draw*).

Quoi ! des poissons aussi gros que cela ? Quels poissons étaient-ce ?

C'étaient des saumons qui pesaient (*weighed*) chacun plus de quatorze livres.

Oh, oh ! quelle histoire !

Ce n'est pas une histoire, monsieur, c'est la vérité que je vous dis.

Pourquoi ces vieux soldats tournent-ils (pres. indic.) toujours leurs grands yeux vers moi ?

C'est peut-être parce qu'ils n'ont jamais vu une demoiselle aussi belle que vous.

Ah, monsieur, j'ai entendu souvent de pareilles chansons ; elles sont trop vieilles. Est-ce que vous voulez-me faire un plaisir ?

Certainement, mademoiselle, que puis-je faire pour cela ?

Voulez-vous me dire ce qui est dans cette boîte que vous avez sur les genoux ?

Ce sont des bijoux que j'ai achetés en ville ce matin.

Quel jour est-ce aujourd'hui ?

C'est jeudi, le vingt-quatre août, mil huit cent quatre-vingt treize.

Que ces femmes sont tristes ! Est-ce qu'elles ont perdu quelque chose?

Elles ont perdu leur fortune, monsieur. Trois cent quarante-huit mille dollars !

Combien d'années Louis quatorze a-t-il régné ?

Il a régné soixante-douze années.

Préférez-vous les yeux noirs aux yeux bleus, Louise?	Madame, je préfère les yeux bleus, ils sont plus doux (*sweet*). Ne connaissez-vous pas le proverbe, "les yeux bleus vont aux cieux"?

Why is that woman idle?	Because she is too old and feeble for such work (pl.).
When you were young, were you as active and strong and bright as I?	That is a fine question! Certainly, I was as active, strong, and bright as you.
When did your grandmother die?	She died (is dead) on the 21st of April, 1883, aged 92 years.
How old are your sons, Mrs. Smith?	Adrian is twelve, and Arthur is nine.
Is your elder son brighter than his younger brother?	Yes; certainly, madam; he is the first in his French class, and is well advanced in his studies.
Was he not rather (*un peu*) sluggish formerly?	Yes; when he was eleven years old, he was much less diligent than now.
He is rather (*bien*) young to be so advanced in his studies.	Yes; and still he is more advanced than his little schoolmates.
Did not your sister sleep while you (f. pl.) were sitting (seated) at the fireside, Miss Trent?	Yes; poor child! she was very tired. She went to too many (*trop de*) balls and concerts while she was in town.
To-day is the Fourth of July, and this young woman is full of sadness. Why is she so unhappy?	Because her grandmother and her little sister died while she was in Florida.
Was she formerly sad and melancholy?	No, sir; she used to be the most merry, happy, and active girl in this village.
How do you do, madam?	Very well, thank you. And your mother, how is she?
Quite well, thank you. What time is it, please?	It is a quarter to three.
Is your watch keeping good time?	Yes; it is one of the best watches in the town.

LESSON XXVIII.

Rule 40. — Nouns and adverbs of quantity and measure require the preposition **de** before the noun they modify, which then takes *no article.*

Ex. — *Un litre de vin*, a quart of wine; *plus d'or*, more gold.

The only exception is **bien**, when employed for **beaucoup** (*much*), which requires the article as well as **de**.

Ex. — *Bien du malheur*, much misfortune; *bien des prières*, many prayers.

De is used after the following adverbs of quantity: —

assez	combien	plus	trop	tant
beaucoup	peu	moins	trop peu	autant

Ex. — *Je n'ai pas assez d'instruction*, I have not enough knowledge.
Nous avons reçu peu de monde,* we have received few people.

Rule 41. — *How long* is translated —

(*a*) By **depuis quand** with the *present tense*, if the action or state is still continuing.

Ex. — *Depuis quand sont-elles ici?* how long have they been here?

(*b*) By **combien de temps**, with the past indefinite (see pp. 46 and 60), if the action or state is past.

Ex. — *Combien de temps a-t-il été marin?* how long was he a sailor?

VOCABULARY.

douzaine (f.), *dozen.*
temps (m.), *time.*
bouteille (f.), *bottle.*
fromage (m.), cheese.
poire (f.), *pear.*
maladie (f.), *illness.*
tant pis, *so much the worse.*
avoir l'air, *to look, appear.*
arbre fruitier (m.), *fruit tree.*
propriétaire (m.), *landlord.*
verger (m.), *orchard.*
marché (m.), *market.*
voyage (m.), *voyage, journey.*
peu, *little.*
tant mieux, *so much the better.*
chasser, *to chase out, to hunt.*
demeuré, *lived.*
abondant, *plentiful.*
bonheur (m.), *happiness.*
impossible, *impossible.*
invité, *invited.*
nombreux, *numerous.*

* When *people* is used in the sense of *company*, it is expressed by **monde**, not by **on**.

EXERCISE 28.

(*a*) 1. Ces vergers sont pleins de fruits; leur propriétaire doit être riche avec tant de poires et de pommes qu'il peut vendre aux marchés de la ville. 2. As-tu acheté assez de billets de théâtre, Charles? 3. Oui, petite sœur, j'ai pris deux billets pour toi, et un pour ton amie Louise. 4. Son père est malade; elle m'a écrit qu'il lui est impossible d'accepter mon invitation. 5. Tant pis! Depuis quand est-il malade? 6. Depuis quinze jours. 7. Que dit le médecin? 8. Il pense que sa maladie n'est pas dangereuse. 9. Ah, tant mieux! Est-ce que sa mère est arrivée d'Europe? 10. Oui; elle dit qu'elle n'a jamais vu tant de rues étroites qu'à Londres. 11. Son enfant a été malade pendant le voyage. 12. Combien de temps madame votre mère a-t-elle demeuré à Paris? 13. Plus de seize ans, monsieur. 14. Depuis quand êtes-vous à la campagne, mesdames? 15. Nous sommes à la campagne depuis peu de temps. 16. Avez-vous beaucoup d'amis à présent chez vous? 17. Nous avons deux familles, et leurs enfants sont presque toujours sous les arbres fruitiers du verger. 18. Y a-t-il beaucoup de fruits cette année? 19. Oui; ils sont assez abondants, et nous avons tant d'arbres fruitiers qu'il nous a été impossible de les compter. 20. C'est bien du bonheur.

(*b*) 1. There are more bottles of wine on this table than on that. 2. Why do you put so many knives and forks on the table? 3. Because more people have been invited to dinner than yesterday. 4. How many bottles of water are there here? 5. There are a few bottles of water, but several bottles of wine. 6. How long has our landlord lived in this country? 7. He has lived here for twenty-one years. 8. These orchards are so full of fruit trees, that there are more apples and pears than in ours. 9. Those pupils have had enough time to learn

their lessons. 10. How long were (*sont restés*) your friends the hunters in the Black Forest? 11. They were hunting in the Black Forest for more than two months and a half. 12. They look ill. 13. They are tired from their long journey. 14. I am told that they pray (*prient*) every night for two hours; that is much praying (*prières*) for huntsmen! 15. Good morning, sir! How do you do? 16. It is a nice day, isn't it? 17. Yes; there is little moisture in the air today. 18. There are so many flies in my bedroom, that I did not sleep after half-past five this morning. 19. Why did you not chase them out? 20. I tried to, but I did not succeed.

LESSON XXIX.

En, *of it, of them; some, any.*
Y, *to it, to them; there.*

Rule 42.—When *some* or *any*, a number, or an adverb or noun of quantity or measure, is not followed by its noun, the latter is replaced by **en** for *de lui, d'elle, d'eux, d'elles* (of it, of them).

Ex.—*Combien de cerises as-tu mangées? Je ne sais pas, mais j'en ai mangé beaucoup, et tu en as mangé encore davantage.** How many cherries have you eaten? I do not know, but I have eaten many (of them), and you have eaten still more.*

Trouve-t-on des fleurs dans cet endroit? Oui, on en trouve, mais très peu. Are flowers found in this spot? Yes, they are found (one finds of them), but very few.

J'aime beaucoup les fraises; en avez-vous? I am very fond of strawberries; have you any (of them)?

Aimez-vous le lait? J'en bois souvent. Are you fond of milk? I often drink (of) it.

---

* When *more* is not followed by *than*,—that is, when the second term of comparison is understood,—it is translated by **davantage**.

Rule 43. — *There*, referring to *some place already mentioned*, whether expressed or understood, is rendered in French by **y**, which is also used for *à lui*, *à elle*, *à eux*, *à elles* (to it, to them).

Ex. — *Avez-vous été à Paris? Oui, j'y ai été.* Have you been in Paris? Yes, I have been there.

Ont-ils répondu à vos lettres? Non, ils n'y ont jamais répondu. Have they answered your letters? No, they never answered them.

Avez-vous été à l'église? Oui, nous y avons été. Did you go to church? We did.

Note. — The use of **en** and **y** in speaking of persons always implies a sort of *vagueness*. In mentioning persons in a *definite* manner, the forms **de lui**, **d'eux**, **à elle**, **à elles**, etc., must be used. Thus, *Combien de personnes avez-vous vues? J'en ai vu deux.* How many people did you see? I saw two. — *Connaissez-vous mon frère? Oui, mon père a parlé souvent de lui.* Do you know my brother? Yes, my father has often spoken of him.

Rule 44. — **En** and **y**, like the other conjunctive pronouns, come before the verb (see Rules 25–27), but are placed after the other pronouns. Should they occur together, **y** should precede **en**.

Ex. — *Mon maître les y a envoyés*, my master has sent them there.

Il n'y a pas de livres français dans cette bibliothèque, j'y en enverrai, there are no French books in this library, I shall send some to it.

VOCABULARY.

foi (f.), *faith.*
espoir (m.), *hope.*
faute (f.), *mistake, fault.*
nouvelles (f. pl.), *news.*
siège (m.), *seat.*
États-Unis (m. pl.), *United States.*
Angleterre (f.), *England.*
milliers (m.), *thousands.*
guerre (f.), *war.*
porte-monnaie (m.), *pocketbook.*
femme, dame (f.), *wife.*
su, *known.*
ajouté, *added.*
parfaitement, *perfectly, exactly.*
quitter, *to leave.*
sûr, *certain, sure.*
l'avenir (m.), *the future.*

EXERCISE 29.

(*a*) 1. Avez-vous des fraises? 2. Non, monsieur, je *n'en* ai pas. 3. Il y a beaucoup de fruits dans le verger de notre propriétaire: *en* as-tu mangé? 4. Nous sommes allés au théâtre hier soir; on *y* jouait "Les Précieuses ridicules" de Molière. 5. Votre dame* a-t-elle de l'argent sur elle? 6. Ma femme* a toujours de l'argent; son porte-monnaie *en* est plein. 7. *Y* a-t-il autant de moineaux dans la ville que dans la campagne? 8. Oh oui, nous *y en* avons vu encore davantage; ils nous sont venus d'Angleterre. 9. *Y en* a-t-il beaucoup en Europe? 10. Il *y en* a par milliers. 11. *En* êtes-vous sûr? 12. J'*en* suis parfaitement sûr. 13. On dit qu'il y a des fruits magnifiques dans le jardin de votre oncle. 14. *Y* as-tu été? 15. Oui, j'*y* ai été, et j'*y* ai mangé tant de fruits que j'*en* suis malade. 16. *En* as-tu apporté? 17. Non; ils ne sont pas assez mûrs.

(*b*) 1. What news have you received from the seat of war? 2. I have not received any yet. 3. Why do you not go there? 4. I am not a soldier, and I cannot leave my wife and children. 5. How many houses did you count in that street? 6. I counted (of them) ninety-eight (there). 7. Are there many mistakes in your son's exercise? 8. Yes; and he has added several. 9. Have you never entered (in) this beautiful church, Jane? 10. Oh, yes! I have often entered it (there). 11. Are you in the United States? 12. I am (there). 13. Have you been in the parlor? There are some ladies who want to see you. 14. I have, and have seen (there) the ladies of whom you speak. 15. Did they bring you any presents? 16. Indeed they did. 17. Are you going home? 18. I am (*j'y vais*). 19. Have you no faith in (*en*) the future? 20. Yes (*si*), I believe in it (*y*).

---

* In speaking of a man's wife, the French refer to her as "*dame*," while the husband alone calls her "*ma femme*." To servants and inferiors, however, the husband himself speaks of his wife as "*Madame*." The proper observance of this distinction between **dame** and **femme** is considered a mark of good breeding.

LESSON XXX.

aucun, *any, no, none.*	**tel**, *such.*
nul, *no, none.*	**tout**, *all, every.*

chaque, *each, every.*

All the above indefinite adjectives may become indefinite pronouns by being used without a substantive, save **chaque**, which is invariable. The latter, however, is often replaced by the word **tout** (*all*), which becomes **tous*** in the masculine plural.

Ex. — *Chaque* (or *tout*) *citoyen doit servir son pays*, every citizen must serve his country.
Tous les hommes sont mortels, all men are mortal.

Rule 45. — (*a*) **Tout** (adjective), followed by the article, is used to translate *the whole, a whole, all the.*

Ex. — *Toute une année*, a whole year.
Toute la ville, the whole town, *or* all the town.

(*b*) **Tout**, used with an adjective, participle, or adverb, is an adverb, and consequently invariable, and has the signification of *quite, entirely.*

Ex. — *Mes habits sont tout déchirés*, my clothes are all torn.
Votre sœur est tout alarmée, your sister is quite alarmed.

(*c*) But when **tout** precedes a feminine adjective or participle beginning with a consonant or **h** aspirate, it agrees with its noun for the sake of euphony.

Ex. — *Ces jeunes demoiselles sont toutes tremblantes*, these young ladies are all trembling.
Je suis toute honteuse, Pauline, I am quite ashamed, Pauline.

---

* **Tous**, as a pronoun, has the final **s** sounded; as, *Je les connais tous* (touss'), I know them all.

autrui, *others.*	**quelqu'un**, *somebody.*
chacun, *every one, each.*	**personne**, *no one.*

The above are indefinite *pronouns*, and may be used either as subject or object, as may the following: —

l'un l'autre **les uns les autres**	*one another,* or *the one and the other.*	**l'un ou l'autre** **les uns ou les autres**	*either,* or *one or the other.*
l'un et l'autre **les uns et les autres**	*both.*	**ni l'un ni l'autre** **ni les uns ni les autres**	*neither.*

VOCABULARY.

chemin (m.), *road.*	enterré, *buried.*
matelas (m.), *mattress.*	couché, *lain.*
affaires (f. pl.), *business.*	raconté, *related, told.*
cause (f.), *cause, reason.*	enlevé { *carried off,* *taken away.*
victime (f.), *victim.*	heureusement, *happily.*
médecine (f.), *medicine.*	tout le monde, *everybody.*
affection (f.), *affection.*	tous les jours, *every day.*
cimetière (m.), *cemetery.*	tous les deux, *both.*
malade (m. and f.), *patient.*	tout à fait, *wholly, quite.*
dose (f.), *dose.*	tout de même, *all the same.*
plaisanterie (f.), *joke, jest.*	comme d'habitude, *as usual.*
soigner { *to take care of,* *to attend.*	du moins, *at least.*

EXERCISE 30.

(*a*) 1. Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas parlé à mes deux frères? 2. Je n'ai vu ni l'un ni l'autre. 3. Tous les deux étaient ici il y a dix minutes. 4. Je ne les ai pas vus. 5. Est-ce que votre nièce a rencontré quelqu'un sur le chemin? 6. Non, monsieur, elle n'a vu personne pendant tout le voyage. 7. On ne doit pas faire de mal à autrui. 8. J'aurais fait beaucoup pour l'un et pour l'autre, si je les avais rencontrés. 9. Deux

bons amis sont-ils heureux l'un sans l'autre? 10. Peut-être, mais je ne le crois pas. 11. Mes frères et vos sœurs parlent toujours les uns des autres. 12. Quand on aime trop l'argent, on est bien malheureux. 13. Chacun de vos amis nous a raconté son histoire. 14. Quand les avez-vous vus? 15. Ce matin. 16. Leur avez-vous demandé s'ils avaient bien dormi? 17. Oui, mais leur lit n'avait pas de matelas, et ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont bien dormi la nuit dernière. 18. Avez-vous jamais couché dans un tel lit? 19. Heureusement, non; je n'en ai jamais vu de pareil. 20. Tant mieux pour vous. 21. Connaissez-vous le docteur Lafièvre? 22. Celui qui a soigné le fils de ma cousine Pauline? 23. Parfaitement, c'est le médecin de ma famille. 24. On dit qu'aucun de ses malades n'est en (*in*) vie; il leur donne trop de médecine, et l'on trouve ses malheureuses victimes dans tous les cimetières des environs.

(*b*) 1. No stranger is wholly happy in a great city, when he does not know anybody in it (there). 2. Somebody has come in; who is it? 3. I did not hear any one. 4. I know that not one of my pupils is so lazy as you; you have done nothing for a whole week. 5. You look unhappy. 6. Every person whom we met on the road to the (*du*) cemetery was sad. 7. When I think of the poor victims of that terrible misfortune (*accident*), I am full of sorrow for the fathers and mothers, brothers and sisters, of those who, one week ago, were full of life and joy, and who have been carried off forever from (*à*) the affection of their families. 8. Yes, madam, it is very sad. 9. My two little nieces are very dear to me; every evening I read a story to each of them. 10. As usual, Dr. Lafièvre has given too large a dose of medicine to each patient, and each one of them is now very ill; did you ever see such a doctor? 11. You are not serious, are you? 12. Yes, certainly, I am quite serious. 13. What a joke!

Conjugation of **avoir** (*to have*).

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

Imperfect, *when we were young* (quand nous étions jeunes).

Affirmative.

j'**avais** des joujoux,	*I had (used to have) toys.*
tu **avais** des poupées,	*thou hadst dolls.*
il / elle / on } **avait** envie (de),	*he, she, one, had a mind (to).*
nous **avions** une fruiterie,	*we had a fruit store.*
vous **aviez** des œufs,	*you had eggs.*
ils / elles } **avaient** un chien,	*they had a dog.*

Negative.

je n'**avais** pas de qualités,	*I had no good qualities.*
tu n'**avais** pas de parents,	*thou hadst no relatives, parents.*
il / elle / on } n'**avait** pas de force,	*he, she, one, had no strength.*
nous n'**avions** jamais d'humeur,	*we never had a bad temper.*
vous n'**aviez** pas de cave,	*you had no cellar.*
ils / elles } n'**avaient** pas de rubans,	*they had not any ribbons.*

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons XXVIII.-XXX.)

VOCABULARY.

quantité (f.), *quantity.*
quart (m.), *quarter.*
demi-heure (f.), *half-hour.*
ils écrivent, *they write.*
victime (f.), *victim.*
rétabli, *recovered.*
merveilleux, *marvelous, wonderful.*
sitôt, *so soon.*

Oral Exercise (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Y a-t-il des arbres fruitiers dans votre jardin ?	Oui, messieurs, il y en a une grande quantité.
Est-ce que vous avez vendu beaucoup de fruits cette année ?	Certainement, nous en avons vendu autant que l'année dernière.
Depuis quand demeurez-vous à la campagne ?	Depuis le mois d'avril dernier.
Alors comment avez-vous vendu des fruits chaque année, si vous ne demeurez à la campagne que depuis le mois d'avril dernier ?	Parce que quand nous étions en ville, nous avions une fruiterie.
Combien de temps ces personnes ont-elles demeuré à Paris ?	Elles y ont demeuré quatre années et demie.
Pourquoi y sont-elles restées si longtemps ?	Parce qu'elles y ont trouvé une quantité de choses merveilleuses.
À quelle heure ma mère est-elle partie ?	Elle est partie à huit heures un quart, mademoiselle.
Ah ! si seulement j'étais arrivée une demi-heure plus tôt !	Vous aurez peut-être le plaisir de la voir demain, mademoiselle.
Qu'est-ce que votre cuisinière a acheté ce matin au marché ?	Elle y a acheté un peu de viande, trois livres de pommes de terre et autant de fromage, une douzaine d'œufs, du pain, des légumes et un litre de vin.
Est-ce qu'on achète (pres. indic.) le pain et le vin au marché en France ?	Non, en France, comme en Amérique, on achète le pain chez le boulanger, et le vin chez le marchand de vin.
Qu'est-ce que vous avez fait la semaine dernière ?	Nous ? Oh, nous avions des jeux nouveaux chaque soir ; aucun de nous n'avait honte de jouer (*play*) comme des enfants, et je crois que nous avions raison.
Nous, quand nous étions jeunes, nous n'avions jamais de plaisir !	Pauvres enfants ! Vous étiez bien sérieux alors !
Ce n'est pas la raison ; c'est notre père qui était trop sévère.	

Why has Dr. Lafièvre left the town ?	Because his victims were so many (*il a fait tant de victimes*) that he was afraid.

Victims? How many were there?	Oh, I do not know; but there were several, who were buried in the village cemetery.
Has either of your two friends written to you?	Yes, madam; both have written to me quite recently. They write to me every week.
If I only had such friends! Have you many like them?	No; I have only a few, but they are very dear to me.
When did you see my father and mother, sir?	I have never met either of them, Miss Nelly.
But I was told you had seen them both.	Somebody has deceived you. Who told you that?
How long was your aunt ill, John?	She was ill for eighteen months, sir.
How long has she been here?	She has been here three months and a half.
Is she at home now?	Yes, sir; and she will be very glad to see you.
Are there any novels in the library of the town?	No, madam; there are none yet, I am sure, but I will send some (to it).
If you read so many books and newspapers, I am sure you will have the headache.	Oh, no! I shall not (have it); I never have (it).

LESSON XXXI.

ne . . . guère,	*hardly, scarcely.*	**ne . . . plus,**	*no more, no longer.*
ne . . . jamais,	*never.*	**ne . . . point,**	*not at all.*
ne . . . personne,	*nobody.*	**ne . . . rien,**	*nothing.*
ne . . . presque,	*scarcely.*	**ne . . . que,**	*only.*

Rule 46. — Adverbs of negation are employed exactly like **ne . . . pas,** the verb being usually placed between the two particles.

Ex. — *Je ne vois personne*, I do not see anybody, I see nobody.
Tu n'as rien vu, thou hast not seen anything (seen nothing).
Elle ne chante plus, she sings no longer.
Nous ne sommes point découragés, we are not at all discouraged (dejected).

Ex.—*Vous ne voulez guère parler*, you hardly want to speak.
Ils n'ont loué que moi, they have praised only me.
Elles n'auront qu'une petite fortune, they will have only a small fortune.

NOTE. — When **ne . . . jamais, ne . . . personne, ne . . . rien**, are used without a verb, the **ne** is dropped; as, *Qu'avez-vous dit? Rien.* What did you say? Nothing. — *Qui est venu? Personne.* Who has come? Nobody. — *Avez-vous été en Europe? Jamais.* Have you been in Europe? Never.

ADVERBS.			ADJECTIVES.		
Positive.	*Comparative.*	*Superlative.*	*Positive.*	*Comparative.*	*Superlative.*
bien, *well;*	**mieux**, *better;*	**le mieux**, *best.*	**bon**, *good;*	**meilleur**, *better;*	**le meilleur**, *best.*
mal, *ill, badly;*	**pis**, *worse;*	**le pis**, *worst.*	**mauvais**, *bad;*	**pire**, *worse;*	**le pire**, *worst.*
peu, *little;*	**moins**, *less;*	**le moins**, *least.*	**petit**, *little;*	**moindre**, *smaller;*	**le moindre**, *least, smallest.*

NOTES. — (*a*) These adjectives and adverbs must be carefully distinguished in use. It should be borne in mind that **bon, mauvais**, and **petit** are *variable*, whereas **bien, mal**, and **peu** are *invariable*. The former qualify *substantives;* the latter, *verbs*. Ex.: *Ma petite fille est très bonne*, my little girl is very good; *votre petit garçon est bien élevé*, your little boy is well brought up.

(*b*) In speaking of the health, the words *better* and *worse*, being adverbs, must be so translated. Ex.: *Comment madame votre mère se porte-t-elle, Louis?* how is your mother, Louis? — *Merci, elle se porte* (*elle est*) *mieux* [*elle est pis*], thank you, she is better [she is worse].

Rule 47. — The reply to a negative question in French must be **si**, instead of **oui** (*yes*).

Ex. — *N'a-t-on pas bien souvent tort de nommer de mauvais représentants? Si, monsieur; on a souvent tort.* Is one not often wrong in electing (to elect) bad representatives? Yes, sir; one is often wrong.

Ce palais n'est-il pas splendide? Si, mesdames; il l'est vraiment.* Is not this palace splendid? Yes, ladies; it is indeed.

---

* In answer to a question referring to persons or things, where the English say simply, "I am," "we are," etc., the French introduce the pronoun **le** to represent what is spoken of.

Ex. — *N'êtes-vous pas brave comme un lion, Jacques? Si, mademoiselle; je le suis comme deux.* Are you not as brave as a lion, Jim? Yes, miss; I am as brave as two of them.

However, when **n'est-ce pas** occurs in the sentence, **oui** is used in the answer, because the sentence then becomes affirmative.

Ex. — *Il fait chaud, n'est-ce pas?* or, *N'est-ce pas qu'il fait chaud? Oui; il fait une chaleur tropicale.* It is warm, is it not? *or*, Is it not warm? Yes; the heat is tropical.

VOCABULARY.

voix (f.), *voice.*
politique (f.), *politics.*
souci (m.), *care.*
robe (f.) (d'un cheval), *coat.*
rend, *makes, renders.*
vont, (*they*) *go.*
avoir bonne mine, *to look well.*
être bien portant, *to be well.*
de mieux en mieux { *better and better.*

de mal en pis, *from bad to worse.*

EXERCISE 31.

(*a*) 1. Quoi! vous *n'*avez *point* travaillé? 2. Mais je *n'*ai *guère* eu le temps; il *n'*y a *que* cinq minutes que ma cousine est partie. 3. "Jean, tu *n'*es *plus* si heureux qu'autrefois; tu as mauvaise mine, es-tu malade?" 4. "Non, Louis, je *ne* suis *jamais* malade." 5. "Pourquoi es-tu si triste, si découragé? Je veux en savoir la cause." 6. "Eh bien, Louis, j'ai perdu mon enfant!" 7. "Pas (*is it*) possible! Quel âge avait-il?" 8. "Dix mois; il est né le vingt-sept novembre de l'année dernière; tu sais que ma femme est morte récemment, et après elle *rien* au monde *ne* m'était si cher que cet enfant; n'ai-je pas alors bien des raisons d'être malheureux?" 9. "Certainement tu en as; le *moindre* de tes maux est *pire* que le plus grand des miens." 10. "Tu en as donc aussi?" 11. "Qui n'en a pas?" 12. Combien d'enfants as-tu? 13. Je

*n'*en ai *qu'*une demi-*douzaine, mais ils sont tous très gentils. 14. Qui a écrit ces lettres? elles sont très *mal* écrites. 15. C'est ma sœur Émilie; je crois qu'elle écrit *plus mal* (*pis*) qu'aucune de mes amies. 16. Tant *pis* pour elle! 17. Il *n'*y a *guère* de monde au marché ce matin, du *moins* je *n'*en ai *jamais* vu si *peu*. 18. Vous *ne* parlez *guère* politique. 19. Oh, j'y pense *peu;* c'est *le moindre* de mes soucis. N'ai-je pas raison? 20. *Si*, mais je crois, cependant, que quand la politique est *bonne*, les affaires vont de *mieux* en *mieux*, et quand elle est *mauvaise*, les affaires vont de *mal* en *pis*.

(*b*) 1. Did you *ever* meet anybody as *small* as that gentleman? 2. Yes, madam; I once met a lady still *smaller* than he, but [it was] *only* once. 3. I am a *little* ill this morning. 4. Indeed, you do not look well, but you will be *better* in a few hours; it is *only* a *little* headache. 5. No; I think it is more serious. 6. Are you ill, Miss Renfort? You do not look well. 7. No, sir. 8. Shall you not have the pleasure of seeing our new actress? 9. Yes, sir, to-morrow. 10. Why have you done *nothing*, Charles? 11. I have done much, sir; *nobody* has worked more than I. 12. Is this too much meat for you, Emile? 13. Yes, father; please give me a *little less*. 14. This dog is much *smaller* than ours; in fact,† he is the *smallest* of all those I have seen. 15. Which do you think is *the least* of all evils? 16. Really, I do not know which is *the least* nor which is *the worst*. 17. At *least*, you do not wish to say. 18. How is your *little* brother, Louisa, — *worse*, or *better?* 19. Thank you, miss, he is much *better* to-day; he will be quite *well* in a week. He looks *well* now. 20. Good (*ah*); I am glad of it. 21. Have you bought Mr. Picot's horse? 22. It has a beautiful coat.

---

* Demi (*half*) used before a substantive is connected with a hyphen, and is invariable. Used alone, it agrees with its noun, understood. † Translate *au fait*.

Conjugations of **avoir** *(to have) and* **être** *(to be).*

(*To be* COMMITTED TO MEMORY.)

CONDITIONAL.

Avoir.

(S'il * faisait froid, *if it were cold.*)

j'aurais la phtisie, *I should have consumption.*

tu aurais une pleurésie, *thou wouldst have pleurisy.*

il / elle / on } **aurait** une péritonite { *he* / *she* / *one* } *would have peritonitis.*

nous **aurions** des engelures, *we should have chilblains.*

vous **auriez** des gerçures, *you would have chapped hands.*

ils / elles } **auraient** { la grippe, *they would have influenza.* / un rhume, *they would have a cold.*

Être.

(Avec ou sans éducation, *with or without education.*)

je **serais** jaloux, *I should be jealous.*

tu **serais** ignorant, *thou wouldst be ignorant.*

il / elle / on } **serait** ponctuel { *he* / *she* / *one* } *would be punctual.*

nous **serions** étourdis, *we should be giddy.*

vous **seriez** entêtés, *you would be obstinate.*

ils / elles } **seraient** { modestes, *they would be modest.* / orgueilleuses, *they would be proud.*

* The letter i of si is elided only before a word beginning with i.

Conjugations of ***avoir*** *and* ***être.*** — *Continued.*

INTERROGATIVE.

auriez-vous accepté des fleurs si l'on vous en avait offert?

would you have accepted flowers if they had been offered you?

seraient-ils plus aimables s'ils étaient moins occupés?

would they be more amiable if they were less busy?

NEGATIVE.

ils n'**auraient** pas de dyspepsie s'ils soignaient mieux leur santé,

they would not have dyspepsia if they attended better to their health.

elle ne **serait** pas si gentille avec nous, si nous ne l'avions pas aidée,

she would not be so gentle with us, if we had not helped her.

INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

n'aurait-on pas refusé la grippe s'il avait été possible?

would one not have refused the grippe if it had been possible?

n'aurais-tu pas dit des mensonges pour excuse?

would you not have told lies as an excuse?

ne **seriez**-vous pas plus exactes, mesdemoiselles, si vous aviez de l'éducation?

would you not be more exact, young ladies, if you had education?

ne **serait**-il pas plus sobre s'il était malade?

would he not be more temperate if he were ill?

LESSON XXXII.

Rule 48. — *To, at, in,* are translated, —

(*a*) By **à** before names of cities.

Ex. — *Ils vont à Paris, à Londres, à Bruxelles,* they are going to Paris, to London, to Brussels.

Votre frère est-il à Washington? is your brother at Washington?

(*b*) By { **en** for the feminine, **au** " masculine, **aux** " plural, }

before names of countries or divisions of countries, when used with the verbs **être, aller, venir,** etc.

Ex. — *Je vais en Californie, en France, en Chine,* I am going to California, to France, to China.

Il est au Texas, he is in Texas.

Ils sont aux États-Unis, they are in the United States.

(*c*) By **dans** with the article, before the name of the country coupled with an adjective or any attribute.

Ex. — *Mes cousins vont dans l'Amérique du Sud,* my cousins are going to South America.

Moi, je vais dans la Nouvelle-Zélande, as for me, I am going to New Zealand.

Rule 49. — *From* is rendered, —

(*a*) By **de** before names of cities and feminine names of continents, countries, and provinces.

Ex. — *Nous sommes partis de France (de Lyon, de Lorraine, ou d'Europe) pour le Canada,* we set out from France (from Lyons, from Lorraine, or from Europe) for Canada.

(*b*) By **de** with the article before masculine names of countries or parts of countries, or names of countries accompanied by an adjective.

Ex. — *Notre oncle est arrivé du Maine (du Texas, de la belle Italie, de l'Alaska,* etc.), our uncle has arrived from Maine (from Texas, beautiful Italy, Alaska, etc.).

VOCABULARY.

le Chili, *Chile.*
le Pérou, *Peru.*
le Japon, *Japan.*
le Texas, *Texas.*
la Chine, *China.*
la Californie, *California.*
Bruxelles, *Brussels.*
offre (f.), *offer.*
doute (m.), *doubt.*
exposition (f.), *exhibition.*
cantatrice (f.), *singer.*
climat (m.), *climate.*
ours (m.), *bear.*
proposition (f.), *proposal.*
nature (f.), *nature.*
différent, *different.*
blanc, blanche, *white.*
rare, *scarce, rare.*
précieux, *precious.*
tué, *killed.*
sauvé, *saved.*
probablement, *probably, very likely.*
oranger (m.), *orange tree.*
tout à l'heure { *just now, by and by.*
simplement, *simply.*

EXERCISE 32.

(*a*) 1. Si tu étais plus studieux, ta mère serait plus heureuse. 2. Si le général était arrivé un peu plus tard, il n'aurait pas trouvé l'armée ennemie. 3. Je n'aurais jamais fait ces devoirs difficiles, si mon maître ne m'avait pas aidé. 4. Si vous aviez autant de richesses que le jeune M. Vanderbilt, vous ne seriez ni si studieux ni si modeste que lui. 5. Qui, George W. Vanderbilt? Le connaissez-vous, monsieur? 6. Non, je ne l'ai jamais vu, mais tout le monde sait qu'il est instruit, studieux et charitable, trois qualités aussi rares que précieuses. 7. Seriez-vous aussi gaie que votre cousine Lucie, si vous étiez aussi riche qu'elle, mademoiselle? 8. Non, monsieur, je suis sûre que je ne serais ni si gaie ni si bien portante. 9. Ces chasseurs n'auraient-ils pas été tués par les ours si on ne les avait pas sauvés? 10. Si, les ours les auraient sans doute tués. 11. Les dents de ce jeune homme ne seraient-elles pas plus blanches s'il n'avait pas tant fumé? 12. Si, monsieur, et sa santé serait meilleure. 13. Les yeux de ma tante Jeanne ne seraient pas si faibles maintenant, si elle n'avait pas lu des romans presque tous les soirs pendant les dix dernières années.

(*b*) 1. Would you be more punctual if you had been a soldier? 2. Very likely, madam. 3. If the gentleman whom you met just now had been better bred, would he not have bowed to you? 4. Yes, madam. 5. People are not so polite nowadays as formerly. 6. They have not the time for it; they are too busy. 7. That is a very poor excuse. 8. If parents would attend better to the education of their children, they would be better bred. 9. Would not those two girls whom you used to have in your French class be more amiable if they were less rich? 10. On the contrary, they would probably be less amiable and more jealous than ever. 11. If that celebrated singer had offered to give you lessons, would you not have accepted her proposal? 12. I would not have refused such an offer, if it had been made to me. 13. Is your husband in Japan, Mrs. Smith? 14. No, madam; he is at Pekin, in China, and my eldest son is in Chile. 15. When did you come to the United States? 16. I came (there) in 1876, the year of the first exhibition. 17. If we had more damp, would you not have the grippe, neighbor? 18. Very likely; and that is why so many people go to Florida in winter. 19. Has it a fine climate? 20. It is a marvelous country, full of flowers and orange trees; its climate is simply delightful, and nature is always charming there. 21. Yes; but people say Florida produces more lies than oranges. 22. Oh, oh, sir!

LESSON XXXIII.

Pres. Indic.:	**il y a**		*there is*	
Impf.:	**il y avait**		*there was (used to be)*	
Past Indef.:	**il y a eu**	***un Dieu,***	*there was (has been)*	*a God.*
Fut.:	**il y aura**		*there will be*	
Cond.:	**il y aurait**		*there would be*	

Interrogative.	*Negative.*	*Interrogative-Negative.*
y a-t-il? *is / are there?*	**il n'y a pas,** *there is / are not.*	**n'y a-t-il pas?** *is / are there not?*
y avait-il?	**il n'y avait pas,**	**n'y avait-il pas?**
y a-t-il eu?	**il n'y a pas eu,**	**n'y a-t-il pas eu?**
y aura-t-il?	**il n'y aura pas,**	**n'y aura-t-il pas?**
y aurait-il?	**il n'y aurait pas,**	**n'y aurait-il pas?**

NOTE. — The distinction between **il y a** and **voilà** must be strictly observed. **Voilà** (*there is, there are*) is used only in the sense of *pointing out* an object, and is mostly used in contrast with **voici** (*here is, here are*).

Avoir forms with **que** the following idioms: —

qu'as tu?*	what is the matter with you?	**qu'avez-vous?**	what is the matter with you?
qu'a-t-il?	what is the matter with him?	**qu'ont-ils?** / **qu'ont-elles?**	what is the matter with them?
qu'a-t-elle?	what is the matter with her?	**qu'y a-t-il?**	what is the matter?

VOCABULARY.

vache (f.), *cow.*
champs (m.), *field.*
prairie (f.), *meadow.*
moment (m.), *instant, moment.*
parceque, *for, because.*
après-midi (f.), *afternoon.*
poète (m.), *poet.*
soie (f.), *silk.*
face (f.), *face, front.*
musique (f.), *music.*
bonheur (m.), *happiness.*
progrès (m.), *progress.*
habitant (m.), *inhabitant.*
chemin de fer (m.), *railway.*
bien (m.), *good, welfare.*
endroit (m.), *place.*

Lyon, *Lyons.*
Pierre, *Peter.*
frais, fraîche, *fresh, new.*
pénible, *laborious, toilsome.*
myope, *near-sighted.*
public, publique, *public.*
expérimenté, *experienced.*
énergique, *energetic.*
précédent, *preceding.*
danser, *to dance.*
distinguer, *to distinguish.*
opposé, *opposed.*
même, *even, very, same.*
dès que, / aussitôt que, *as soon as.*
du tout, *not at all.*
contre, *against.*

* The forms **qu'est-ce que tu as?** etc., can also be used.

EXERCISE 33.

(*a*) 1. *Y a-t-il* encore des vaches dans la prairie? 2. *Il y en avait* cette après-midi, mais je ne sais pas s'*il y en a* maintenant. 3. Quand je suis entré au salon *il y a* un moment, *il n'y avait* personne, mais, depuis, deux personnes y sont entrées. 4. Depuis Longfellow *il n'y a pas eu* aux États-Unis de poète plus puissant que lui pour le bien public. 5. Dès que* les marchands de la ville voisine seront arrivés de Lyon, *il y aura* assez de soies et de rubans pour toutes les jeunes filles de l'endroit. 6. S'il fait beau temps demain, *il y aura* une fête magnifique. 7. *Qu'a* le jardinier du château? 8. Je crois qu'il est malade. 9. Êtes-vous fou, Pierre? 10. Moi? Pas le moins du monde.† 11. Qu'*y a-t-il*, monsieur le professeur? 12. *Il y a* que vous avez tourné toutes les cartes géographiques la face contre (*to*) le mur. 13. Oh! pardon; je suis si myope que je distingue à peine les choses. 14. *N'y a-t-il pas eu* hier un nouvel accident de chemin de fer? 15. Si, monsieur, *il y a eu* environ treize victimes. 16. *Y aurait-il* plus de monde aux églises si les hommes étaient meilleurs? 17. Sans doute *il y en aurait* davantage, parce qu'alors tout le monde aimerait la religion. 18. *Qu'avez-vous*, Pierre? Vous avez l'air de mauvaise humeur. 19. Pas du tout, monsieur, je suis au contraire de très bonne humeur. Je ne suis qu'un peu fatigué. 20. Avez-vous beaucoup de travail? 21. Assez, et vous savez que les travaux des champs sont très pénibles.

(*b*) 1. What is the matter with you, Pauline? As soon as I speak to you, you are in (*de*) a bad temper! 2. Pardon me, dear aunt. Will there not be somebody at dinner to-night? 3. Certainly; there will be the Misses De Latour and their

---

* **Dès que, aussitôt que,** and **quand** always require the following verb in the future, if the action is still to take place, and *not* the *present tense*, as in English. Ex.: ***Appelez-moi aussitôt qu'il arrivera,*** call me as soon as (when) he ***arrives***. † Not the least in the world.

mother. 4. Hast thou bought some music? 5. Yes; for I know that for some people there is little happiness without music; for others, there is too much music for happiness. 6. Were there any bottles of wine in the cellar, John, when I left for the country? 7. Yes, sir; there were a dozen and a half. 8. Then why are there none now? 9. Your younger son [came and] took them all, almost as soon as you had gone, sir! 10. Was there no new bread nor any fresh water in the kitchen this morning? 11. No, sir; but there is [plenty] now. 12. There would be many more railways in China, if the inhabitants were not so opposed to progress. 13. Have they any public schools in China, father? 14. Certainly, they have more than we; they are very learned.

RECAPITULATION.

(Lessons XXXI.-XXXIII.)

VOCABULARY.

ordre (m.), *order.*	danse (f.), *dance.*
succès (m.), *success.*	pitié (f.), *pity.*
rose (f.), *rose.*	laisser, *to let (go), leave.*
magasin (m.), *store, shop.*	ainsi, *thus.*

comment se fait-il? *how does it happen?*

ORAL EXERCISE (to be read and translated aloud in the classroom).

Bonjour, M. Picard, comment vous portez-vous?	Très bien, M. Robert; et vous?
Parfaitement, merci. Je désire une montre.	
Combien voulez-vous de celle-ci?	Deux cent cinquante-huit francs, monsieur.
Autant que cela?	C'est une des meilleures montres du magasin.
Elle est un peu chère.	Je ne peux pas la laisser à moins, monsieur.

Est-ce que les affaires ne vont pas bien ?	Si, monsieur ; elles vont de mieux en mieux.
Alors pourquoi ne voulez-vous pas la laisser à moins ?	Je n'ai qu'un prix, monsieur.
Comment vont les affaires de vos neveux ?	Elles vont de mal en pis.
Est-ce qu'ils sont hommes d'affaires ?	Je crois que oui, monsieur ; mais les affaires ne sont pas bonnes. Elles sont plus mauvaises que les années précédentes.
Ont-ils perdu beaucoup d'argent ?	Oui, monsieur ; peu à (*by*) peu ils ont perdu toute leur petite fortune.
Ne sont-ils pas un peu découragés ?	Pas trop ; ils sont trop énergiques pour cela.
Tiens ! (*well ! why !*) madame Musard ; comment vous portez-vous, chère madame ?	Mais pas très bien depuis deux ou trois semaines.
Ah ! tant pis. Qu'est-ce que vous avez ?	Un peu de dyspepsie, je crois.
Vous savez que c'est la maladie nationale, et que tout bon Américain est plus ou moins dyspeptique. Et mesdemoiselles vos nièces, comment vont-elles ?	Elles vont assez bien, merci.
J'ai appris que votre sœur Émilie a été malade. Qu'a-t-elle eu ?	Je crois qu'elle avait la grippe, mais elle est mieux maintenant. Elle n'a plus de fièvre.
Avez-vous été à la chasse cet automne ?	Oui, nous sommes allés dans les Montagnes-Rocheuses (*Rocky*) où nous avons tué des ours.
Pensez-vous que vous en auriez tué si vous étiez restés en Pensylvanie ?	Certainement, s'il y en a, nous en aurions tué.
Peut-être que le contraire serait arrivé ?	Vous voulez dire que les ours nous auraient tués ? Nous sommes des chasseurs trop expérimentés pour cela.
Pensez-vous que cette cantatrice serait plus aimable, si elle avait un peu moins de succès ?	C'est bien possible. Trop de succès l'a rendue un peu orgueilleuse.
Qu'avez-vous, mon cher Pierre ?	Moi ? Rien du tout.

Pourquoi alors avez-vous l'air de si mauvaise humeur?	Je suis un peu mécontent, parce qu'il n'y aura pas de fête ce soir, comme on l'avait dit.

Peter, were there not some roses in the garden two days ago?	Yes, sir; there were a few.
How does it happen, then, that there are no longer any now?	I do not know, sir. There were still some yesterday morning.
But yesterday morning is not to-day! Where are my roses?	Your nephew took them to give them to his friends.
My nephew? But what is the matter with him? Is he mad, to steal (*de voler*) my flowers thus? Where is he?	He left for the country this very morning. I believe that the friends to whom he took (*a porté*) them live (*demeurent*) there.
There will be a dance for him as soon as he comes back (will have come back)!	What dance do you mean, sir?
Oh, a dance without music!	Oh, sir, I beg of you; he is young and a little giddy, but he is so kind!
Let me alone (*laissez-moi tranquille*). I shall have no pity on (*pour*) him.	One is not perfect at his age, sir.
No, certainly not; but he ought to be honest enough not to (*pour*) steal. He is worse than his brother.	Be (*soyez*) lenient towards him, sir; that is all that I ask of you.
Is it not time for (*de*) breakfast, James?	Yes, sir; the table is laid.
There is fish this morning, is there not?	Yes, sir; there is some very fine trout which madam bought in the market this morning.
There is scarcely (*à peine*) any air here; why have you not opened the windows? Go [and] see (*voir*) if madam has got back.	Madam has gone into the kitchen to give orders for (the) breakfast.
Is there no more white wine in the cellar?	There is hardly any more, sir; five or six bottles, that is all.
Ah, my nephew has paid (made) them a visit without doubt!	Probably, sir.

SECTION III.

CONJUGATION OF REGULAR VERBS.

INTRODUCTORY LESSON.

Rule 50. — French verbs are classed under *four* conjugations, according to the termination of the infinitive.

The	1st	conjugation	ends	in	**er**
"	2d	"	"	"	**ir**
"	3d	"	"	"	(ev)**oir**
"	4th	"	"	"	**re**

Rule 51. — Neither the verb *to do* as an auxiliary, nor the *present participle* with the verb *to be*, is ever used in conjugating a French verb. Thus, —

Instead of:	*Say:*	*Translate:*
I **do** sing I **am** singing	I sing	***je* chante**
she **did** sing she **was** singing	she sang	***elle* chantait**
do you sing? **are** you sing**ing?**	sing you?	**chantez-*vous?***
they will **be** sing**ing**	they will sing	***ils* chanteront**
would they have **been** sing**ing?** etc.	would they have sung? etc.	**auraient-*elles* chanté?** etc.

Rule 52. — The English past tense is expressed in *four* different ways: *I sang, I did sing, I was singing, I used to sing.* If it is, or *can be*, expressed in either of the last two forms, it is translated by the *imperfect* (je **chantais**); otherwise by the *past indefinite* or *perfect* (j'**ai chanté**).

Generally speaking, the French make no difference between *I sang* and *I have sung*, but the latter form is far more used.

Neither the future nor the conditional can be used after **si**, unless the clause expresses doubt. (See Course II.)

Ex.—*Je vous donnerai une montre, si vous êtes attentif*, I shall give you a watch, if you are attentive.

Si vous n'étiez pas si craintif, vous attaqueriez ce grand garçon-là, if you were not so timid, you would attack that big boy.

LESSON XXXIV.

1. First Conjugation.—*ER*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

This is the verb in its simple form, vague and undefined.

*Present: chant***er**, *to sing.*

PARTICIPLES.

*Present: chant***ant**, *singing.* *Past: chant***é**, *sung.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

The tenses of this mood express the state or action in a positive manner.

Present, *at present* (à présent).

This tense expresses the state or action as existing or taking place either habitually or at the moment of speaking.

Affirmative.

je *chant***e** une chanson,	*I sing a song.*
tu *chant***es** une romance,	*thou singest a love song.*
il / elle / on } *chant***e** un hymne,	*he, she, one, sings a hymn.*
nous *chant***ons** juste,	*we sing in tune.*
vous *chant***ez** faux,	*you sing out of tune.*
ils / elles } *chant***ent** admirablement,	*they sing admirably.*

Interrogative.

chanté-je* bien ?	*do I sing well ?*
chantes-tu mal ?	*dost thou sing badly ?*
chante-t- { il / elle / on } en mesure ?	*does he, she, one, sing in time ?*
chantons-nous des louanges ?	*do we sing praises ?*
chantez-vous en chœur ?	*do you sing in chorus ?*
chantent- { ils / elles } à l'église ?	*do they sing in church ?*

Negatively.	*Interrogatively and Negatively.*
je ne ***chante*** pas admirablement.	est-ce que je ne ***chante*** pas bien ?
tu ne ***chantes*** pas de romance.	ne ***chantes***-tu pas mal ?
il / elle / on } ne ***chante*** pas d'hymne.	ne ***chante***-t- { il / elle / on } pas en mesure ?
nous ne ***chantons*** pas juste.	ne ***chantons***-nous pas parfaitement ?
vous ne ***chantez*** pas faux.	ne ***chantez***-vous pas en chœur ?
ils / elles } ne ***chantent*** pas de chanson.	ne ***chantent***- { ils / elles } pas à l'église ?

NOTE. — The teacher is recommended to make the pupils conjugate a verb here and there in the various vocabularies in the same tense as the model verb, with a suitable object. The different tenses at the head of the lessons, as heretofore, should be *committed to memory*.

VOCABULARY.

aimer, *to like, to love.*	rester, *to stay, to remain.*
donner, *to give.*	quitter, *to quit, to leave.*†
refuser, *to refuse.*	penser (à), *to think (of).*
demander (à), *to ask for.*	travailler, *to work.*
porter, *to carry, to wear.*	étudier, *to study.*
prêter, *to lend.*	prier, *to pray.*
emprunter, *to borrow.*	opposer, *to oppose.*

il faut, *it is necessary, one must.*

* This form is scarcely ever employed, as it is liable to be mistaken for the imperfect in speaking. The French use in preference the expression, "Est-ce que je chante ?"

† Quitter (*to leave*) is distinguished from partir, with the same meaning, by requiring a *direct* object. Remember that partir is intransitive, and means *to set out* (*from*).

imposteur (m.), *impostor, fraud.*
caoutchoucs* (m. pl.) { *rubber overshoes.*
mendiant (m.), *beggar.*
maître de chapelle (m.) { *choir master.*
sécurité (f.), *security.*
courage (m.), *courage.*
curé (m.), *priest, clergyman.*
à l'ordinaire / habituellement } *usually.*
jusqu'à, *until, till.*
au lieu de, *instead of.*
absolument, *absolutely.*

EXERCISE 34.

(*a*) 1. Ta cousine aime-t-elle à chanter? 2. Oui, elle chante tous les dimanches à l'église. 3. Pourquoi la sœur du curé refuse-t-elle d'y chanter? 4. Parce que le maître de chapelle ne la laisse pas faire ce† qu'elle veut. 5. Pourquoi ne donnes-tu pas ces morceaux de musique à madame Nicolas? 6. Je ne les lui donne pas parce qu'elle ne chante pas. 7. Qui est-ce qui chante maintenant? 8. C'est madame Montiyo et son mari. 9. Demande-leur de te prêter cette romance. 10. Mademoiselle Marie, chantez-nous quelque chose, je vous prie. 11. Oh, monsieur, je chante trop faux, et pour cette raison je refuse absolument. 12. À quoi pensez-vous? 13. Je pense à mon ami Louis, qui a refusé de me montrer son nouveau cheval, quand je lui ai demandé de le voir. 14. Nous travaillons et nous étudions presque toute la journée, parce que nous aimons‡ à le faire. 15. Chaque jour ces élèves négligents laissent leurs livres d'école sur les bancs, au lieu de les porter chez eux. 16. Nous n'empruntons jamais les livres ou les cahiers de nos camarades, mais quelquefois nous leur prêtons les nôtres. 17. Est-ce que vous laissez vos caoutchoucs chez vous à l'ordinaire? 18. Je les y laisse habituellement. 19. Pourquoi cette jeune fille porte-t-elle ces belles fleurs? 20. Elle les porte parce qu'elle aime tout ce qui est beau.

---

* Though this word has not yet been adopted by the French Academy, it is almost universally used to designate rubber overshoes. † **Ce**, pronoun, is always masculine in French.
‡ When followed by an infinitive, **aimer** takes the preposition **à**.

21. Ne travailles-tu pas quelquefois pendant la nuit? 22. Si, madame, hier j'ai étudié pendant une partie de la nuit. 23. Si un mendiant refuse de manger ce qu'on lui donne, il faut lui montrer la porte, c'est un imposteur.

(*b*) 1. If you refuse this medicine, Peter, you shall not have the present I showed you. 2. Do you carry all these books to school every morning, professor? 3. Yes, certainly [I do]. 4. You will be ill if you work [any] more to-night. 5. Oh, no! I study every night till 11 o'clock. 6. Yes; but you will have a fever if you do not leave your books earlier (*plus tôt*) in future. 7. Have you thought of your mother often since you have been here? 8. Yes, indeed; I think of her every day. 9. Why does not this actor sing better? he is not singing as well as usual this evening. 10. I think that Miss X. and he sing admirably. 11. My sister and I think that you are too indulgent to these children; why do you not let them stay in the other room? 12. He (*celui*) who is always borrowing will never be happy, while he who never lends will be often unhappy too. 13. If Captain George asks you to show him your new silk dress, do you think that you will have the courage to refuse? 14. I do not show my presents to everybody. 15. Our school-fellows always lend us their books or slates when we have lost ours, but we do not borrow them (from them) often. 16. At what time do you think people study and work best? 17. I think we work best in the quiet hours of the night and morning. 18. Do you never pray? 19. Yes; I pray every night. 20. How much do you ask for your horse? 21. Nobody can have it for less than 1800 francs; it is the most beautiful horse in the village. 22. How old is it? 23. About five years old; it is still a young horse. 24. Don't you think it has a beautiful coat? 25. I do; but it is the price I do not fancy (like).

LESSON XXXV.

Imperfect, ***when she came in*** **(quand elle est entrée),** ***when we were in Europe*** **(quand nous étions en Europe).**

This tense denotes (1) ***a past state or action going on when another action took place;*** (2) ***a state or action as having been habitual.***

je ***chant*****ais** une chanson à reprises,	*I sang (used to sing) a glee.*
tu ***chant*****ais** avec enthousiasme,	*thou sangst with enthusiasm.*
il / elle / on } ***chant*****ait** un chant funèbre,	*he, she, one, sang a dirge.*
nous ***chant*****ions** tous les soirs,	*we sang every evening.*
vous ***chant*****iez** lugubrement,	*you sang dismally.*
ils / elles } ***chant*****aient** des chansonnettes,	*they sang ditties.*

VOCABULARY.

regarder, *to look at.*
aller,* *to go.*
rencontrer, *to meet.*
visiter, *to visit.*
passer, *to pass.*

monter à cheval { *to ride on horseback.*
admirer, *to admire.*
assurer, *to assure.*

aller en voiture, *to go driving.*

je faisais, *I did.* ils faisaient, *they did.*

monument (m.), *monument.*
serre (f.), *conservatory, hothouse.*
concert (m.), *concert.*
musée (m.), *museum.*
application (f.), *industry.*
crocodile (m.), *crocodile, alligator.*
architecture (f.), *architecture.*
beauté (f.), *beauty.*
fusil (m.), *gun.*
instant (m.), *moment, instant.*

profondeur (f.), *depth.*
inséparable, *inseparable.*
Nouvelle-Orléans, *New Orleans.*
dorénavant { *henceforth, thenceforth, hereafter.*
tout de suite, *at once, immediately.*
tout droit, *straight (to).*
lorsque, *when.*
dès, *from, since.*
profond, *deep.*

Pierrot, *Peter.*

---

* The verb **aller** is regular only in the imperfect, preterit, and imperfect subjunctive. See Appendix, p. 200, for other tenses.

EXERCISE 35.

(*a*) 1. L'année dernière j'ai été en France, et suis allé tout droit à Paris. 2. Est-ce une jolie ville? 3. Magnifique! C'est certainement la plus belle ville du monde. 4. Ne visitiez-vous pas les théâtres? 5. Si, j'allais souvent au théâtre, aux concerts, et aux bals. 6. Y a-t-il toujours un grand nombre de bals publics? 7. Il y en a autant que de théâtres, environ cinquante ou soixante. 8. Vous ne travailliez pas trop alors, n'est-ce pas? 9. Non, mon cher, je n'en avais guère le temps; tous les jours j'allais en voiture, je montais à cheval, et faisais mille et une choses pour passer le temps. Un jour j'ai rencontré un ancien camarade, que je n'avais pas vu depuis quelque temps, et dès cet instant nous avons été inséparables; nous visitions les jardins publics et les musées, et partout nous admirions la beauté des rues, ainsi que l'architecture des monuments. 10. N'étais-tu pas chez toi lorsque le médecin est venu te voir? 11. Non, je t'assure que je n'y étais pas. 12. Que faisais-tu quand je suis entrée; est-ce que tu étudiais? 13. Non, maman, je portais les fleurs du jardin dans la serre. 14. C'est bien, pour cette fois, mais dorénavant tu seras plus attentif à tes leçons. 15. Autrefois votre fils me refusait tout ce que je lui demandais, mais maintenant il me le donne tout de suite. 16. Quand nous étions à l'école, nos maîtres m'assuraient toujours qu'il montrait plus d'application que moi, mais que je faisais plus de progrès que lui, ce qui était bien curieux; il était alors jaloux de mes succès.

(*b*) 1. Formerly, my cousin used to lend her books to every one (*tous ceux*) who asked her for them (them to her); now she lends them only to me. 2. What were these children asking for when I came in? 3. They were asking your brother if he had brought them any presents. 4. When I was in New

Orleans, I used to meet Admiral Farragut two or three times every (*par*) week; as I was at breakfast, he used to pass on horseback, or sometimes I met him while he was out driving. 5. My friends used to hunt and fish (*pêcher*) and drive; they rode (*monter à cheval*) and visited their numerous friends. 6. Did they not work or study sometimes? 7. Yes, but very little; they thought only of pleasure, and passed their time without thinking * of the future. 8. What is the depth of the St. Johns River at Jacksonville? 9. I do not know, but it is quite (*bien*) deep. I killed a big alligator there with my gun (*à coups de fusil*). 10. Oh, what a story!

LESSON XXXVI.

Future, *the day after to-morrow* (après-demain), *in future* (à l'avenir).

This tense conveys the idea of a state or action still to come.

je *chanterai* à l'opéra,	*I shall sing at the opera.*
tu *chanteras* au théâtre,	*thou wilt sing at the theater.*
il / elle / on } *chantera* au piano,	*he, she, one, will sing to the piano.*
nous *chanterons* à la harpe,	*we shall sing to the harp.*
vous *chanterez* joyeusement,	*you will sing joyously.*
ils / elles } *chanteront* tristement,	*they will sing sorrowfully.*

Inter	*chanterai*-je?	*shall I sing?*
Neg.	je ne *chanterai* pas,	*I shall not sing.*
Inter. Neg.	ne *chanterai*-je pas?	*shall I not sing?*

* IMPORTANT. — The English *present participle*, preceded by any preposition other than *in*, is translated by the French *infinitive*. The pupil is referred to the Second Course for full explanations and exercises on the infinitive and participles.

Conditional, *now* (en ce moment), *if it were possible* (s'il était possible).

Expressing the action as dependent upon some condition.

je ***chanterais*** à votre soirée,	*I would sing at your soirée.*
tu ***chanterais*** un chant d'église,	*thou wouldst sing a chant.*
il / elle / on } ***chanterait*** un chant sacré,	*he, she, one, would sing a sacred chant.*
nous ***chanterions*** un chant grégorien,	*we would sing a Gregorian chant.*
vous ***chanteriez*** une mélodie,	*you would sing a melody.*
ils / elles } ***chanteraient*** en amateur,	*they would sing like amateurs.*

Inter.	***chanterais***-je ?	*should I sing ?*
Neg.	je ne ***chanterais*** pas,	*I should not sing.*
Inter. Neg.	ne ***chanterais***-je pas ?	*should I not sing ?*

VOCABULARY.

cacher, *to hide.*
trouver, *to find.*
parler, *to speak.*
pleurer, *to weep, to cry.*
regretter, *to regret.*
chercher, *to look for, to seek.*
louer, *to praise.*
blâmer, *to blame.*
jouer (de), *to play* (*on*).
expliquer, *to explain.*
décerner (à), *to confer* (*upon*).

François, *Francis.*
journée (f.), *day.*
petit-fils (m.), *grandson.*
petite-fille (f.), *granddaughter.*
aiguille à tricoter (f.) { *knitting needle.*
image (f.), *picture, image.*
patrie (f.), *fatherland, country.*
patriote (m. and f.), *patriot.*
titre (m.), *title.*
retour (m.), *return.*
mansarde (f.), *attic, garret.*
balle (f.), *ball.*
inactif, *inactive, idle.*
plutôt, *sooner, rather.*
généralement, *generally.*
ce que, *what, that which.*

EXERCISE 36.

(*a*) 1. Pourquoi votre petite-fille cache-t-elle toujours mes aiguilles à tricoter ? Si j'étais sa grand'mère, je vous assure qu'elle ne les cacherait plus ! 2. Joueriez-vous du piano si je

chantais? 3. Avec plaisir, mademoiselle, tout ce que vous désirerez. 4. Si vous étiez de mauvaise humeur, je ne chanterais pas. 5. Arthur, m'expliquerez-vous, s'il vous plaît, pourquoi vous jouez tout le temps au lieu de travailler! 6. Mais, monsieur, il est trop tard maintenant; demain je ne jouerai pas, je travaillerai avec plaisir, j'étudierai mes leçons avec courage, et ma sœur et moi parlerons français toute la journée. 7. Ne parleriez-vous plus anglais pendant la leçon de français, si je vous pardonnais? 8. Je vous admirerais beaucoup, monsieur le professeur, si vous me pardonniez, et je vous assure que je serais plus studieux à l'avenir. 9. Dis (*say*), Adrien, me prêterais-tu ton crayon si je te le demandais? 10. Pourquoi te le refuserais-je? Tu me prêtes bien le tien quand j'en ai besoin. 11. Oh! que (*how*) j'aimerais à monter à cheval! 12. Si tu travailles bien, tu y monteras demain, et la semaine prochaine nous demanderons à maman de nous laisser aller à la campagne. Nous y jouerons à la balle jusqu'à notre retour. 13. Si Washington n'avait pas été un aussi grand patriote, on ne lui aurait pas décerné le beau titre de "Pater Patriæ," Père de la Patrie!

(*b*) 1. If I hid my grandson's toys, he would cry for a whole hour. 2. Do you think that you will find what you are looking for? 3. Yes, sir; I generally find a thing when I look for it. 4. Would you let me carry these curtains into your bedroom, miss? I would not like to leave them in the attic. 5. Certainly, Mary; carry them there. You will also find an old carpet there, which you will bring here, please. 6. Do you think my children will cry, Louise, if I leave them at home when I go riding? 7. No, madam; I will play with them, and show them my books and pretty pictures. 8. Shall you think often of me when you are in London? 9. Yes, indeed; I shall always think of you. 10. Our masters used to

praise our good work at school, but they would blame us now, if they found us idle and sluggish. I think that they will be here in a few days; shall you (*tu*) cry, Pierrot? 11. No, indeed; I like my teachers; perhaps they will be at our festival to-morrow. 12. Shall you study while they are here? 13. Yes; I shall be glad to show them that I like to study. 14. Charles, would you sing a song to me if I asked you? 15. I do not sing at all, but Francis would sing with pleasure if you played. 16. Would you (*tu*) eat a peach if you had one? 17. I would rather eat two than one.

LESSON XXXVII.

2. Second Conjugation. — *IR.*

INFINITIVE MOOD.

This is the verb in its simple form, vague and undefined.

Present: choisir, to choose.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: choisissant, choosing. *Past: choisi, chosen.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

The tenses of this mood express the state or action in a positive manner.

Present, *habitually* (habituellement).

This tense expresses the state or action as existing or taking place either habitually or at the moment of speaking.

je *choisis* des robes sombres,	*I choose (am choosing) dark dresses.*
tu *choisis* un chapeau neuf,	*thou choosest a new hat.*
il / elle / on } *choisit* de jolis rubis,	*he, she, one, chooses pretty rubies.*

nous ***choisissons*** **des bas de soie,**	*we choose silk stockings.*
vous ***choisissez*** **des souliers découverts,**	*you choose low shoes.*
ils / elles } ***choisissent*** **des éventails,**	*they choose fans.*

VOCABULARY.

rougir, *to blush.*	fournir, *to furnish (with).*
agir, *to act, to do.*	bâtir, *to build.*
obéir (à), *to obey.*	remplacer, *to replace.*
désobéir (à), *to disobey.*	inconnu, *unknown.*
finir, *to finish.*	on dirait, *one would think.*

Madeleine, *Maud.*	au bord de la mer { *at the seaside,* / *on the shore.*
entrepreneur (m.), *contractor.*	avoir part aux bénéfices { *to have a share (in) the profits.*
laitier (m.), *milkman.*	soudain, *sudden.*
supérieur (m.), *superior.*	soudainement, *suddenly.*
conduite (f.), *conduct.*	sévèrement, *severely.*
matériaux (m.), *materials.*	
ville d'eau (f.), *seaside resort.*	

EXERCISE 37.

(*a*) 1. Pourquoi rougissez-vous ainsi, Madeleine? On dirait que vous avez mal agi. 2. Vous savez que je rougis souvent sans cause, Louise. 3. Paul a été très mauvais cette semaine; il a désobéi à ses parents et à ses maîtres; que faut-il lui faire? 4. S'il ne vous obeit pas, mademoiselle, il faut le punir! Nous punissons toujours sévèrement ceux qui refusent de nous obéir. 5. Voici de très jolies cannes; laquelle choisissez-vous? 6. En voilà encore d'autres; savez-vous laquelle monsieur de Villiers a choisie? 7. Je crois qu'il en a choisi une pareille à celle-ci. 8. Qui a fourni les matériaux pour bâtir cette jolie maison? 9. Je crois que c'est l'entrepreneur qui les a fournis. 10. Quel profit a-t-il fait? 11. Je n'en sais rien. 12. Quand sera-t-elle finie? 13. Elle sera finie le quinze du mois prochain. 14. Est-ce que George

ne rougit pas quelquefois? 15. Si, toutes les fois qu'il ne dit pas la vérité, et cela lui arrive souvent; il rougit alors soudainement. 16. As-tu fini tes devoirs? 17. Non. 18. Moi j'ai presque fini les miens, pour obéir à ma mère. 19. Tu as agi mieux que moi, et je rougis d'avoir désobéi à la mienne, qui m'avait prié de finir mes leçons avant d'aller jouer au bord de la mer. 20. Notre maître nous dit souvent: "Mes enfants, si vous obéissez à vos supérieurs, vous serez toujours aimés."

(*b*) 1. We never punish children who obey us, but those who disobey us are severely punished. 2. Who has furnished the carpets for the new house which you bought a month ago? 3. We brought them with us from Paris. 4. Who is furnishing you (with) bread and milk? 5. The baker and the milkman at the (*du*) corner. 6. Are you not building a country house? 7. Yes; I am building one of stone and brick to (*pour*) replace the wooden one* I have had until now. 8. Why do people build so many new houses in this place, which only three years ago was almost unknown? 9. Because it has suddenly become fashionable as a seaside resort, and everybody wants to come here (*y*) to pass a few months in the summer. 10. Are you not building a hotel (*hôtel*) at the seaside? 11. Yes; will you lend me some money? I have not enough; if you gave me $50,000, it would be finished in two or three months, and you would have a share in the profits. 12. He who habitually disobeys his masters will be severely punished; he will then show more respect towards his superiors. 13. Why do you act as if you had become crazy? All your friends blush for (*de*) your conduct. 14. Do they? (*vraiment?*) Well, I act as I please (wish). 15. I don't like to study; I like to play. 16. You will regret all your life that you have been so foolish, my boy.

---

* Translate, *the one in wood.*

LESSON XXXVIII.

Imperfect, *when you entered* (**quand vous êtes entré**), *formerly* (**autrefois**).

This tense denotes (1) *a past state or action going on when another action took place;* (2) *a state or action as having been habitual.*

je *choi***sissais** une redingote noire,	*I chose (was choosing) a black frock-coat.*
tu *choi***sissais** des chapeaux énormes,	*thou chosest enormous bonnets.*
il / elle / on } *choi***sissait** une petite broche,	*he, she, one, chose a little brooch.*
nous *choi***sissions** de jolies fleurs,	*we chose some pretty flowers.*
vous *choi***sissiez** des framboises,	*you chose some raspberries.*
ils / elles } *choi***sissaient** de bons abricots,	*they chose good apricots.*

VOCABULARY.

trahir, *to betray.*
réussir (à), *to succeed (in).*
remplir, *to fulfill, to fill.*
guérir, *to cure, to get well.*
haïr, *to hate.*
pâlir, *to grow pale.*
affranchir, *to prepay, to stamp.*
attraper, *to catch.*
condamner, *to condemn, sentence.*
garder, *to keep.*

appeler, *to call.* vous pouvez, *you can.*

Jeannette, *Janet.*
poste aux lettres (f.), *post office.*
dégradation (f.), *degradation.*
directeur (m.) { *director, principal (of a school).*
départ (m.), *departure.*
mort (f.), *death.*
les Indes (f. pl.), *India.*
quinine (f.), *quinine.*
pilule (f.), *pill.*
drogue (f.), *drug.*
bonne (f.), *maid.*
service (m.), *service.*
absent, *absent.*
obéissant, *obedient.*
militaire, *military.*
terrible, *terrible.*
latin, *Latin.*
misérable, *miserable.*
efficace, *efficacious.*
ponctuellement, *punctually.*
lâchement, *cowardly.*

en vain, *in vain.*

EXERCISE 38.

(*a*) 1. Pendant que Gambetta remplissait admirablement ses devoirs de patriote, le misérable Bazaine trahissait lâchement sa patrie. Quelques mois après on le condamnait à mort, et à la dégradation militaire. 2. Quand j'étais à l'école je haïssais la grammaire latine presque autant que mon directeur qui était injuste envers moi. Je remplissais tous mes devoirs ponctuellement, et parce que je ne réussissais pas toujours bien mes thèmes, il me punissait sans pitié. Je pleurais, j'avais la fièvre, on appelait le médecin, qui me donnait de la quinine. 3. Ne vous guérissait-il pas? 4. Je ne finissais par être (*only got*) mieux que quand je donnais ses pilules à ma petite sœur Jeannette, à qui j'assurais que c'était des bonbons. Alors le médecin expliquait à mes parents combien ses drogues, que je n'avais pas prises, étaient efficaces! Moi, je guérissais, mais Jeannette pâlissait. 5. Quel "enfant terrible" vous étiez! 6. Qui appeliez-vous? 7. J'appelais le domestique pour porter une lettre à la poste. 8. La bonne que j'avais l'année dernière à la campagne me parlait souvent de vous. N'a-t-elle pas été à votre service, madame? 9. Si, nous l'avons eue pendant six mois. 10. Étiez-vous contente d'elle? 11. Très contente; elle est honnête, propre et active, et nous aurions désiré la garder, mais elle avait le mal du pays (*to be homesick*).

(*b*) 1. We were choosing some very pretty ribbons for your sisters, when they entered the shop. 2. When your father sat* at the fireside in the old country house which he and I had built, I used to fill the glasses and ask him to drink to the health of his absent son; I never used to ask in vain, and there we would stay and talk (impf.) often until midnight. We shall never forget those happy days. [The old man†] (*Il*)

* *était assis.*

† *Old man*, often a term of endearment in English, would be considered rude in French. Render by *il*.

used often to think of you; sometimes I succeeded in making (to make) him relate the story of your departure for India. Poor man! how glad he would have been to see you once more (*de plus*)! 3. Do you think that Dr. A. and Dr. Z. would be rich if they cured as many patients as the village doctor? 4. If they were as clever, I think they would. 5. Why did Maud blush when your brother spoke to her at dinner? 6. I do not know; she always used to blush like that when she was a child. 7. If I blushed thus, I should be very unhappy. 8. When you were at our country house, you always chose the finest strawberries which our garden furnished (of our garden). 9. We hate that man; did you see how pale he grew when we looked at him this afternoon? 10. I should be glad if my daughter Emily would turn pale sometimes, but on the contrary she is always blushing. 11. Did you (*tu*) often buy new dresses when you lived in Paris? 12. You can ask my husband!

LESSON XXXIX.

Future, *to-morrow* (demain), *next year* (l'année prochaine).

This tense conveys the idea of a state or action still to come.

je ***choisirai*** un valet de pied,	*I shall choose a footman.*
tu ***choisiras*** un valet de chambre,	*thou wilt choose a valet.*
il, elle, on } ***choisira*** une bonne d'enfant,	*he, she, one, will choose a nurse.*
nous ***choisirons*** un sommelier,	*we shall choose a butler.*
vous ***choisirez*** une femme de chambre,	*you will choose a lady's maid.*
ils, elles } ***choisiront*** une gouvernante,	*they will choose a governess.*

Conditional, *now* (maintenant), *if it were possible.*

Expressing the action as dependent upon some condition.

je ***choisirais*** une femme de ménage,	*I would choose a housekeeper.*
tu ***choisirais*** un courrier,	*thou wouldst choose a courier.*
il / elle / on } ***choisirait*** une fille de service,	*he, she, one, would choose a housemaid.*
nous ***choisirions*** un serviteur fidèle,	*we would choose a faithful servant.*
vous ***choisiriez*** une fille de cuisine,	*you would choose a kitchen maid.*
ils / elles } ***choisiraient*** un précepteur,	*they would choose a tutor.*

VOCABULARY.

salir, *to dirty, soil.*
bénir, *to bless.*
applaudir (à), *to applaud.*
réfléchir, *to reflect.*
nourrir, *to feed, to nourish.*
établir, *to establish.*
saisir, *to seize.*
périr, *to perish.*
jouir (de), *to enjoy.*
vieillir, *to grow old.*
échapper (à), *to escape (from).*
changer { *to change, to exchange.*
espérer, *to hope.*

---

le Mexique, *Mexico.*
tranquillité (f.) { *tranquillity, quiet.*
paix (f.), *peace.*
action (f.), *act.*
entreprise (f.) { *undertaking, enterprise.*
demeure (f.), *residence, dwelling.*
vêtement (m.), *clothes.*
croyance (f.), *belief.*
colonie (f.), *colony.*
commissaire (m.), *inspector.*
salubre, *healthful.*
malsain, *unhealthy.*
perpétuel, *perpetual.*
solide, *seaworthy, solid.*
autrement, *otherwise.*
vite, *quickly.*

EXERCISE 39.

(*a*) 1. Quand vous aurez un précepteur, Charles, j'espère que vous agirez un peu mieux qu'à présent; votre conduite laisse beaucoup à désirer. Si vous y réfléchissiez un peu, mon ami, vous en rougiriez. 2. Demain soir j'applaudirai de bons acteurs. 3. Salirez-vous votre robe aujourd'hui, Mlle Jeanne? 4. Non, Marie, je ne la salirai pas; je réfléchirai en jouant que

ma mère ne serait pas contente si je la salissais. 5. Vous parlez comme une petite femme. 6. Cela établira la paix et la tranquillité dans notre demeure. 7. Alors, madame votre mère applaudira à vos actions, et vous jouirez d'une bonne santé. 8. Je crois que je vieillirai dans cette maison, et que je ne la quitterai jamais. 9. Et moi, j'en sortirai avec plaisir aussitôt que possible, autrement je périrais avant l'âge (*before my time*), dans cette demeure humide et malsaine. 10. Nous réfléchirons à ce projet (*plan*). 11. Nous partons pour le Mexique, où nous jouirons d'un printemps perpétuel. Si le climat y est salubre, nous y établirons une colonie. 12. À votre place, je réfléchirais un peu plus. Si le vaisseau n'était pas solide, vous péririez en mer. 13. Je vieillirai dans mes croyances, sans changer jamais. 14. Quels gants désirez-vous, monsieur? des gants blancs? 15. Non, ils seraient trop vite sales.

(*b*) 1. When you have grown old (in growing old), you will bless the day when (*où*) I met you. 2. My child, you dirty your clothes every day. 3. Will you not fill my glass? 4. I will fill it with pleasure. 5. Inspector, if you seized this miserable [man], we should enjoy quiet and peace, and the whole village would bless you and applaud your act. 6. Yesterday the soldiers succeeded in (*à*) escaping (to escape) from the enemy, otherwise they would all have perished. 7. We shall reflect before we act (*d'agir*). 8. We applaud him who succeeds in his undertakings, but he who does not enjoy good health will scarcely ever succeed. 9. If we established our residence at the seaside, do you think that my grandfather would enjoy better health? 10. I think so; I shall establish my residence at Newport, and I am sure that I shall enjoy good health and a better appetite. 11. During the terrible winter of 1812, thousands of the soldiers of the great army of Napoleon I. were perishing of hunger, while the enemy's army was well fed.

LESSON XL.

3. Third Conjugation.—(*EV*)*OIR*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

This is the verb in its simple form, vague and undefined.

Present: **recevoir**, *to receive.*

PARTICIPLES.

Present: **recevant**, *receiving.* *Past:* **reçu**, *received.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

The tenses of this mood express the action in a positive manner.

Present, *at this moment* (en ce moment).

This tense expresses the state or action as existing or taking place either habitually or at the moment of speaking.

je **reçois*** mon journal,	*I receive my paper.*
tu **reçois** des annonces,	*thou receivest advertisements.*
il / elle / on } **reçoit** des avis,	*he, she, one, receives advices, notices.*
nous **recevons** des conseils,	*we receive counsels.*
vous **recevez** des nouvelles,	*you receive news.*
ils / elles } **reçoivent** des invités,	*they receive guests.*

Inter.	**reçois**-je ?	*do I receive ?*
Neg.	je ne **reçois** pas,	*I do not receive.*
Inter. Neg.	ne **reçois**-je pas ?	*do I not receive ?*

VOCABULARY.

apercevoir, *to perceive.*	devoir,† *to owe.*
concevoir, *to conceive.*	décevoir, *to deceive.*

percevoir, *to collect* (*taxes, rent*).

* C takes a cedilla (¸) before a, o, and u to denote that it retains its soft sound.

† The past participle of devoir (dû) takes a circumflex accent in the masculine, but the feminine (due) is written without one.

payer, *to pay.* **concentrer**, *to concentrate.* **dû**, *due.*
recevoir des nouvelles de quelqu'un, *to hear from some one.*

gouvernement (m.), *government.*
percepteur (m.), *taxgatherer.*
tailleur (m.), *tailor.*
peintre (m.), *painter.*
projet (m.), *project.*
dette (f.), *debt.*
impôt (m.), *tax.*
pensée (f.), *thought.*
système (m.), *system.*
prestidigitateur (m.), *prestidigitator.*
rapidité (f.), *rapidity.*
mouvement (m.), *movement.*
électricité (f.), *electricity.*
brouillard (m.), *fog, mist.*
séjour (m.), *stay.*
proche, *close, near.*

à la fois, *at (one and) the same time.*

EXERCISE 40.

(*a*) 1. Aperçois-tu cette voiture dans le brouillard? 2. Oui, je l'aperçois; qui est-ce? 3. Ce doit être le percepteur, qui est arrivé hier pour percevoir les impôts. 4. Quels impôts perçoit-il? 5. Ceux qui sont dûs au gouvernement. 6. Ce grand monsieur qui nous a salués tout à l'heure est un des hommes les plus célèbres du pays; poète et peintre à la fois, son esprit conçoit les plus belles pensées. 7. Cet ingénieur a conçu un nouveau système par lequel il espère concentrer l'électricité; ses projets seront probablement déçus, du moins je le crois. 8. Ne me devez-vous pas encore $8, Louis? 9. Non, je vous ai payé toutes mes dettes; je ne dois plus maintenant que vingt dollars à mon tailleur. 10. Quand la mer est mauvaise, si l'on est malade, on reçoit avec plaisir la nouvelle que la terre est proche. 11. Voilà trois mois que je n'ai rien reçu de mon fils Adrien. Concevez-vous cela? (*Can you imagine such a thing?*) rester trois mois sans envoyer de ses nouvelles à sa mère! 12. Je n'aurais jamais pensé cela de lui. Il est peut-être malade? 13. Heureusement non, car il a écrit à un de ses amis il y a une quinzaine. 14. Monsieur, mes enfants aperçoivent maintenant leur faute; ils la regrettent de tout leur cœur et vous en demandent pardon.

(*b*) 1. It is difficult to distinguish our house in this fog. 2. I perceive many errors in your exercises, John. 3. Has the taxgatherer collected the village taxes? 4. No, sir; he generally collects them on the third Tuesday of the month. 5. Have you not conceived any plan yet by which it would be possible to visit Europe next year? 6. Not yet; but I am trying to think of one (*j'y pense*). I wish to make a long stay in England and France. 7. Do we owe you any money yet, gentlemen? 8. Yes, you still owe us $18. 9. What? 10. No; I beg your pardon (I ask you pardon); I see that you have paid all your debts. 11. A good prestidigitator deceives everybody by the rapidity of the movements of his hands and fingers. 12. I cannot conceive how they do (*font*) [it]. 13. Have you seen our neighbor's son? 14. No; is he in town? 15. Yes; he has been at his mother's for [the last] eight days. 16. In quiet we conceive thoughts that escape us in the midst of noise. 17. Have you heard from your son lately? 18. We have not heard from him for [the last] three months.

LESSON XLI.

Imperfect, *when we were abroad* **(quand nous étions à l'étranger).**

This tense denotes (1) *a past state or action going on when another action took place;* (2) *a state or action as having been habitual.*

je ***recevais*** des marchandises,	*I received goods (merchandise).*
tu ***recevais*** des paquets,	*thou receivedst packages.*
il / elle / on } ***recevait*** des bagages,	*he, she, one, received some baggage.*
nous ***recevions*** des livres brochés,	*we received unbound books.*
vous ***receviez*** des livres reliés,	*you received bound books.*
ils / elles } ***recevaient*** des malles,	*they received trunks.*

Inter.	**recevais**-je ?	*did I receive ?*
Neg.	je ne **recevais** pas,	*I did not receive.*
Inter. Neg.	ne **recevais**-je pas ?	*did I not receive ?*

VOCABULARY.

déménager, *to move out.*
endetter, *to be in debt.*
entre, *between.*
vie (f.), *life.*
folie (f.), *folly.*
université (f.), *university.*
avis (m.), *notice.*
mœurs (f. pl.), *manners.*
apparence (f.), *appearance.*
loyer (m.), *rent.*
fournisseur (m.), *tradesman.*
différence (f.), *difference.*
appartement (m.), *apartment.*
nier, *to deny.*
rêver, *to dream.*
obligé, *obliged.*
espérance (f.), *hope.*
rêve (m.), songe (m.), *dream.*
somme (f.), *sum.*
agent (m.), *agent.*
reconnu, *recognized.*
criblé, *burdened.*
privé, *private.*
brillant, *brilliant.*
réel, *real.*
parfois, *from time to time.*

EXERCISE 41.

(*a*) 1. Quand mes amis étaient en France, ils recevaient presque tous les jours des nouvelles d'Amérique; je leur envoyais des journaux trois fois par semaine. 2. Apercevaient-ils beaucoup de différence entre les mœurs françaises et celles de leur pays? 3. Certainement, ils en apercevaient beaucoup, dans la vie publique et dans la vie privée. 4. Charles, tu as trompé mes espérances; j'avais conçu pour toi un avenir brillant, et maintenant j'aperçois que mes rêves seront déçus. 5. Quand vous étiez à l'université, ne deviez-vous pas d'assez fortes sommes à vos fournisseurs? 6. Si, j'étais criblé de dettes; je faisais des folies; mais maintenant je ne dois plus rien à personne. 7. Ne receviez-vous rien de vos parents? 8. Si, ils m'envoyaient des journaux, que je refusais quand ils n'étaient pas affranchis. 9. Ne rêviez-vous pas à l'avenir quelquefois? 10. J'avais assez du présent sans penser à l'avenir; mais je rêvais parfois que j'étais endetté; et cela n'était que trop réel.

(*b*) 1. George, your uncle and I in the past used to conceive brilliant plans for your future, but you deceive us in our hopes, as you have deceived everybody with (*par*) false appearances. 2. When my cousins were staying at Fordham, the taxgatherer was collecting the taxes there, and they tell me that the inhabitants did not receive him very well. 3. If I collected rents, I should be a very unhappy man. 4. Why? 5. Because I should be obliged to show little pity towards the poor people who could (*pourraient*) not pay their rent. 6. Our unfortunate neighbors had conceived the hope that their landlord would leave them in their apartments, but they received notice to move out. 7. The proprietor's agent said that we owed his master $880, which we deny; we owe him only last month's rent. 8. When my nephews were at Harvard University, they used to owe large sums of money, but they have long ago (*depuis longtemps*) recognized (*reconnu*) the folly of making debts. 9. I did not receive my landlord when I was at home, because I had not money enough to pay the rent. 10. When my daughter was in Europe, we used to hear from her every week.

LESSON XLII.

Future, *in future* (à l'avenir), *henceforth* (dorénavant).

This tense conveys the idea of a state or action still to come.

je ***recevrai*** des chèques,	*I shall receive cheques.*
tu ***recevras*** la note,	*thou wilt receive the account.*
il / elle / on } ***recevra*** des billets de chemin de fer,	*he, she, one, will receive railway tickets.*
nous ***recevrons*** des billets de banque,	*we shall receive bank notes.*
vous ***recevrez*** des billets de commerce,	*you will receive notes.*
ils / elles } ***recevront*** des lettres de change,	*they will receive bills of exchange.*

Conditional, *if it were necessary* (s'il était nécessaire).

The tenses of this mood express the action or state dependent upon some condition, either expressed or understood.

je **recevrais** de la monnaie,	*I would receive some change.*
tu **recevrais** de l'argent comptant,	*thou wouldst receive cash.*
il / elle / on } **recevrait** des lettres de crédit,	*he, she, one, would receive letters of credit.*
nous **recevrions** un carton à chapeau,	*we would receive a hat box.*
vous **recevriez** une traite,	*you would receive a draft.*
ils **recevraient** des objets,	*they would receive some objects.*

VOCABULARY.

échoir,* *to fall due (of a bill).*	accomplir, *to accomplish.*
déchoir,† *to fall, to decline.*	menacer (de), *to threaten (with).*
il écherra, *it will fall due.*	arracher, *to draw.*

procès (m.), *action (at law).*	loi (f.), *law.*
confiance (f.), *confidence.*	cri (m.), *cry.*
bravoure (f.) { *pluck, bravery.*	duc (m.), *duke.*
	admiration (f.), *admiration.*
bataille (f.), *battle.*	feu, *the late.*
défaite (f.), *defeat.*	amèrement, *bitterly.*
traître (m.), *traitor.*	courant, *instant (of dates).*
réputation (f.), *reputation.*	promptement, *promptly, punctually.*
maréchal (m.), *marshal.*	pourtant, *however, nevertheless.*
guerre (f.), *war.*	tandis que, *whilst.*
estime (f.), *estimation.*	au delà de, *beyond.*

EXERCISE 42.

(*a*) 1. Si vous nous menacez d'un procès, nous ne recevrons plus vos marchandises. 2. Vous savez bien que les deux traites que nous avons tirées sur vous à trois mois sont échues depuis huit jours, et que vous ne les avez pas encore payées. Nous

* Used only in the third person.

† Has all tenses except the imperfect of the indicative, the imperative, and present participle.

vous avons écrit il y a une quinzaine qu'elles écherraient le dix-huit courant. Pourtant, après avoir promis de payer promptement, vous avez déçu nos espérances. 3. On m'a dit, monsieur le général, que pendant la dernière guerre vous conceviez l'espoir de n'être jamais battu. 4. Si vous voulez venir ici, vous apercevrez l'église du village. 5. En 1870–71, feu le maréchal de Mac-Mahon, duc de Magenta, a été sévèrement battu; mais son courage, loin d'avoir déchu, a été l'objet de l'admiration de ses ennemis; tandis qu'au contraire, le traître Bazaine, en trahissant lâchement sa patrie, a déçu amèrement la confiance qu'on avait en lui. [À partir] de ce moment il a déchu de jour en (*to*) jour dans l'estime publique. 6. Les lois devraient être conçues pour le bénéfice du plus grand nombre.

(*b*) 1. Why has this engineer fallen from his high reputation? 2. Because he conceived projects which were altogether beyond his powers (*pouvoir*); he accomplished little, and thus deceived everybody's hopes. 3. If he had been wise, he would have perceived in (*à*) time that he was wrong. 4. If your children are good, madam, they will not deceive their old uncle in his hopes. 5. Shall you receive the taxgatherer when he arrives to collect the taxes? 6. No, Maud; I shall not receive him; I paid my rent only yesterday, and I have not money enough for him. 7. Do you know that the drafts which I have drawn on you will fall due to-morrow? 8. Yes, I know it; you shall receive the whole sum which I owe you. 9. I shall be very glad to receive it, for you have owed a large part of it for (*depuis*) more than eight months. 10. My brother set out last night for Italy. 11. The late Marshal MacMahon was as brave as a lion on the field of battle; at Malakoff and at Magenta he showed the qualities of a great general. In the hour of defeat his heroic bravery drew cries of admiration from the lips (*bouche*) even of his enemies.

LESSON XLIII.

4. Fourth Conjugation.—*RE*.

Infinitive Mood.

This is the verb in its simple form, vague and undefined.

Present: ***vendre***, *to sell.*

Participles.

Present: ***vendant***, *selling.* *Past:* ***vendu***, *sold.*

Indicative Mood.

The tenses of this mood express the action in a positive manner.

Present, *now* **(maintenant).**

This tense expresses the state or action as existing or taking place either habitually or at the moment of speaking.

je ***vends*** des boutons,	*I sell (am selling) buttons.*
tu ***vends*** des boutons de manchettes,	*thou sellest cuff studs.*
il / elle / on } ***vend*** des chemises,	*he, she, one, sells shirts.*
nous ***vendons*** des chemises de nuit,	*we sell nightgowns.*
vous ***vendez*** des cols,	*you sell collars.*
ils ***vendent*** des harnais,	*they sell harness.*

Inter.	est-ce que je ***vends*** ? *	*do I sell?*
Neg.	je ne ***vends*** pas,	*I do not sell.*
Inter. Neg.	est-ce que je ne ***vends*** pas ?	*do I not sell?*

VOCABULARY.

rendre, *to give back, to return.*	emballer, *to pack up.*
entendre, *to hear.*	frotter, *to scrape, to rub.*
perdre, *to lose.*	gagner, *to gain, to win.*
attendre, *to wait for, to expect.*	déranger / troubler } *to trouble, to bother.*
répondre, *to reply, to answer.*	

---

* Monosyllabic forms of the first person take the interrogative formula "*est-ce que,*" etc., for the sake of euphony. Thus, *Dors-je? mange-je? bats-je?* must be turned into *est-ce que je dors? est-ce que je mange? est-ce que je bats?* When, however, no harsh sound results, custom authorizes the usual form; as, *vais-je? puis-je? vois-je?*

partie (f.), *game.*
échecs (m. pl.), *chess.*
lime (f.), *file.*
créature (f.), *creature.*
Sibérie (f.), *Siberia.*
délivrance (f.), *deliverance.*
aïeul (m.), pl. aïeux, *ancestors.*
affaires (f. pl.), *things.*
chat (m.), *cat.*
fer (m.), *iron.*
liberté (f.), *liberty.*
gens (m. and f. pl.), *people.*
barre (f.), *bar.*
prisonnier (m.), *prisoner.*
plainte (f.), *complaint.*
occasion (f.), *opportunity.*
patience (f.), *patience.*
son (m.), *sound.*
mystérieux, *mysterious.*
bientôt, *soon.*
léger, *slight.*
de suite, *following*

EXERCISE 43.

(*a*) 1. Si tu me rends mes livres, je te rendrai les tiens. 2. Entends-tu ce qu'il me dit, Paul? Il me donnera mes livres si je lui rends les siens; c'est toi qui les as, et qui dois les lui rendre. 3. Si Charles vend les tableaux de ses aïeux, je ne le lui pardonnerai jamais, dit le vieux monsieur X. 4. Ces gens-là me troublent l'esprit avec leurs nombreuses lettres; je ne conçois pas pourquoi ils agissent ainsi, puisque je ne leur réponds pas; ils perdent leur temps. 5. Quand vous jouez aux échecs avec l'ami Adrien, qui est-ce qui perd le plus souvent? 6. Généralement c'est lui qui perd, mais l'autre jour il m'a gagné plusieurs parties de suite. 7. Pourquoi n'attends-tu pas ton frère ici? 8. Je ne l'attends guère plus maintenant; il est trop tard. 9. Si vous attendez quelques instants, j'emballerai mes affaires et je sortirai avec vous. 10. Entendez-vous ces sons mystérieux? 11. Oui, nous les entendons parfaitement; qu'est-ce que c'est? 12. Je ne sais pas. 13. Si nous appelions, peut-être répondrait-on. 14. Non, personne ne répond. 15. Pourquoi frottez-vous vos yeux comme cela? 16. Parce que j'ai sommeil; les chats ont fait tant de bruit la nuit dernière que je n'ai pu (*could not*) dormir. 17. Qui attendez-vous? 18. J'attends un ami de Boston qui est arrivé tout à l'heure par le chemin de fer.

(*b*) 1. Whom are you waiting for? 2. I am waiting here for the opportunity of catching a prisoner who is trying to escape from prison. Do you not hear a slight noise? one would think [it was] a file on the iron bars of the windows. 3. Yes, I hear it perfectly. 4. They say the prisoners in Siberia are the most miserable creatures on earth; very rarely is their liberty given back to them. They expect only death as a deliverance from (to) their evils, and nobody replies to their cries of suffering. 5. Those stories are in great part only lies. 6. Every time that I pack my books, I lose some. Yesterday I lost two of them; somebody must have found them, but they have not been given back to me yet. 7. Do you think that they will be returned to you? 8. I hope so. 9. Then, my friend, your hopes will certainly be deceived. 10. Do not trouble me now with your complaints; why do you not wait? I shall soon have finished my business; I lose patience with you. 11. If you reply now, I will not listen (*écouter*) to you. 12. My cousin usually waits too long, and so loses every opportunity (plur.).

LESSON XLIV.

Imperfect, *some years ago* (il y a quelques années).

This tense denotes (1) *a past state or action going on when another action took place;* (2) *a state or action as having been habitual.*

je ***vend*ais** des lanternes,	*I sold (used to sell) lanterns.*
tu ***vend*ais** des lampes,	*thou soldest lamps.*
il / elle / on } ***vend*ait** des chandelles,	*he, she, one, sold candles.*
nous ***vend*ions** des chandeliers,	*we sold candlesticks.*
vous ***vend*iez** du suif,	*you sold tallow.*
ils ***vend*aient** de la graisse,	*they sold grease.*

Inter.	***vend*ais**-je ?	*did I (used I to) sell ?*
Neg.	je ne ***vend*ais** pas,	*I did not sell.*
Inter. Neg.	ne ***vend*ais**-je pas ?	*did I not sell ?*

VOCABULARY.

entendre dire, *to hear it said.*
répandre, *to spread, to spill.*
mordre, *to bite.*
correspondre, *to correspond.*
pendre, *to hang.*
voler, *to steal.*
créer, *to create.*
voyager, *to travel.*
mériter, *to deserve.*
adresser, *to address.*

whist (m.), *whist.*
frontière (f.), *frontier.*
douanier (m.), *customs officer.*
contrebandier (m.), *smuggler.*
communication (f.) { *communication.*
reptile (m.), *reptile.*
criminel (m.), *criminal.*
embarras (m.) { *embarrassment, difficulties.*
client (m.), *customer, client.*
réservé, *reserved.*
enragé, *mad.*
insolvable, *insolvent.*
venimeux, *venomous.*
secrètement, *secretly.*
fréquemment, *frequently.*
assurément, *certainly, assuredly.*
perfidement, *treacherously.*
à son tour, *in his turn.*

car (conj.), *for.*

EXERCISE 44.

(*a*) 1. Il y a quelques années j'avais un chien que j'aimais beaucoup, et que j'ai dû (*I was obliged**) tuer. 2. Pourquoi avez-vous dû le tuer ? 3. Parce qu'un chien enragé l'avait mordu, et qu'alors il mordait à son tour. 4. Quand nous étions enfants, nous perdions presque tout ce qu'on nous donnait. 5. J'espère que mes clients répondront aux lettres que vous leur adressiez quand je suis entré. 6. Assurément ils y répondront ; eux et moi correspondions fréquemment quand j'étais à Paris, et ils répondaient toujours promptement à mes com-

* **Devoir** is used idiomatically to express the idea of obligation or duty, and in this use is thoroughly explained in Course II.

munications. 7. J'ai vraiment pitié de cet homme; il faisait toujours bien ses affaires, mais pendant son séjour en Europe, ses ennemis, pour lui créer des embarras, ont répandu secrètement le bruit qu'il était insolvable. 8. Il ne méritait pas cela, car c'est un très honnête homme. 9. L'année dernière nous jouions au whist presque tous les soirs. 10. Quand vous voyagiez en Europe, est-ce que les douaniers visitaient vos malles? 11. Assurément, dans chaque grande ville et à la frontière de chaque nouveau pays que nous visitions, nos malles étaient ouvertes; mais les douaniers étaient toujours polis et réservés.

(*b*) 1. We have heard it said that these two men used to spread false reports about (*sur*) their neighbors. 2. I have heard it also. If it is true, no punishment (*châtiment*) can be too severe for them; people who bite secretly and treacherously like venomous reptiles do not deserve pity. 3. I believe that these custom-house officers used to correspond secretly with thieves and smugglers. 4. Formerly they used to hang those who stole sheep, but now some people are foolish enough to praise the greatest criminals. 5. If one of these dogs bit me, I should kill it. 6. You would be wrong; if you were bitten, you ought* (*devriez*) to commence an action against the owner. 7. I was certain that you were waiting for somebody when I saw you on the corner of the street. 8. What were you giving to Henry when I met you? 9. I was giving him back the songs which he had lent me. 10. When we were at the seaside we played the piano, and my sister the harp, nearly every evening. 11. You also used to play at (*au*) whist, did you not? 12. Yes; but I nearly always lost. 13. Just like me when I used to play chess with my friend Arthur (trans. *juste comme moi*, etc.).

---

* See Idiomatical Tenses, also lesson on **devoir**, in Course II.

LESSON XLV.

Future, *henceforth, the day after to-morrow.*

This tense conveys the idea of a state or action still to come.

je *vend***rai** des violons,	*I shall sell violins.*
tu *vend***ras** des violoncelles,	*thou wilt sell violoncellos.*
il / elle / on } *vend***ra** des basses,	*he, she, one, will sell bass viols.*
nous *vend***rons** des trompettes,	*we shall sell trumpets.*
vous *vend***rez** des cornets à piston,	*you will sell cornets.*
ils / elles } *vend***ront** des clarinettes,	*they will sell clarinets.*

Inter.	*vend***rai**-je?	*shall I sell?*
Neg.	je ne *vend***rai** pas,	*I shall not sell.*
Inter. Neg.	ne *vend***rai**-je pas?	*shall I not sell?*

Conditional, *if it were desired* (si l'on voulait).

Expressing the action as dependent upon some condition.

je *vend***rais** des flûtes,	*I should sell flutes.*
tu *vend***rais** des flageolets,	*thou wóuldst sell flageolets.*
il / elle / on } *vend***rait** des guitares,	*he, she, one, would sell guitars.*
nous *vend***rions** des mandolines,	*we would sell mandolins.*
vous *vend***riez** des tambours,	*you would sell drums.*
ils / elles } *vend***raient** des cymbales,	*they would sell cymbals.*

Inter.	*vend***rais**-je?	*should I sell?*
Neg.	je ne *vend***rais** pas,	*I should not sell.*
Inter. Neg.	ne *vend***rais**-je pas?	*should I not sell?*

VOCABULARY.

revendre, *to sell again.*
prétendre, *to pretend.*
dépendre, *to depend.*
descendre { *to descend, come down,* / *to put up (at a hotel).*
suspendre, *to put up, to hang up.*
étendre, *to stretch out, to extend, to lay down.*

Afrique (f.), *Africa.*
cas (m.), *case.*
linge (m.), *washing, linen.*
dessus de cheminée { *mantel-piece,* / *chimney-piece.*
habileté (f.), *skill.*
ambition (f.), *ambition.*
société (f.), *society, association.*
chocolat (m.), *chocolate.*
fort (m.), *fort.*
corde (f.), *rope, cord.*
cour (f.), *yard.*
intérieur (m.) { *interior;* (adj.) / *interior, inner.*
extérieur (m.) { *exterior;* (adj.) / *exterior, outer.*
empire (m.), *empire.*
assassin (m.), *murderer, assassin.*
toilette (f.), *toilet.*
usage (m.), *use, purpose.*
petite mère (f.) *darling mamma.*
malhonnête, *dishonest.*
au-dessus, *above.*
central, *central.*

EXERCISE 45.

(*a*) 1. J'ai acheté un petit chien qui est trop sale, je le revendrai à un de mes amis. 2. Ma sœur ne descendra donc pas! 3. Ne lui faites pas de reproches; elle prétendrait qu'elle n'a mis que cinq minutes à sa toilette, mais elle perdrait son temps. 4. Petite mère, si j'avais acheté un joli tableau de Rosa Bonheur, où le suspendrais-tu? 5. On le suspendrait dans le salon, mon enfant, au-dessus de la cheminée. 6. J'ai entendu dire qu'en cas de guerre on étendrait les murs de la ville jusqu'aux forts extérieurs. 7. La religion chrétienne étendra bien vite son empire en Afrique, et les habitants n'y perdront rien — au contraire. 8. Marie, vous n'étendrez plus le linge sur le mur du jardin; nous l'étendrons sur les cordes que j'ai placées dans la cour pour cet usage. 9. Madame, le déjeuner est servi. 10. C'est bien, je descendrai dans quelques minutes. 11. Madame, dois-je donner des

serviettes aux enfants? 12. Oui, autrement ils répandraient du lait sur leurs vêtements. 13. Monsieur* prendra-t-il du café ou du thé? 14. Je prendrais du chocolat, s'il y en avait. 15. Et Madame,* que prendra-t-elle? 16. Du café au lait comme d'habitude. 17. Si le déjeuner était prêt, je descendrais tout de suite, sans perdre une minute, car j'ai grand'faim. 18. Demain je partirai pour Londres, je descendrai à l'hôtel Savoy, et vous recevrez de mes nouvelles aussitôt que je serai arrivé.

(*b*) 1. If the skill of this general were as great as his ambition, he would extend his empire through (*sur*) the whole earth. 2. If these people heard the bell, they would come down at once. 3. Would you (*tu*) give these ribbons and this silk back to the merchant, Clarissa, if he gave you a new bonnet? 4. No; I would not give them back to him. 5. If these men bowed to us, we would pretend not (*ferions semblant de ne pas*) to see them. 6. Why? 7. Because they are dishonest. 8. We shall correspond with you when we are in France, and you will hear from us often. 9. We hope so. Where shall you put up in Paris? 10. At the Continental, I think. It is a handsome (fine) hotel, and very central, too. 11. How much do they charge a day? (What is the price by [the] day?) 12. It depends upon the rooms you choose. 13. Should you disturb this dog, he would bite you. 14. If he bites anybody again, his master will sell him. 15. He ought (*devrait*) to kill him in that case. 16. If the inhabitants of the town caught that murderer, they would hang him on (*à*) a tree. 17. I am tired! I am going to my room; I shall come downstairs in an hour or two, and we will speak of our next voyage.

* French servants address their masters by stating the title first, and using the third person.

LESSON XLVI.

Imperative.

The imperative mood is that part of the verb which simply expresses wish, command, or entreaty.

Avoir.

aies de l'originalité,	*have (thou) originality.*
qu' { il / elle / on } ***ait*** de la tolérance,	*let him, her, one, have tolerance.*
ayons de la douceur,	*let us have gentleness.*
ayez de la discrétion,	*have (ye) discretion.*
qu' { ils / elles } ***aient*** de la persévérance,	*let them have perseverance.*

Être.

soie original,	*be (thou) original.*
qu' { il / elle / on } ***soit*** tolérant,	*let him, her, one, be tolerant.*
soyons doux,	*let us be gentle.*
soyez discrets,	*be (ye) discreet.*
qu' { ils / elles } ***soient*** persévérants,	*let them be persevering.*

First Conjugation.

chante plus distinctement,	*sing more distinctly.*
chantons un poème épique,	*let us sing an epic poem.*
chantez une hymne de louange,	*sing a hymn of praise.*

Second Conjugation.

choisis des fleurs d'oranger,	*choose orange-blossoms.*
choisissons des chrysanthèmes,	*let us choose chrysanthemums.*
choisissez des œillets,	*choose carnations.*

Third Conjugation.

reçois ces turquoises,	*receive these turquoises.*
recevons de la bijouterie,	*let us receive jewelry.*
recevez nos perles,	*receive our pearls.*

Fourth Conjugation.

***vend*s** des sorbets,	*sell sherbet.*
***vend*ons** de la vanille,	*let us sell vanilla.*
***vend*ez** des raisins,	*sell grapes.*

NOTE. — Strictly speaking, there is no third person in the imperative, and the present subjunctive is drawn upon to furnish it. It is therefore omitted here in the four conjugations.

When the verb is in the imperative mood *affirmative*, the personal pronouns are placed after, just as in English.

chantez-le-moi **chantez-la-moi**	*sing it to me.*	**chantez-le-nous** **chantez-la-nous**	*sing it to us.*
chantez-les-moi,	*sing them to me.*	**chantez-les-nous,**	*sing them to us.*
chantez-le-lui	*sing it to him.* *sing it to her.*	**chantez-le-leur** **chantez-la-leur**	*sing it to them.*
chantez-la-lui	*sing it to him.* *sing it to her.*		
chantez-les-lui	*sing them to him.* *sing them to her.*	**chantez-les-leur,**	*sing them to them.*

When the imperative is *negative*, the general rule for the place of pronouns is observed (see Lesson XXI.). EX.: *Ne me le chante pas*, do not sing it to me. *Ne les leur chantez pas*, do not sing them to them.

VOCABULARY.

coucher, *to put to bed, to lay flat.*	remercier, *to thank.*
rappeler, *to remind.*	appartient, *belongs.*
réclamer, *to claim, to demand.*	appartiennent, *belong.*

promis, *promised.*

toilette (f.) { *toilet-table,* *dressing-table.*	Édouard, *Edward.*
livre d'images (m.), *picture-book.*	Jacques, *James, Jim.*
Frédéric, *Frederick, Fred.*	Blanche, *Blanche.*
	Berthe, *Bertha.*

cela m'est égal, *that's all the same to me.*

EXERCISE 46.

(*a*) 1. Si ma sœur désire les livres que je vous ai prêtés, ne les lui envoyez pas. 2. Quand tu rencontreras ton ami Frédéric, remercie-le de notre part. 3. Où est mon verre, Jacques? 4. Il est ici, monsieur. 5. Remplissez-le-moi, alors. 6. Édouard, j'ai entendu dire que tu as appris deux nouvelles chansons; chante-les-nous, je te prie. 7. Blanche, vous trouverez ma bague sur la toilette; apportez-la-moi, je vous prie. 8. Où est ma canne, Jacques? Je vous l'ai demandée il y a dix minutes; donnez-la-moi maintenant. 9. Ces belles fleurs appartiennent à ma nièce Berthe; rends-les-lui, s'il te plaît. 10. Le rubis que vous avez trouvé n'appartient pas à ce monsieur; ne le lui donnez pas. 11. Mais il le réclame, monsieur. 12. Cela m'est égal! Ce rubis n'est pas à lui, vous dis-je, rendez-le-moi alors. 13. Si ces marchands, dont nous avons parlé, te demandent de l'argent, ne leur en envoie pas. 14. Clarisse, couchez l'enfant, s'il vous plaît.

(*b*) 1. Here are the maps I promised you; do not lose them. 2. Are your exercises finished, boys (*mes enfants*)? 3. No, sir; not yet. 4. Then finish them now, and bring them to me. 5. If any of the guests arrive while we are out, receive them for us, please. 6. Little Arthur is asking me for your picture-book, Edward. 7. All right, mother; lend it to him. 8. There are our books on the other desk; throw them to us, Louis. 9. Whose are this knife and fork? 10. They are Francis'; give them to him. 11. If this lace pleases you, Maud, accept it [from me] as a present. 12. Oh, thank you; it is indeed beautiful! I have received so many pretty things from your friends; thank them all for me, and remind them that I shall always be grateful to them (for them). 13. If that child cries like that, put him to bed right away (at once), Mary. 14. It's all the same to him, madam.

LESSON XLVII.

Peculiarities of the First Conjugation.

All the verbs of the first conjugation are regular, save **aller** (to go) and **envoyer** (to send).

Some, however, undergoing a few slight changes of sound and of spelling, it may be said, in general, that—

(1) Verbs having an **e** mute before their last syllable, as *mener* (to lead), *lever* (to raise, to lift), take a grave accent on the **e** when the following syllable is mute: *je mènerai, ils se lèvent.*

(2) Verbs having an **é** before their last syllable, as *préférer* (to prefer), *espérer* (to hope), change the **é** into **è** when the following syllable is mute; as, *tu préfères, elle espère* (fut. and cond. excepted).

(3) Verbs ending in **cer**, as *percer* (to pierce), *commencer* (to begin), take a cedilla before **a** and **o** to retain the soft sound of **c**: *nous perçons, il commençait.*

(4) Verbs ending in **ger**, as *protéger* (to protect), *nager* (to swim), take an **e** before **a** and **o** to retain the soft sound of **g**: *elle protégeait, nous nageons.*

(5) Verbs ending in **yer**, as *appuyer* (to lean), *balayer* (to sweep), change **y** into **i** before **e** mute; as, *on appuie, elle balaieront.*

Notice that in verbs in **ier** two **i**'s occur together in the first and second persons plural of the imperfect indicative and present subjunctive. Ex.: *Dans notre enfance nous priions tous les soirs*, we used to pray every evening in our childhood. *Il faut que vous criiez bien fort pour l'avoir*, you must cry hard to get it.

In the same tenses and persons verbs in **yer** take an **i** after the **y**. Ex.: *Pourquoi ne balayiez vous pas la chambre quand nous sommes entrées?* why were you not sweeping the room when we entered?

VOCABULARY.

amener (*of persons*), *to bring.*
ramener, *to bring back.*
emmener, *to take back, take away.*
peler, *to peel.*
patiner, *to skate.*
geler, *to freeze.*
peser, *to weigh.*
céder, *to yield.*
employer, *to employ, to use.*
annoncer, *to announce.*
essuyer, *to dry, to wipe.*

papier à lettres (m.) { *letter paper, note paper.*
bébé (m.), *baby.*
costume (m.), *costume.*
nom (m.), *name.*
bain (m.), *bath.*
enfance (f.), *childhood.*
fabrique (f.), *factory.*
conquérant (m.), *victor.*
arrivée (f.), *arrival.*
fort, *hard.*

EXERCISE 47.

(*a*) 1. Où achetez-vous votre papier à lettres? 2. Je l'achète chez le marchand du coin. 3. Où menez-vous ces enfants? 4. Je les mène à l'école; ce chemin y mène tout droit. 5. Amènerez-vous votre mère chez nous cette après-midi? 6. Oui, madame, je l'y amènerai vers deux heures. 7. Qui protège ce pauvre jeune homme? 8. C'est moi, madame. 9. Depuis quand le protégez-vous? 10. Je le protège depuis son enfance. 11. Mes cousines espèrent vous voir à la soirée de madame de Sibran; y serez-vous? 12. S'il ne gèle pas trop fort, oui. 13. N'est-ce pas que tu lèves bien la tête, Jacques? 14. Madame, je vous amène Paul, qui est très mauvais; il pèle des pommes de terre sur les meubles du salon. 15. Emmenez-le dans sa chambre, où il restera jusqu'à l'heure du dîner. 16. Mon frère et moi désirons qu'il gèle, pour pouvoir patiner. L'hiver passé nous n'avons patiné que deux fois; il n'a presque jamais gelé. 17. Jeanne, menez ces messieurs près de maman, s'il vous plaît. 18. Oui, mademoiselle, je les y mène tout de suite. 19. Cet été quand ma sœur Madeleine était au bord de la mer, elle changeait sa toilette pour un costume de bain et nageait comme un poisson. 20. Nous commençons à dîner à six heures du soir. 21. L'âge

mûr protège l'enfance. 22. Je cède à ton avis, mon frère, et j'espère que tu me protégeras toujours. 23. J'annonçais la nouvelle de la victoire lorsque le conquérant lui-même est entré. 24. Est-ce que votre ami Adrien n'est pas venu pendant que vous balayiez ma chambre à coucher?

(*b*) 1. We shall have skating (*trans.* we shall skate) tomorrow; it is freezing very hard. 2. Perhaps it will freeze for a month. 3. Is it you who protect this young lady? 4. Yes, madam; we have protected (pres. indic.) her since her childhood. 5. What is her name? 6. Her name is Angèle. 7. What a pretty name! 8. We shall sweep the rooms every morning. 9. How much do these big books weigh, Henry? 10. They weigh about twenty-eight pounds, sir. 11. Where are you taking my dog, Paul? 12. I am taking him to your cousin Maud; she desires very much to see him. I shall bring him back soon. 13. My father used to protect Fred when he was young. 14. Were you not beginning (2d pers. sing.) a letter when I entered the room? 15. We are beginning to speak French. 16. We announce to you our mother's arrival. 17. How do you peel these fruits, Paul? 18. What a question! I peel them with a knife. 19. I weigh 167 pounds, and I [can] raise 50 pounds above my head. 20. What are you doing (*Que fais-tu*), Janet? 21. I am drying the baby's hands. 22. Father employs four hundred workmen in his factory. 23. I yield to your advice, and hope you will always protect me. 24. You were always crying when you were a child, Edward; now you are always singing. 25. I am going into the garden, Adrian; carry two chairs there,* please.

---

* Euphony requires the retention of the *s* in the second person singular, imperative, of verbs of the 1st conjugation, before *y* and *en*: *penses-y*; *donnes-en*.

GENERAL RECAPITULATION EXERCISES.

The following lessons are nothing else than a kind of practical review of the course, under the form of change of person, or *transposition*. This happy idea belongs to Larousse, who, borrowing from various authors some anecdote or short story suitable to these exercises, gives it to the pupils, who are required to make the different changes of *number*, *gender*, and *person* in the various parts of speech affected by the transpositions. In this way the student not only learns the verbs thoroughly, but at the same time grasps forever the agreement of the possessive and demonstrative adjectives on the one hand, and of the possessive and demonstrative pronouns on the other, and comes to understand also the use of the conjunctive pronouns.

The student is required to translate the following extracts into English, and afterwards, in the class-room, make the indicated changes of number, gender, or person in French.

EXERCISE 48.

On Number.

L'ÉLÉPHANT.

L'intelligence de l'éléphant est très développée, et, comme avec cette qualité il a une force prodigieuse, s'il avait reçu de la nature l'amour de la domination, il aurait pu[1] facilement soumettre[2] à son empire les autres animaux, comme l'a fait l'homme.[3] Sa trompe, organe admirable, exécute tous les mouvements dont il éprouve[4] le besoin; avec cette main, presque l'égale de celle de l'homme, il soulève[5] des fardeaux[6] énormes, et il les porte sans effort; il saisit aussi les plus petits objets; il les divise, il les réunit aussi bien que nous avec nos doigts. L'odorat[7] de l'éléphant, doué[8] d'une merveilleuse sensibilité, contribue encore à développer ses facultés;

---

[1] *pu* (p.p. of *pouvoir*, to be able), here, could have. [2] *soumettre*, to subdue, subjugate. [3] *l'homme* is here the subject. [4] *éprouve*, experiences. [5] *soulève*, lifts. [6] *fardeau* (m.), burden, load. [7] *odorat* (m.), the sense of smell. [8] *doué*, endowed.

il ne lui manque, en vérité, que la parole;[1] et sans doute pour ces raisons, il est devenu le symbole de la sagesse[2] et de la prudence. L'éléphant apprivoisé[3] sert[4] l'homme avec zèle,[5] avec fidélité, avec intelligence; mais il ne supporte point[6] de mauvais traitements,[7] et, quand il est victime de quelque injustice, il n'est pas résigné comme le chien, et sa force prodigieuse le rend alors tellement dangereux, qu'on est quelquefois obligé de le détruire.[8]

The pupil should put this exercise in the ***plural****, taking as title:*

LES ÉLÉPHANTS.

MODEL. L'intelligence des éléphants est très développée, et, comme avec cette qualité ils ont une force prodigieuse, etc.

EXERCISE 49.

On Number.

The pupil is required to translate the following into English, and afterwards make the ***transposition*** *in French as indicated below.*

LES HOMMES CHARITABLES.

Heureux les hommes qui ont fait[9] prendre racine[10] dans leur cœur à la bienfaisance! Leur charité est une source abondante qui jaillit[11] sur tous ceux dont ils sont entourés.[12] Ils sont attentifs aux besoins de l'indigent;[13] ils partagent avec les malheureux la fortune qu'ils ont reçue de la Providence. Ils pardonnent les injures, ils cherchent même à les effacer de

---

[1] ***parole*** (f.), power of speech. [2] ***sagesse*** (f.), wisdom. [3] ***apprivoisé***, tamed. [4] ***sert***, serves (3d pers. pl., ***servent***). [5] ***zèle*** (m.), zeal. [6] ***ne supporte point***, does not tolerate at all. [7] ***de mauvais traitements*** (m. pl.), ill treatment. [8] ***détruire***, to destroy. [9] This use of ***faire*** is idiomatic. Construe the sentence so as to make ***bienfaisance*** (benevolence) the direct object of ***fait***. [10] ***racine***, a root. [11] ***jaillit***, issues forth. [12] ***entouré***, surrounded. [13] ***indigent***, needy.

GENERAL RECAPITULATION EXERCISES.

The following lessons are nothing else than a kind of practical review of the course, under the form of change of person, or *transposition*. This happy idea belongs to Larousse, who, borrowing from various authors some anecdote or short story suitable to these exercises, gives it to the pupils, who are required to make the different changes of *number*, *gender*, and *person* in the various parts of speech affected by the transpositions. In this way the student not only learns the verbs thoroughly, but at the same time grasps forever the agreement of the possessive and demonstrative adjectives on the one hand, and of the possessive and demonstrative pronouns on the other, and comes to understand also the use of the conjunctive pronouns.

The student is required to translate the following extracts into English, and afterwards, in the class-room, make the indicated changes of number, gender, or person in French.

EXERCISE 48.

On Number.

L'ÉLÉPHANT.

L'intelligence de l'éléphant est très développée, et, comme avec cette qualité il a une force prodigieuse, s'il avait reçu de la nature l'amour de la domination, il aurait pu[1] facilement soumettre[2] à son empire les autres animaux, comme l'a fait l'homme.[3] Sa trompe, organe admirable, exécute tous les mouvements dont il éprouve[4] le besoin;. avec cette main, presque l'égale de celle de l'homme, il soulève[5] des fardeaux[6] énormes, et il les porte sans effort; il saisit aussi les plus petits objets; il les divise, il les réunit aussi bien que nous avec nos doigts. L'odorat[7] de l'éléphant, doué[8] d'une merveilleuse sensibilité, contribue encore à développer ses facultés;

---

[1] *pu* (p.p. of *pouvoir*, to be able), here, could have. [2] *soumettre*, to subdue, subjugate. [3] *l'homme* is here the subject. [4] *éprouve*, experiences. [5] *soulève*, lifts. [6] *fardeau* (m.), burden, load. [7] *odorat* (m.), the sense of smell. [8] *doué*, endowed.

il ne lui manque, en vérité, que la parole;[1] et sans doute pour ces raisons, il est devenu le symbole de la sagesse[2] et de la prudence. L'éléphant apprivoisé[3] sert[4] l'homme avec zèle,[5] avec fidélité, avec intelligence; mais il ne supporte point[6] de mauvais traitements,[7] et, quand il est victime de quelque injustice, il n'est pas résigné comme le chien, et sa force prodigieuse le rend alors tellement dangereux, qu'on est quelquefois obligé de le détruire.[8]

The pupil should put this exercise in the ***plural****, taking as title:*

LES ÉLÉPHANTS.

MODEL. L'intelligence des éléphants est très développée, et, comme avec cette qualité ils ont une force prodigieuse, etc.

EXERCISE 49.

On Number.

The pupil is required to translate the following into English, and afterwards make the ***transposition*** *in French as indicated below.*

LES HOMMES CHARITABLES.

Heureux les hommes qui ont fait[9] prendre racine[10] dans leur cœur à la bienfaisance! Leur charité est une source abondante qui jaillit[11] sur tous ceux dont ils sont entourés.[12] Ils sont attentifs aux besoins de l'indigent;[13] ils partagent avec les malheureux la fortune qu'ils ont reçue de la Providence. Ils pardonnent les injures, ils cherchent même à les effacer de

---

[1] ***parole*** (f.), power of speech. [2] ***sagesse*** (f.), wisdom. [3] ***apprivoisé***, tamed. [4] ***sert***, serves (3d pers. pl., ***servent***). [5] ***zèle*** (m.), zeal. [6] ***ne supporte point***, does not tolerate at all. [7] ***de mauvais traitements*** (m. pl.), ill treatment. [8] ***détruire***, to destroy. [9] This use of ***faire*** is idiomatic. Construe the sentence so as to make ***bienfaisance*** (benevolence) the direct object of ***fait***. [10] ***racine***, a root. [11] ***jaillit***, issues forth. [12] ***entouré***, surrounded. [13] ***indigent***, needy.

leur mémoire; ils ne haïssent personne et ne répondent aux outrages que par des avis pleins d'aménité.[1] La douleur des autres leur[2] inspire une sincère compassion; ils tâchent de diminuer le poids de leurs infortunes, et n'hésitent pas, à l'occasion, d'en[3] prendre une partie pour eux-mêmes. Ils ne connaissent[4] point les fureurs[5] de la dispute, et quand ils approchent de ceux que la colère enflamme,[6] leur présence seule suffit[7] souvent pour les rappeler[8] à la modération; ils préservent[9] l'union et la paix dans la maison qu'ils fréquentent,[10] ils gagnent[11] sans effort l'estime et l'amour de tout le monde; mais leur récompense est indépendante de cet amour même, car ils la trouvent dans leur propre cœur.

*The pupil should put the above in the **singular**, taking as title:*

L'HOMME CHARITABLE.

MODEL. Heureux l'homme qui a fait prendre racine dans son cœur à la bienfaisance! Sa charité est une source, etc.

EXERCISE 50.

On Gender.

*Translate into English and make the **transposition** in French.*

LE HIBOU.[12]

Comme tous les animaux nocturnes,[13] le hibou a les yeux très grands et la pupille[14] ronde; il ne peut supporter la lumière du jour et reste[15] caché dans quelque lieu obscur jusqu'au com-

---

[1] *aménité* (f.), kindliness. [2] *leur*, indirect object of *inspire*, should be translated, "in them." [3] *d'en*, of them. [4] *connaissent*, know. [5] *les fureurs*, the fury. [6] *que la colère enflamme*, whom anger inflames, who are incensed. [7] *suffit*, suffices. [8] *rappeler*, to recall. [9] *préservent*, maintain. [10] *fréquentent*, here, with the sense of visiting. [11] *gagnent*, win. [12] *hibou* (m.), owl. [13] *nocturne*, nocturnal. [14] *pupille* (f.), pupil (of the eye). [15] *reste*, remains.

mencement de la nuit. Il vit[1] d'insectes, d'oiseaux et de petits animaux; il est fort[2] adroit pour prendre les souris,[3] dont il est l'ennemi le plus redouté.[4] Lorsque les chasseurs tendent des lacets[5] dans le voisinage du trou[6] qu'il habite, il ne manque pas[7] d'aller les visiter et dévore sur place[8] les oiseaux qu'il trouve pris au piège.[9] Quand il parvient[10] à saisir et à tuer un oiseau libre, s'il n'est point pressé par la faim, il plume[11] sa victime et l'emporte dans son trou pour la manger plus tard. Lorsque, par quelque circonstance, les hiboux sont forcés, en plein jour,[12] de sortir de leur retraite, ils errent[13] en[14] aveugles, poussent[15] des cris de détresse[16] et sont, à leur tour, poursuivis[17] par les petits oiseaux qui les forcent à chercher un autre refuge.

The pupil should put the above in the ***feminine*** *under the title:*

LA CHOUETTE.[18]

MODEL. Comme tous les animaux nocturnes, la chouette a les yeux très grands et la pupille ronde; elle ne peut, etc.

EXERCISE 51.

On Gender.

Translate into English and make the ***transposition*** *in French.*

L'EMPEREUR ET LA PETITE PAYSANNE.[19]

Un puissant empereur, se promenant[20] hors de sa capitale, voit une petite paysanne qui tire à grand'peine[21] de l'eau d'un

---

[1] *vit*, lives. [2] *fort*, very. [3] *souris* (f.), mouse. [4] *redouté*, dreaded. [5] *tendent des lacets*, spread nets. [6] *trou* (m.), hole. [7] *ne manque pas*, does not fail. [8] *sur place*, on the spot. [9] *piège* (m.), snare. [10] *parvient*, succeeds. [11] *plume*, plucks. [12] *en plein jour*, in full daylight. [13] *errent* (from *errer*), wander. [14] *en*, here, means like. [15] *poussent*, utter. [16] *détresse* (f.), distress. [17] *poursuivis*, pursue. [18] *chouette* (f.), common brown owl. [19] *paysanne*, country girl. [20] *se promenant*, taking a walk. [21] *à grand'-peine* (idiomatic), with great difficulty.

puits;[1] elle paraît[2] haletante.[3] Le souverain,[4] qu'elle ne connaît[5] pas, lui demande qui elle est, ce qu'elle fait;[6] il paraît bon et compatissant.[7] "Je puise[8] de l'eau, comme vous voyez, répond la pauvre enfant; mon père a été valet de chambre à la cour, mais il n'a pas eu le bonheur d'obtenir une pension, et je dois le nourrir[9] avec le peu que je gagne."—"Venez demain à la cour," répond l'empereur; "j'y suis connu, et je tâcherai de vous être utile."—"Oh! mon cher monsieur," réplique la jeune fille, "vous serez refusé; l'empereur est un homme qui ôte[10] au lieu de donner; soyez seulement assez complaisant[11] pour m'aider à mettre[12] cette cruche[13] d'eau sur ma tête." Le souverain acquiesce[14] à sa demande, et, le lendemain,[15] il mande[16] la petite paysanne qui, reconnaissant[17] l'empereur dans celui à qui elle avait parlé la veille,[18] paraît[19] confuse et toute tremblante. "Rassurez-vous,[20] ma chère enfant," lui dit l'empereur avec douceur; "j'accorde[21] à votre père une pension de six florins par mois; mais désormais[22] parlez avec plus de respect et de justice d'un souverain qui n'a d'autre ambition que d'être le père de ses sujets."

The pupil should replace ***empereur*** *by* ***impératrice, paysanne*** *by* ***paysan,*** *and make all the changes which these alterations exact. He should take for title:*

L'IMPÉRATRICE ET LE PETIT PAYSAN.

MODEL. Une puissante impératrice, se promenant hors de sa capitale, voit un petit paysan qui tire à grand'peine, etc.

---

[1] ***puits*** (m.), well. [2] ***paraît***, appears. [3] ***haletant***, out of breath. [4] ***souverain*** (m.), sovereign. [5] ***connaît*** (pres. ind. of ***connaître***), knows. [6] ***fait***, is doing. [7] ***compatissant***, sympathetic. [8] ***puise***, draw (water). [9] ***nourrir***, lit. to feed; here, to keep. [10] ***ôte***, takes away. [11] ***complaisant***, kind. [12] ***mettre***, to put. [13] ***cruche*** (f.), pitcher. [14] ***acquiesce***, accedes (to). [15] ***lendemain*** (m.), morrow, next day. [16] ***mande***, he sends for. [17] ***reconnaissant*** (from ***reconnaître***), recognizing. [18] ***veille*** (f.), the day before. [19] ***paraît*** (pres. ind. of ***paraître***), appears. [20] ***rassurez-vous***, be reassured. [21] ***accorder***, to grant. [22] ***désormais***, henceforth.

EXERCISE 52.

On Person.

Translate the following and make the ***transposition*** *in French.*

RÉFLEXIONS PERSONNELLES D'UN ÉCOLIER.

Je trouve quelquefois que mes maîtres sont trop sévères; mais je suis peut-être injuste dans mes appréciations,[1] et si je connaissais[2] les motifs[3] qui les font agir, je serais peut-être obligé de reconnaître qu'ils ont raison. Plus d'une fois déjà j'ai remarqué quand le premier mouvement[4] de dépit[5] était calmé, que mes plaintes étaient injustes et que la punition qu'on m'avait infligée[6] n'était, après tout, qu'un acte de justice. Peut-être en[7] est-il toujours ainsi, et, au lieu de répondre d'une manière quelquefois peu respectueuse, je ferais[8] mieux de chercher à corriger mes défauts. Je suis trop pétulant;[9] j'accepte trop facilement quand on me propose[10] un bon tour[11] à jouer, une bonne partie de plaisir; je néglige alors mes devoirs, je les étudie trop vite et très mal. Ne suis-je pas dans mon tort[12] toutes les fois que cela m'arrive, et mes maîtres n'ont-ils pas raison de me mettre en retenue[13] et de me priver[14] ainsi du plaisir que j'avais voulu goûter[15] trop tôt?

The student should put the above extract in the ***first person plural*** *and* ***third person singular*** *and* ***plural, masculine*** *and* ***feminine****, taking as title:*

RÉFLEXIONS PERSONNELLES D'ÉCOLIERS.

MODEL. Nous trouvons quelquefois que nos maîtres sont trop sévères; mais nous sommes peut-être injustes dans nos, etc.

---

[1] ***appréciation*** (f.), opinion, estimate. [2] ***connaissais*** (from ***connaître***), knew. [3] ***motif*** (m.), motive. [4] ***mouvement*** (m.), here, impulse. [5] ***dépit*** (m.), spite, vexation. [6] ***infligé***, inflicted. [7] ***en*** is not translated. [8] ***je ferais***, I should do (better). [9] ***pétulant***, impetuous, cross. [10] ***on me propose:*** turn into the passive. [11] ***tour*** (m.), trick. [12] ***dans mon tort***, in ***the*** wrong. [13] ***retenue*** (f.), detention. [14] ***priver***, to deprive. [15] ***goûter***,

EXERCISE 53.

On Person.

Translate into English and make the transposition in French.

LE TASSE[1] RACONTE SA VIE.

Je suis né onze ans après la mort de l'Arioste,[1] le 11 mars 1544, près de Naples, à Sorrento. Mon père, homme distingué, m'a confié[2] à don Giovanni Angeluzzo, et j'ai fait sous lui les plus rapides progrès dans les langues grecque et latine, surtout[3] pendant mon séjour à Naples, au collège des Jésuites;[4] j'avais à peine dix ans, que je composais déjà en prose et en vers dans ma propre[5] langue; après avoir pris mes degrés en philosophie et en théologie, j'ai composé, à dix-sept ans, mon poème de *Renaud*, et ma *Jérusalem délivrée*[6] à vingt-deux. Je suis allé en France à la suite[7] du cardinal d'Est. De retour[8] en Italie, je suis devenu amoureux[9] de la sœur du duc de Ferrare.[10] Cette passion m'a attiré[11] de grands malheurs et est devenue la source de cette humeur[12] mélancolique qui m'a consumé pendant vingt années. Le reste de ma vie n'a plus été qu'une chaîne de calamités et d'humiliations. J'ai souffert[13] l'exil, la prison, la faim même; je suis parti de Ferrare, où le protecteur que j'avais tant célébré m'avait emprisonné.[14] Couvert[15] de haillons,[16] j'ai été forcé d'y revenir, et j'ai été de nouveau renfermé.[17] Ma gloire poétique[18] a été attaquée, la critique[19] a éclipsé un instant ma réputation. Mais, enfin,[20] après vingt ans de persécutions, j'ai été appelé à Rome par

---

[1] *Tasso* and *Ariosto*, two of the greatest poets of the Middle Ages, and the glory of Italian literature. [2] *confié*, confided. [3] *surtout*, especially. [4] *Jesuits*, a religious order of the Roman Catholic faith. [5] *propre*, own. [6] *délivré*, delivered. [7] *à la suite*, in the retinue. [8] *de retour*, on my return. [9] *amoureux*, in love. [10] *Ferraro*, a duchy in the north of the Italian peninsula. [11] *attiré*, drawn upon. [12] *humeur* (f.), mood. [13] *souffert*, suffered. [14] *emprisonné*, imprisoned. [15] *couvert*, covered. [16] *haillons* (m.), rags. [17] *renfermé*, shut up. [18] *poétique*, poetical. [19] *critique* (f.), criticism. [20] *enfin*, at length.

le pape[1] Clément VIII, qui avait résolu de me donner la couronne[2] de laurier[3] et les honneurs du triomphe.[4] Une brillante députation m'a conduit[5] à l'audience[6] du souverain pontife:[7] "Je désire, m'a-t-il dit, que vous honoriez[8] la couronne de laurier, qui a honoré jusqu'ici tous ceux qui l'ont portée."

Tout était préparé au Capitole[9] pour la cérémonie, lorsque, consumé d'ennuis[10] et épuisé[11] par mes souffrances physiques[12] et morales, jouet[13] de la fortune jusqu'à mon dernier moment, je suis mort la veille[14] de mon triomphe, le 25 avril 1595, à cinquante et un ans.

The pupil will change the above into the ***third person singular****, taking for title:*

LA VIE DU TASSE.

MODEL. Le Tasse est né onze ans après la mort de l'Arioste, le 11 mars 1544, près de Naples, à Sorrento. Son père, homme distingué, l'a confié, etc.

EXERCISE 54.

On Person.

Translate into English and make the ***transposition*** *in French.*

LA RELIGION.

Quel empire la religion exerce[15] sur l'homme! Que de vertus elle procure aux mortels! Combien elle rend heureux celui qu'elle pénètre de ses vérités![16] Elle lui donne un asile[17] contre le vice, un refuge contre le malheur. Tant que nous avons des jours sans nuage, elle les embellit encore. Elle ajoute un nou-

---

[1] *pape* (m.), Pope. [2] *couronne* (f.), crown, wreath. [3] *laurier* (m.), laurel. [4] *triomphe* (m.), triumph. [5] *conduit*, conducted, led. [6] *audience* (f.), presence. [7] *pontife* (m.), pontiff. [8] *honoriez*, should honor. [9] The Capitol of Rome. [10] *ennuis* (m. pl.), torments, troubles. [11] *épuisé*, exhausted. [12] *souffrances physiques* (f.), physical sufferings. [13] *jouet* (m.), plaything, sport. [14] *veille* (f.), day before. [15] *exerce*, exercises. [16] *vérité* (f.), truth. [17] *asile* (m.), asylum, refuge.

veau plaisir au bien que nous avons fait à nos semblables. Sa sévérité même est un bienfait.[1] Elle ne retranche[2] du bonheur autre chose que ce qui pourrait[3] le corrompre.[4] Elle ne défend[5] de chérir autre chose que ce qu'on rougirait d'aimer. Si le corps possède, au contraire, une âme soumise[6] à ses lois saintes,[7] elle lui prête le plus ferme appui.[8] Sans prescrire[9] l'insensibilité, elle nous apprend[10] à surmonter[11] les maux dont nous souffrons.[12] Elle descend dans les cœurs déchirés,[13] elle calme leurs douleurs aiguës,[14] elle leur présente un dernier espoir et prend bien garde[15] d'éteindre[16] ce pur sentiment qui les fait souffrir[17] et qui les fait vivre.[18]

The student should put the above extract in the ***second person singular.***

MODEL. O religion, quel empire tu exerces sur l'homme! Que de vertus tu procures aux mortels! etc.

EXERCISE 55.

On Person.

Translate the following exercise into English and make the ***transposition*** *in French.*

AVEUX[19] D'UN COUPABLE.[20]

J'ai été élevé dans une famille honnête, où je n'ai reçu que de bons conseils et de bons exemples. Malheureusement, j'ai toujours eu peu de goût pour le travail, et ma paresse, que mes parents ont cherché vainement à corriger, leur a causé, dans

---

[1] *bienfait* (m.), benefit. [2] *retranche*, cuts off. [3] *pourrait* (conditional of *pouvoir*, to be able). Translate simply "could" or "might." [4] *corrompre*, corrupt. [5] *défend*, forbids. [6] *soumis* (p.p. of *soumettre*, to submit). Translate "submissive" or "subject." [7] *saint*, sacred, holy. [8] *appui* (m.), support. [9] *prescrire*, to prescribe. [10] *apprend*, learns; here, teaches. [11] *surmonter*, to overcome. [12] *souffrons*, we suffer. [13] *déchiré*, lit. torn; here, broken. [14] *aigu* (adj.), acute, intense. [15] *prend garde*, here, takes care not to. [16] *éteindre*, to extinguish. [17] *souffrir*, to suffer. [18] *vivre*, to live. [19] *aveu* (m.), confession, avowal. [20] *coupable* (m.), guilty one, culprit.

mon enfance même, de vifs[1] chagrins.[2] Après avoir perdu mon père, il a fallu[3] gagner ma vie.[4] Comme je n'avais pas d'état j'ai trouvé bien rude[5] l'obligation de subvenir[6] moi-même à tous mes besoins. Des camarades aussi paresseux que moi m'ont entraîné[7] à des dépenses qui dépassaient[8] de beaucoup mes moyens[9]; l'attrait[10] du plaisir m'a fait[11] fermer les yeux, j'ai contracté des dettes, et, quand j'ai été forcé de satisfaire[12] aux réclamations pressantes[13] de mes créanciers,[14] j'ai eu recours[15] à des moyens déshonnêtes pour me procurer l'argent que mon travail ne pouvait[16] me fournir. J'ai étouffé[17] les remords[18] de ma conscience, et j'ai glissé[19] sur la pente[20] rapide du vice.

The pupil should put the above in the ***second person plural,*** *leaving the adjectives and participles in the singular, under the title:*

REPROCHES À UN COUPABLE.

MODEL. Vous avez été élevé dans une famille honnête, où vous n'avez reçu que de bons conseils et de bons exemples, etc.

EXERCISE 56.

On Person.

Translate the following into English and afterwards make the ***transposition*** *in French:*

L'ÉLÉPHANT.

Je suis le plus gros des quadrupèdes; j'habite les climats chauds de l'Asie et de l'Afrique, et j'aime les forêts épaisses.[21]

---

[1] ***vif***, keen. [2] Translate in the singular. [3] ***fallu***, was necessary. [4] ***vie*** (f.), here, livelihood. [5] ***rude***, rough, irksome. [6] ***subvenir***, to provide for. [7] ***entraîné***, lead into. [8] ***dépassaient***, were exceeding. [9] ***moyens***, means. [10] ***attrait*** (m.), bait, attraction. [11] ***a fait***, made (from ***faire***). [12] ***satisfaire*** (***à***), to satisfy. [13] ***réclamation pressante***, pressing demand (claim). [14] ***créancier*** (m.), creditor. [15] ***recours*** (m.), recourse. [16] ***ne pouvait***, could not. [17] ***étouffé***, stifled. [18] ***remords*** (m.), remorse. [19] ***glissé***, slipped, slidden. [20] ***pente*** (***f.***), slope, incline, down grade. [21] ***épaisse***, dense.

veau plaisir au bien que nous avons fait à nos semblables. Sa sévérité même est un bienfait.[1] Elle ne retranche[2] du bonheur autre chose que ce qui pourrait[3] le corrompre.[4] Elle ne défend[5] de chérir autre chose que ce qu'on rougirait d'aimer. Si le corps possède, au contraire, une âme soumise[6] à ses lois saintes,[7] elle lui prête le plus ferme appui.[8] Sans prescrire[9] l'insensibilité, elle nous apprend[10] à surmonter[11] les maux dont nous souffrons.[12] Elle descend dans les cœurs déchirés,[13] elle calme leurs douleurs aiguës,[14] elle leur présente un dernier espoir et prend bien garde[15] d'éteindre[16] ce pur sentiment qui les fait souffrir[17] et qui les fait vivre.[18]

The student should put the above extract in the ***second person singular.***

MODEL. O religion, quel empire tu exerces sur l'homme! Que de vertus tu procures aux mortels! etc.

EXERCISE 55.

On Person.

Translate the following exercise into English and make the ***transposition*** *in French.*

AVEUX[19] D'UN COUPABLE.[20]

J'ai été élevé dans une famille honnête, où je n'ai reçu que de bons conseils et de bons exemples. Malheureusement, j'ai toujours eu peu de goût pour le travail, et ma paresse, que mes parents ont cherché vainement à corriger, leur a causé, dans

---

[1] ***bienfait*** (m.), benefit. [2] ***retranche,*** cuts off. [3] ***pourrait*** (conditional of ***pouvoir,*** to be able). Translate simply "could" or "might." [4] ***corrompre,*** corrupt. [5] ***défend,*** forbids. [6] ***soumis*** (p.p. of ***soumettre,*** to submit). Translate "submissive" or "subject." [7] ***saint,*** sacred, holy. [8] ***appui*** (m.), support. [9] ***prescrire,*** to prescribe. [10] ***apprend,*** learns; here, teaches. [11] ***surmonter,*** to overcome. [12] ***souffrons,*** we suffer. [13] ***déchiré,*** lit. torn; here, broken. [14] ***aigu*** (adj.), acute, intense. [15] ***prend garde,*** here, takes care not to. [16] ***éteindre,*** to extinguish. [17] ***souffrir,*** to suffer. [18] ***vivre,*** to live. [19] ***aveu*** (m.), confession, avowal. [20] ***coupable*** (m.), guilty one, culprit.

mon enfance même, de vifs[1] chagrins.[2] Après avoir perdu mon père, il a fallu[3] gagner ma vie.[4] Comme je n'avais pas d'état j'ai trouvé bien rude[5] l'obligation de subvenir[6] moi-même à tous mes besoins. Des camarades aussi paresseux que moi m'ont entraîné[7] à des dépenses qui dépassaient[8] de beaucoup mes moyens[9]; l'attrait[10] du plaisir m'a fait[11] fermer les yeux, j'ai contracté des dettes, et, quand j'ai été forcé de satisfaire[12] aux réclamations pressantes[13] de mes créanciers,[14] j'ai eu recours[15] à des moyens déshonnêtes pour me procurer l'argent que mon travail ne pouvait[16] me fournir. J'ai étouffé[17] les remords[18] de ma conscience, et j'ai glissé[19] sur la pente[20] rapide du vice.

The pupil should put the above in the ***second person plural,*** *leaving the adjectives and participles in the singular, under the title:*

REPROCHES À UN COUPABLE.

MODEL. Vous avez été élevé dans une famille honnête, où vous n'avez reçu que de bons conseils et de bons exemples, etc.

EXERCISE 56.

On Person.

Translate the following into English and afterwards make the ***transposition*** *in French:*

L'ÉLÉPHANT.

Je suis le plus gros des quadrupèdes; j'habite les climats chauds de l'Asie et de l'Afrique, et j'aime les forêts épaisses.[21]

---

[1] ***vif***, keen. [2] Translate in the singular. [3] ***fallu***, was necessary. [4] ***vie*** (f.), here, livelihood. [5] ***rude***, rough, irksome. [6] ***subvenir***, to provide for. [7] ***entraîné***, lead into. [8] ***dépassaient***, were exceeding. [9] ***moyens***, means. [10] ***attrait*** (m.), bait, attraction. [11] ***a fait***, made (from ***faire***). [12] ***satisfaire*** (à), to satisfy. [13] ***réclamation pressante***, pressing demand (claim). [14] ***créancier*** (m.), creditor. [15] ***recours*** (m.), recourse. [16] ***ne pouvait***, could not. [17] ***étouffé***, stifled. [18] ***remords*** (m.), remorse. [19] ***glissé***, slipped, slidden. [20] ***pente*** (f.), slope, incline, down grade. [21] ***épaisse***, dense.

Mes jambes informes[1] soutiennent[2] un corps épais et sans souplesse.[3] Mes yeux sont petits en comparaison de ma taille[4] énorme, tandis que mes larges oreilles ombragent[5] les deux côtés de ma tête. Ce qu'il y a de plus extraordinaire en moi, c'est que mon nez a plusieurs pieds de longueur. Mais, formé avec si peu d'élégance, je suis doué d'une grande intelligence et de beaucoup d'adresse.[6] Ce nez si long me sert de[7] main. À l'aide de cet organe, je pare[8] à tous mes besoins, puise de l'eau, cueille[9] les herbes et les fleurs, dénoue[10] les cordes, ouvre et ferme les portes, débouche[11] les bouteilles, ramasse[12] la plus petite pièce de monnaie; en un mot, j'exécute presque tout ce que l'homme fait avec ses doigts. Cette trompe m'est indispensable; car, n'ayant pour ainsi dire point de cou,[13] il m'est impossible de baisser[14] la tête jusqu'à terre. Quand j'ai soif, je remplis d'eau cette trompe et bois[15] ensuite* comme si je vidais[16] une bouteille. Je mange environ cent cinquante livres d'herbe par jour.

Ce qui me distingue encore, ce sont deux énormes dents, qui sortent[17] de ma bouche de chaque côté de la trompe et qu'on appelle défenses; elles sont légèrement recourbées[18] et en pointe.[19] Ces défenses sont des armes terribles qui font peur[20] aux plus féroces[21] animaux.

Put the above exercise in the ***third person plural,*** *taking as title:*

LES ÉLÉPHANTS.[22]

MODEL. Les éléphants sont les plus gros des quadrupèdes; ils habitent les climats chauds de l'Asie et de l'Afrique, etc.

---

[1] *informe*, shapeless. [2] *soutiennent*, sustain, support. [3] *souplesse* (f.), suppleness. [4] *taille* (f.), stature. [5] *ombragent*, shade. [6] *adresse* (f.), cleverness. [7] *sert de*, serves as. [8] *pare*, here, provide. [9] *cueille*, gather. [10] *dénoue*, untie. [11] *débouche*, uncork. [12] *ramasse*, pick up. [13] *cou* (m.), neck. [14] *baisser*, to lower. [15] *je bois, ils boivent* (pres. ind. of *boire*, to drink). [16] *comme si je vidais*, as if I were emptying. [17] *sortent* (pres. ind. of *sortir*, to go out), here, issue. [18] *recourbé*, bent back. [19] *en pointe*, pointed. [20] *faire peur à*, lit. to cause to fear, to make afraid. [21] *féroce*, fierce, ferocious. [22] Note that there is here a double transposition of person and of number. * *ensuite*, then.

EXERCISE 57.

On the Interrogative Negative.

Translate the following exercise into English and make the transposition in French.

AVANTAGES DE LA PROPRETÉ.[1]

Parmi les soins que l'on donne au corps, il en est qui, comme la propreté, ont une influence morale peu sensible en apparence,[2] mais très réelle. La propreté sur la personne, dans les vêtements, est l'une des règles les plus certaines de l'hygiène; elle prévient[3] une foule de maladies; elle conserve la fraîcheur,[4] elle facilite le jeu de tous les organes; elle entretient aussi les idées de décence,[5] les habitudes d'ordre; elle concourt[6] à inspirer le respect que l'homme doit[7] à lui-même; elle l'accoutume à la vigilance sur soi;[8] elle commande la modération, l'attention, la retenue[9] en beaucoup de choses; elle dispose[10] au travail, elle répand une certaine sérénité dans l'esprit, elle offre l'image sensible[11] de la pureté intérieure, de l'innocence; elle est aussi une preuve[12] d'égards[13] pour les autres; elle plaît,[14] elle attire, elle facilite le commerce[15] de la vie; elle est un lien[16] de sociabilité.[17] La propreté peut être observée dans toutes les situations; il y a une propreté compatible avec la pauvreté elle-même.

The pupil should put the above extract in the ***interrogative negative*** *form.*

MODEL. Parmi les soins que l'on donne au corps, n'en est-il pas qui, comme la propreté, ont une influence morale, etc.

---

[1] ***propreté*** (f.), cleanliness. [2] ***peu sensible en apparence***, little apparent. [3] ***prévient***, prevents. [4] ***fraîcheur*** (f.), freshness. [5] ***décence*** (f.), decency. [6] ***concourt***, contributes. [7] ***doit***, owes. [8] ***sur soi***, here, upon one's self. [9] ***retenue*** (f.), restraint. [10] ***dispose***, acts as an incentive. [11] ***sensible***, visible, perceptible. [12] ***preuve*** (f.), proof. [13] ***égards*** (m. pl.), consideration, regard. [14] ***plaît***, pleases. [15] ***commerce*** (m.), here, relations. [16] ***lien*** (m.), bond. [17] ***sociabilité*** (f.), social intercourse.

EXERCISE 58.

On the Interrogative Negative.

Translate the following into English and make the transposition in French.

UTILITÉ[1] DES MONTAGNES.

Tu me demandes à quoi servent les montagnes : elles *servent* à entretenir et à perpétuer les différentes sources qui forment les rivières et les fleuves. Le froid, qui règne éternellement sur leurs sommets, *condense* les vapeurs, les *change* en neige et les *ménage*[2] avec économie pour rafraîchir et désaltérer[3] la terre pendant les chaleurs brûlantes de l'été. Leur surface[4] *attire, arrête, absorbe* les nuages que les vents promènent[5] au sein[6] de l'atmosphère. Les espaces[7] qui séparent leurs pointes *sont* comme des bassins[8] préparés pour recevoir les brouillards épaissis,[9] les nuées[10] précipitées[11] en pluie ou en neige. Leurs entrailles[12] *sont* autant de réservoirs d'où les eaux jaillissent peu à peu par une infinité de petites ouvertures.[13] À ces avantages que nous procurent les montagnes, il *faut* y en ajouter beaucoup d'autres non moins sensibles. Elles *sont* la demeure de plusieurs espèces d'animaux utiles. Des arbres *croissent*[14] sur leurs flancs,[15] ainsi qu'un nombre infini[16] de plantes salutaires[17] qu'on ne cultive pas avec le même succès dans les plaines. Les montagnes *mettent*[18] certaines contrées[19] à l'abri[18] des vents froids et piquants.[20] Nous leur *devons* les vins les plus exquis.[21] Leur sein *renferme*[22] les pierres les plus précieuses.

---

[1] *utilité* (f.), use, usefulness. [2] *ménage*, saves up. [3] *désaltérer*, to quench the thirst of; here, to water, irrigate. [4] *surface* (f.), surface. [5] *promènent*, here, propel, lead along. [6] *sein* (m.), bosom. [7] *espace* (m.), space. [8] *bassin* (m.), basin. [9] *épaissi*, condensed. [10] *nuée* (f.), cloud. [11] *précipiter*, to precipitate. [12] *entrailles* (f. pl.), entrails, bowels. [13] *ouverture* (f.), opening. [14] *croissent*, grow. [15] *flanc* (m.), side, slope. [16] *infini*, infinite. [17] *salutaire*, wholesome. [18] *mettent . . . à l'abri*, shelter. [19] *contrée* (f.), district. [20] *piquant*, piercing. [21] *exquis*, exquisite. [22] *renferme*, incloses.

Elles *garantissent*[1] souvent des pays entiers de la fureur des mers et des tempêtes. Posées[2] par la nature comme des espèces[3] de remparts,[4] elles *sont* les bornes[5] des différents États et en *défendent* plusieurs contre l'invasion de l'ennemi et l'ambition des conquérants. En un mot, depuis le moindre grain de sable[6] jusqu'aux plus hautes montagnes, tout *est* calculé, combiné, tout *est* en harmonie. Et, sur les hauteurs comme dans les lieux profonds, au-dessus de la terre comme dans son sein, Dieu se[7] *montre* sans cesse un bienfaiteur libéral et magnifique.

The pupil should put the verbs in Italics of the above exercise in the interrogative negative.

MODEL. Tu me demandes à quoi servent les montagnes: ne servent-elles pas à entretenir et à perpétuer les différentes, etc.

EXERCISE 59.

On the Imperative.

***Translate** the following exercise into English and make the **transposition** in French.*

CONSEILS AUX ÉCOLIERS.

Quand vos maîtres vous expliquent les principes de la science, écoutez leurs leçons avec toute l'attention dont vous êtes capables. Si vos camarades sont dissipés,[8] laissez-les perdre leur temps, et songez[9] uniquement[10] à faire un bon usage[11] du vôtre. Quand l'heure de la récréation est arrivée, livrez-vous[12] avec ardeur aux jeux qui conviennent[13] à votre

---

[1] *garantissent*, guarantee. [2] *posé*, placed. [3] *espèce* (f.), kind. [4] *rempart* (m.), bulwark, rampart. [5] *borne* (f.), limit, border. [6] *sable* (m.), sand. [7] *se*, himself. [8] *dissipé*, inattentive. [9] *songez*, dream; here, think how. [10] *uniquement*, solely. [11] *usage* (m.), use. [12] *livrez-vous*, give yourself up. [13] *conviennent*, are suitable.

âge; le plaisir que vous prenez alors est utile non seulement pour développer vos organes corporels,[1] mais aussi pour délasser[2] votre esprit et lui donner toute la vigueur nécessaire pour reprendre bientôt le cours de vos études. N'exercez pas seulement votre intelligence, mais cherchez aussi à cultiver votre mémoire; apprenez avec soin les plus beaux passages de nos poètes et de nos orateurs, repassez-les[3] de temps en temps, pour ne pas les oublier; une mémoire si bien garnie[4] sera pour vous le plus riche trésor,[5] et vous aurez souvent l'occasion de faire un heureux emploi de ces richesses.

The pupil should put the above exercise in the first person plural of the imperative, under the title:

LES ÉCOLIERS STUDIEUX.

MODEL. Quand nos maîtres nous expliquent les principes de la science, écoutons leurs leçons avec toute l'attention, etc.

EXERCISE 60.

On the Imperative.

Translate the following and make the transposition in French.

APHORISMES MORAUX.[6]

L'homme sage réfléchit et considère pourquoi il a été créé. Il contemple ses facultés, envisage[7] tous ses besoins, réfléchit sur tout ce qui l'environne;[8] c'est par là qu'il sera instruit[9] des devoirs de la vie et qu'il trouvera une règle sûre pour le conduire. Il n'ouvre[10] point la bouche et il n'agit point sans

---

[1] *corporel*, bodily. [2] *délasser*, to relax. [3] *repassez*, review. [4] *garnir*, here, to store. [5] *trésor* (m.), treasure. [6] *aphorismes moraux*, moral aphorisms. [7] *envisage*, confronts. [8] *environne*, surround. [9] *instruit*, instructed; here, he will learn. [10] *ouvre*, open.

mûrement[1] peser ses paroles et les conséquences de chacun de ses actes. Il n'a pas confiance en ses propres lumières; il pèse les conseils d'un ami et ne rougit point de reconnaître ses erreurs quand il en a commis.[2] Il détourne[3] son oreille des louanges exagérées et ne[4] loue lui-même dans les autres que[4] ce qui lui paraît réellement digne d'éloge.[5] Il n'est point égoïste;[6] en cherchant ce qui lui est avantageux,[7] il n'oublie jamais que les autres hommes ont les mêmes droits que lui et qu'il ne lui est pas permis de sacrifier leur bonheur au sien propre.[8] Il trouve quelquefois sa gloire, au contraire, à immoler[9] ses propres intérêts[10] pour assurer le bien général.

The pupil should put the above extract in the ***second person singular of the imperative****, taking as title:*

PRÉCEPTES[11] MORAUX.

MODEL. Réfléchis et considère pourquoi tu as été créé. Contemple tes facultés, envisage tous tes besoins, etc.

---

[1] *mûrement*, lit. ripely; here, thoroughly. [2] *commis*, committed. [3] *détourne*, turns away. [4] *ne . . . que*, only. [5] *éloge* (m.), praise, eulogium. [6] *égoïste*, selfish. [7] *avantageux*, advantageous. [8] *le sien propre*, his own. [9] Translate *il trouve sa gloire à immoler*, he makes his glory consist in immolating (sacrificing); or better, he glories in sacrificing. [10] *intérêt* (m.), interest. [11] *précepte* (m.), precept.

SECTION IV.

APPENDIX.

SYNTAX.

The Articles at a Glance.

		Singular.				Plural.
		Before a consonant or h aspirate.		Before a vowel or h mute.		Before all nouns.
		Masc.	*Fem.*	*Both genders.*		*Both genders.*
Definite.	*the*	le	la	l'		les
	of, from the	du	de la	de l'		des
	to, at the	au	à la	à l'		aux
				Masc.	*Fem.*	
Indefinite.	*a, an*	un	une	un	une	——
	of or *from a, an*	d'un	d'une	d'un	d'une	——
	to, at a, an	à un	à une	à un	à une	——
Partitive.	*some* / *any*	Before a noun: du	de la	de l'		des
		Before an adjective or with a negative: de (*or* d')				

The definite article is employed in French, and not in English: —

(*a*) Before all nouns used in a *general* sense, or which designate a whole *species*.

Ex. — *Les lois doivent être respectées. L'homme est mortel.*

(*b*) Before adjectives used substantively.

Ex. — *Le bleu est la couleur de l'espérance.*

(*c*) Before titles followed by the name.

Ex. — *Le maréchal de Mac-Mahon est mort en 1893.*

The partitive article must be repeated before each noun.*

Ex. — *J'ai acheté du pain, de la viande, de l'eau, et des abricots.*

A relic of the old French survives in the word **ès**, employed in the titles of university degrees. It is simply a contraction of **dans les** (*in the*). It occurs in the following titles: —

bachelier ès lettres, B.A. *bachelier ès sciences*, B.Sc.
licencié ès lettres, ès sciences, licentiate in arts, in science.
maître ès arts, A.M.
docteur ès lettres, LL.D. *docteur ès sciences*, doctor of science.

The Noun or Substantive.

Gender.

Albitès, in his work entitled "French Genders Conquered," gives the following rule, which experience has proved to be the best, for determining the gender of nouns which do not refer to males or females.

Nouns with one of the following terminations are fem.: —

ale, ole, ule;	*be, ce, de;*	*ure, ère, eur;*	*fe, ne, pe;*
rre, lle, ie;	*se, te, té* and *tié;*	*ée, ue, ion;*	*ve, he, aison.*

Ex. — *cathédrale, école, nature, faveur, conversation, robe, canne, ombrelle, poche, cravate, beauté, maison,* etc.

Only the termination *be* has been shown to be unsatisfactory, there being an equal number of masc. nouns with that ending.

Nouns having none of the above terminations are masculine.

---

* For cases not mentioned above, and for the omission of the article, see Course II.

Formation of the Feminine, in Nouns representing Animate Beings.

General Rule. — The feminine is formed by adding **e** mute to the masculine.

ours, *a bear.*	ourse, *a she bear.*

But nouns ending in **en** and **on** double the **n** and then add **e**.

baron, *baron.*	baronne, *baroness.*
chrétien, *Christian*	chrétienne, *Christian.*
lion, *lion.*	lionne, *lioness.*

Nouns already ending in **e** mute do not change.

un esclave,	une esclave,	*a slave.*
un Belge,	une Belge,	*a Belgian.*
un malade,	une malade,	*a sick person.*
un mulâtre,	une mulâtre,*	*a mulatto.*
un poète,	une poète,*	*a poet.*

A few exceptions exist, however, the chief of which are, —

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
âne, *ass.*	ânesse, *she ass.*
comte, *count, earl.*	comtesse, *countess.*
hôte, *host.*	hôtesse, *hostess.*
maître, *master.*	maîtresse, *mistress.*
nègre, *negro.*	négresse, *negress.*
prêtre, *priest.*	prêtresse, *priestess.*
prince, *prince.*	princesse, *princess.*
prophète, *prophet.*	prophétesse, *prophetess.*
tigre, *tiger.*	tigresse, *tigress.*
traître, *traitor.*	traîtresse, *traitress.*

The three following nouns, also forming their feminine in **esse**, should be remembered: —

abbé, *abbot.*	abbesse, *abbess.*
dieu, *god.*	déesse, *goddess.*
duc, *duke.*	duchesse, *duchess.*

---

* One may say also *mulâtresse* and *poétesse*, in the feminine (Acad.).

Substantives ending in **eur**, derived from a present participle, change the **eur** into **euse**.

danseur,	danseuse,	*dancer.*
chanteur,	chanteuse,	*singer.*
plaideur,	plaideuse,	*suitor.*
vendeur,	vendeuse,	*seller.*

Some, however, change the **eur** into **eresse**.

pécheur,	*sinner*,	pécheresse.
enchanteur,	*enchanter*,	enchanteresse, *enchantress.*
défendeur,	*defendant*,	défenderesse.
demandeur,	*plaintiff*,	demanderesse.

Substantives ending in **teur**, not formed from a present participle, change **teur** into **trice**; such as, —

acteur,	*actor*,	actrice, *actress.*
consolateur,	*comforter*,	consolatrice.
instituteur,	*teacher*,	institutrice.
protecteur,	*protector*,	protectrice.
tuteur,	*guardian*,	tutrice.
exécuteur,	*executor*,	exécutrice.
inspecteur,	*inspector*,	inspectrice.
débiteur,	*debtor*,	débitrice.
persécuteur,	*persecutor*,	persécutrice.
inventeur,	*inventor*,	inventrice.

Chanteur has a feminine form, **cantatrice**, which is applied only to professional singers. **Empereur** forms the feminine **impératrice**.

Most of the foregoing substantives are also used as adjectives.

Nearly all names of animals having two gender forms take an irregular feminine.

le bélier, *the ram.*	la brebis, *the ewe.*
le bœuf, *the ox.*	la vache, *the cow.*
le bouc, *the he goat.*	la chèvre, *the she goat.*
le chat, *the tomcat.*	la chatte, *the cat.*
le cheval, *the horse.*	la jument, *the mare.*
le coq, *the rooster.*	la poule, *the hen.*

le cochon, *the pig, hog.*	la coche / la truie, *the sow.*
le canard, *the drake.*	la cane, *the duck.*
le dindon, *the turkey.*	la dinde, *the turkey hen.*
le loup, *the wolf.*	la louve, *the she wolf.*
le mulet, *the mule.*	la mule, *the she mule.*
le perroquet, *the parrot.*	la perruche, *the parrot.*
le sanglier, *the wild boar.*	la laie, *the female boar.*
le singe, *the monkey.*	la guenon, *the female monkey.*

Some of the names of animals have but one form for the two genders. Such are, —

Masculine.

le buffle, *the buffalo.*	le hibou, *the owl.*
le castor, *the beaver.*	le léopard, *the leopard.*
le chameau, *the camel.*	le merle, *the blackbird.*
le cigne, *the swan.*	le renne, *the reindeer.*
l'écureuil, *the squirrel.*	le requin, *the shark.*
l'éléphant, *the elephant.*	le rossignol, *the nightingale.*
le hareng, *the herring.*	le saumon, *the salmon.*

le vautour, *the vulture.*

Feminine.

une alouette, *a lark.*	une mouche, *a fly.*
une araignée, *a spider.*	une panthère, a *panther.*
une baleine, *a whale.*	une perdrix, *a partridge.*
une cigogne, *a stork.*	une pie, *a magpie.*
une fauvette, *a warbler.*	une souris, *a mouse.*
une hirondelle, *a swallow.*	une tortue, *a tortoise.*

Should it be necessary to distinguish between the sex of any of these animals, we add to the noun the word **mâle** or **femelle**.

Ex. — *La cigogne mâle,* the male stork ; *le cygne femelle,* the female swan.

Nouns denoting professions are almost invariably used for both genders, but all adjectives agreeing with them stand in the *masculine.* The following are those most frequently in use : —

auteur, *author.*	écrivain, *writer.*	philosophe, *philosopher.*
chef, *chief.*	guide, *guide.*	poète, *poet.*
docteur, *doctor.*	peintre, *painter.*	professeur, *professor.*

To which may be added, —

amateur,* *amateur.*	partisan,* *partisan.*
artisan,* *artisan.*	possesseur, *possessor.*
censeur, *censor.*	sauveur, *savior.*
défenseur, *defender.*	successeur, *successor.*
grognon, *grumbler.*	témoin, *witness.*
imposteur, *impostor.*	traducteur,* *translator.*

Formation of the Plural of Nouns.

General Rule. — French substantives generally form their plurals by adding **s** (Lesson II., Rule 2).

Ex. — *La rivière,* the river, *les rivières; le dindon,* the turkey, *les dindons.*

Substantives ending in **s**, **x**, and **z**, do not change (Lesson XI.).

Ex. — *Le vers,* the verse, *les vers; le choix,* the choice, *les choix; le nez,* the nose, *les nez.*

Substantives ending in **au** and **eu** take **x**.

Ex. — *Le tuyau,* the pipe, stem, *les tuyaux; le feu,* the fire, *les feux; le chameau,* the camel, *les chameaux.*

Substantives ending in **al** change **al** into **aux**.

Ex. — *Le canal,* the canal, *les canaux; le rival,* the rival, *les rivaux.*

However, a few nouns in **al** conform to the general rule, —

le bal, *the ball.*	le festival, *the festival.*
le cal, *the callosity.*	le pal, *the stake (punishment).*
le carnaval, *the carnival.*	le régal, *the treat, feast.*
le chacal, *the jackal.*	le serval, *the tiger cat.*

Ex. — *Les bals, les carnavals, les régals,* etc.

---

* Though the nouns marked * are given in the *Dictionnaire de l'Académie* as being used for both genders, yet in good authors the following feminine forms frequently occur: —

amatrice, artisane, partisane, traductrice.

Six substantives ending in **ail** change **ail** into **aux**.

le bail,	*the lease*,	les baux.
le corail,	*the coral*,	les coraux.
l'émail,	*the enamel*,	les émaux.
le soupirail,	*the air hole*,	les soupiraux.
le travail,	*the work*,	les travaux.
le vitrail,	*the stained-glass window*,	les vitraux.*

bétail, *cattle*, becomes bestiaux.

Seven substantives add an **x** to their ending **ou**.

le bijou, *the jewel.*
le caillou, *the flint.*
le chou, *the cabbage.*
le genou, *the knee.*
le hibou, *the owl.*
le joujou, *the toy.*
le pou, *the louse.*

Ex. — *Les cailloux*, the flints; *les hiboux*, the owls; etc.

The following nouns have *two plurals*, — one regular, the other irregular. Curiously enough, except in the case of **aïeul**, it is the irregular plural which preserves the true meaning of the word; the regular having some peculiar signification.

Ex. — *L'aïeul*, the grandfather; *les aïeuls*, the grandfathers; *les aïeux*, the ancestors.

Le ciel, the sky, heaven; *les ciels*, the skies (in pictures, and of bed testers); *les cieux*, the heavens.

L'œil, the eye; *les œils*,† things like eyes; *les yeux*, the eyes.

Le travail, the work; *les travails*, brakes for shoeing vicious horses; *les travaux*, the works.

Foreign words remain invariable; such as, —

des fac-similé, (*some*) *facsimiles.*
des errata, *errata* (*errors in print*).
des veto, *vetoes.*
des cicerone, *cicerones* (*guides*).
des accessit,‡ *honorable mention.*
des Pater, *Paternosters.*
des post-scriptum, *postscripts.*
des Te Deum, *Te Deums.*

---

* Used generally in the plural.

† **œils** is used in compound nouns; as, *œils-de bœuf*, oval windows; *œils-de-chat*, cat's-eyes, agate; *œils de-perdrix*, soft corns.

‡ Some grammarians put an *s* in the plural; but in both cases the *t* must be sounded.

Many, however, having become thoroughly French, through long use in the language, take the plural sign of **s**.

des alibis, *alibis*.
des albums, *albums*.
des examens, *examinations*.
des impromptus, *impromptus*.
des numéros, *numbers*.
des opéras, *operas*.
des pensums, *impositions* (*school*).
des specimens, *specimens*.
des zéros, *zeros*, *naughts*.

A few nouns are used in the plural only;* the chief are, —

alentours, environs (m.), *the neighborhood, vicinity*.
annales (f.), *annals*.
archives (f.), *archives*, *records*.
armoiries (f.), *armorial bearings*.
assises (f.), *assizes*, *sessions*.
dépens (m.), *expenses*, *law-costs*.
fiançailles (f.), *betrothal*.
frais (m.), *costs*.
funérailles (f.), *funeral*, *obsequies*.
lunettes (f.), *spectacles*, *glasses*.
matériaux (m.), *materials*.
mœurs (f.), *customs*, *habits*.
ténèbres (f.), *darkness*.

The Adjective: its Agreement.

Formation of Feminine.

General Rule. — Adjectives, like nouns, form their feminine by adding **e** *mute* to the masculine (Lesson VII., Rule 8).

Ex. — *Gai*, *gaie*, merry; *vaillant*, *vaillante*, valiant.

Adjectives ending already in **e** *mute* do not change.

Ex. — *Sauvage*, *sauvage*, savage, wild.

Adjectives ending in **el**, **en**, **on**, **eil**, and **et**, double the final consonant before adding the **e** *mute*. (*Complet*, *concret*, *discret*, *inquiet*, *replet*, and *secret* are exceptions: *complète*, *concrète*, etc.)

Ex. — *Sujet*, *sujette*, subject; *cruel*, *cruelle*, cruel; *bon*, *bonne*, good; *chrétien*, *chrétienne*, Christian; *pareil*, *pareille*, similar.

---

* *Ancêtres* (m.), forefathers; *ciseaux* (m.), scissors; *pincettes* (f.), tongs, tweezers; *vivres* (m.), victuals, provisions — may also be used in the singular (Acad.).

The final consonant is doubled in the following words also:—

bas,	basse,	*low.*	gentil,	gentille,	*gentle.*
las,	lasse,	*tired.*	nul,	nulle,	*no.*
gras,	grasse,	*fat.*	paysan,	paysanne,	*peasant.*
exprès,	expresse,	*express.*	sot,	sotte,	*stupid, silly.*
épais,	épaisse,	*thick.*	vieillot,	vieillotte,	*elderly, oldish.*

Adjectives with the termination **érieur** follow the general rule; as, *ultérieur, ultérieure,* ulterior. To these may be added *meilleur, majeur,* and *mineur.*

The following adjectives have irregular feminines:—

*beau,	belle,	*beautiful.*	faux,	fausse,	*false.*
jumeau,	jumelle,	*twin-born.*	roux,	rousse,	*reddish.*
*nouveau,	nouvelle,	*new.*	doux,	douce,	*sweet.*
malin,	maligne,	*malicious, clever.*	blanc,	blanche,	*white.*
benin,	benigne,	*kind, benignant.*	franc,	franche,	*frank.*
long,	longue,	*long.*	frais,	fraîche,	*fresh.*
*fou,	folle,	*foolish.*	sec,	sèche,	*dry.*
*mou,	molle,	*soft.*	grec,	grecque,	*Greek.*
*vieux,	vieille,	*old.*	public,	publique,	*public.*

while *coi* (quiet, snug) and *favori* (favorite) insert a **t** before the final **e** mute: *coite, favorite.*

The adjectives marked * have a second masculine form used before a vowel or **h** mute: *bel, nouvel, fol, mol,* and *vieil.*

Adjectives ending in **f** change **f** into **ve.**

Ex. — *neuf, neuve,* new; *chétif, chétive,* paltry.

Adjectives ending in **x** change **x** into **se.**

Ex. — *orgueilleux, orgueilleuse,* haughty; *douteux, douteuse,* doubtful.

Adjectives ending in **eur,** formed from a present participle, change **eur** into **euse.**

Ex. — *tapageur, tapageuse,* noisy.

Adjectives ending in **teur,** and not formed from a present participle, change **teur** into **trice.**

Ex. — *adulateur, adulatrice,* flatterer.

Formation of the Plural.

Adjectives, in forming their plurals, conform to the rules governing substantives (Lesson XXVII.).

Place of the Adjective.

(See Lesson XXVI.)

The undermentioned adjectives usually *precede* the noun: —

ancien } *old.*	*bon, *good, simple.*	haut, *high.*
vieux }	*mauvais { *bad,* *ill-natured.*	premier, *first.*
jeune, *young.*	méchant, *wicked.*	dernier, *last.*
joli, *pretty.*	meilleur, *better.*	gros, *big, stout.*
beau, *fine.*	*petit, *little, mean.*	vaste, *vast.*
vilain, *ugly.*	*grand, *great, tall.*	digne, *worthy.*
cher, *dear.*		triste, *sad.*

The adjectives marked *, however, may be placed after their nouns. They differ in meaning according to their place. (See Course II.)

The substantive *gens* has a peculiar effect on the adjectives qualifying it. Those which precede it are placed in the *feminine* gender, those following it, in the *masculine.*

Ex. — *Les vieilles gens sont souvent soupçonneux,* old people are often suspicious.

However, the adjective *tous* remains masculine, even if it comes before *gens,* unless an adjective is between; as, *tous* les gens, *toutes* les *petites* gens. If, however, the adjective has the same form for both masculine and feminine, *tous* still remains masculine; as, *tous* les *jeunes* gens.

The English adj. describing a material is rendered in French by the corresponding noun preceded by the prep. *de* (or *d'*).

Ex. — *Une chaîne d'or,* a gold chain; *une montre d'argent,* a silver watch; *un manteau de velours,* a velvet mantle.

Comparison of Adjectives.

See Lesson XVII.

Numeral Adjectives.

Cardinal Numbers.

un, *m.*, une, *f*		1
deux	(x *silent*)	2
trois	(s *silent*)	3
quatre	(u *silent*)	4
cinq	(q *sounded*)	5
six	(siss)	6
sept	(sètt)	7
huit	(t *sounded*)	8
neuf	(f *sounded*)	9
dix	(diss)	10
onze		11
douze	(dooze)	12
treize	(trèze)	13
quatorze	(u *silent*)	14
quinze	(u *silent*)	15
seize	(sèze)	16
dix-sept	(diss-sètt)	17
dix-huit	(dizuitt)	18
dix-neuf	(diz-neuff)	19
vingt	(gt *silent*)	20
vingt et un	(té-un)	21
vingt-deux		22
vingt-trois		23
vingt-quatre		24
vingt-cinq		25
vingt-six		26
vingt-sept		27
vingt-huit		28
vingt-neuf		29
trente		30
trente et un		31
trente-deux		32
trente-trois		33
trente-quatre		34
trente-cinq		35
trente-six		36
trente-sept		37
trente-huit		38
trente-neuf		39
quarante		40
quarante et un		41
quarante-deux		42
quarante-trois		43
quarante-quatre		44
quarante-cinq		45
quarante-six		46
quarante-sept		47
quarante-huit		48
quarante-neuf		49
cinquante		50
cinquante et un		51
cinquante-deux		52
cinquante-trois		53
cinquante-quatre		54
cinquante-cinq		55
cinquante-six		56
cinquante-sept		57
cinquante-huit		58
cinquante-neuf		59
soixante (soissante)		60
soixante (et) un		61
soixante-deux		62
soixante-trois		63
soixante-quatre		64
soixante-cinq		65
soixante-six		66
soixante-sept		67
soixante-huit		68
soixante-neuf		69
soixante (et) dix		70
soixante et onze (té onz)		71
soixante-douze		72
soixante-treize		73
soixante-quatorze		74

g silent, t sounded

u *of* qua *and* quan *silent*

soixante-quinze		75	quatre-vingt-douze	u of qua *and* gt *silent*	92
soixante-seize		76	quatre-vingt-treize		93
soixante-dix-sept		77	quatre-vingt-quatorze		94
soixante-dix-huit		78	quatre-vingt-quinze		95
soixante-dix-neuf		79	quatre-vingt-seize		96
quatre-vingts (gts *silent*)		80	quatre-vingt-dix-sept		97
quatre-vingt-un	u of qua *and* gt *silent*	81	quatre-vingt-dix-huit		98
quatre-vingt-deux		82	quatre-vingt-dix-neuf		99
quatre-vingt-trois		83	cent (t *silent*)		100
quatre-vingt-quatre		84	cent un, *etc.* (t *silent*)		101
quatre-vingt-cinq		85	deux cents (ts *silent*)		200
quatre-vingt-six		86	mille		1,000
quatre-vingt-sept		87	mille cent *or* onze cents *		1,100
quatre-vingt-huit		88	deux mille, *etc.*		2,000
quatre-vingt-neuf		89	un million		1,000,000
quatre-vingt-dix		90	deux millions, *etc.*		2,000,000
quatre-vingt-onze		91	un milliard, *etc.*		1,000,000,000

Ordinal Numbers.

premier	1st	dix-septième	17th
unième		dix-huitième	18th
second (gon)	2d	dix-neuvième	19th
deuxième (zièm)		vingtième	20th
troisième	3d	vingt et unième	21st
quatrième	4th	vingt-deuxième	22d
cinquième	5th	trentième	30th
sixième	6th	quarantième	40th
septième	7th	cinquantième	50th
huitième	8th	soixantième	60th
neuvième	9th	soixante (et) dixième	70th
dixième	10th	quatre-vingtième	80th
onzième	11th	quatre-vingt-dixième	90th
douzième	12th	centième	100th
treizième	13th	cent unième	101st
quatorzième	14th	deux centième	200th
quinzième	15th	millième	1000th
seizième	16th	millionième, *etc.*	*millionth*

* Instead of ***mille cent*** (1,100), ***mille deux cents*** (1,200), etc., the French say ***onze cents, douze cents***, until ***dix-neuf cents*** (1,900); but they do not say ***dix cents*** (1,000) for ***mille***, nor ***vingt cents*** (2,000), ***trente cents*** (3,000), etc., for ***deux mille, trois mille***, etc.

The Pronoun.

Whereas the *adjective accompanies* a noun, the *pronoun takes the place* of one.

Comparative Table of Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns.

	Possessive Adjectives.			Possessive Pronouns.		
		Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*
Singular.	*my*	mon	ma	*mine*	le mien	la mienne
	thy	ton	ta	*thine*	le tien	la tienne
	his, her, its	son	sa*	*his, hers, its*	le sien	la sienne
	our	notre †		*ours*	le *or* la nôtre †	
	your	votre †		*yours*	le *or* la vôtre †	
	their	leur †		*theirs*	le *or* la leur ‡	
Plural.	*my*	mes		*mine*	les miens	les miennes
	thy	tes		*thine*	les tiens	les tiennes
	his, her, its	ses		*his, hers, its*	les siens	les siennes
	our	nos		*ours*	les nôtres †	
	your	vos		*yours*	les vôtres †	
	their	leurs		*theirs*	les leurs	

* **Son** for **sa** before a vowel and **h** mute.

† For the pronunciation of these words, see Phonetics, p. 14, and the footnote of Lesson XX., p. 78.

‡ **Leur** for the feminine, not **leure**.

Comparative Table of Demonstrative Adjectives and Demonstrative Pronouns.

	Singular.				Plural.		
		Masc.		*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*
		before a consonant	before a vowel or h mute				
Adjective.	*this* or *that*	ce	cet	cette	*these* or *those*	ces	
Pronoun.	*this* or *that*	celui		celle	*these* or *those*	ceux	celles

Personal Pronouns

In the Objective, with the Pronoun of Third Person.

(See Lesson XXI.)

The following is the order in which two personal pronouns standing before, and governed by, one verb are always placed: —

	Singular.			Plural.		
1st pers.	me	le	*him to me.*	nous	le	*him to us.*
			it to me.			*it to us.*
		la	*her to me.*		la	*her to us.*
			it to me.			*it to us.*
		les,	*them to me.*		les,	*them to us.*
2d pers.	te	le	*him to thee.*	vous	le	*him to you.*
			it to thee.			*it to you.*
		la	*her to thee.*		la	*her to you.*
			it to thee.			*it to you.*
		les,	*them to thee.*		les,	*them to you.*

		Singular.		Plural.	
3d pers.	le	lui	*him to him.* *it to him.* *him to her.* *it to her.*	le	*him to them.* *it to them.*
	la		*her to him.* *it to him.* *her to her.* *it to her.*	la	leur *her to them.* *it to them.*
	les		*them to him.* *them to her.*	les	*them to them.*

Observe that, contrary to English usage, the pronouns are placed before the verb (*il **me** **le** prend*, he takes it from me), the indirect object coming first in the first and second persons, while it is the direct object which comes first in the third (*ils **le** **lui** donnent*, they give it to him).

In the *imperative affirmative*, the order of the first person changes as follows, and becomes the same as in English: —

le la les	moi	le la les	nous

In the *negative*, the usual order is observed.

Order of Precedence of the Pronouns.

je tu il elle on nous vous ils elles	me te se nous vous se	before	le la les	before	lui leur	before	y en	and y before en

The above tables should be committed to memory.

Distinction between the Definite Article and the Personal Pronoun le, la, les.

Le, la, les, articles, always precede a noun.

Ex.—*Les richesses seules ne procurent pas le bonheur*, riches alone do not procure happiness.

Le, la, les, pronouns, always accompany a verb.

Ex.—*Si l'occasion d'obtenir du succès se présente, saisissez-la*, if the opportunity to acquire success should present itself, seize it.
J'aurai bientôt ce cheval; mon père me l'a promis, I shall soon have this horse; my father has promised it to me.
Si ta mère te donne des conseils, écoute-la et suis-les, if your mother gives you advice, listen to her and follow it.

Comparison of the Relative and Interrogative *Qui* and *Que*.

	Relative.		Interrogative.	
	Persons.	*Things.*	*Persons.*	*Things.*
Nom. (subject) . . .	qui		qui?	—
Acc. (direct object) .	que (*or* qu')		qui?	que (*or* qu')?
Gen. (possessive) . .	de qui, dont; dont		de qui?	de quoi?
Dat. (indirect object)	à qui	—	à qui?	à quoi?

Notes.—(*a*) Instead of the interrogative pronoun **qui?** the idiomatic forms **qui est-ce qui?** (who?) for the nominative, and **qui est-ce que?** (whom?) for the accusative, are very largely employed. Both forms apply solely to persons.

Qui / *Qui est-ce qui* } *a compris?* Who has understood?
Qui cherchez-vous? / *Qui est-ce que vous cherchez?* } Whom are you seeking?

(*b*) Instead of the simple form **que** (**qu'**), the idiomatic **qu'est-ce qui?** (what?) for the wanting nominative, and **qu'est-ce que?** and even **qu'est-ce que c'est que** (what?) for the accusative, are of very frequent use, particularly in conversational French. Both forms refer to things only.

Qu'est-ce qui vous manque?*	What is it that you want?
Qu'est-ce qui vous étonne?	What is it that astonishes you?
Que voulez-vous?	What do you want?
Qu'est-ce que / ***Qu'est-ce que c'est que*** } ***vous voulez?***	What is it that you want?

The pupil will doubtless notice that the English furnishes an equivalent idiom in *what is it that?*

Quoi, *which*. If the relative pronoun *which*, used after a preposition, refers, not to a single antecedent, but to a whole clause or proposition, it is translated by **quoi**.

Ex. — *Les deux compagnons démontent le cavalier, **après quoi** ils lui lient les bras avec la bride*, the two companions unhorse the rider, after which they bind his arms with the bridle.

Dont, *whose*, *of which*, is used for persons and things of both genders and numbers.

Ex. — *Voici le vieillard **dont** je vous ai raconté l'histoire*, here is the old man whose history I related to you.

*Les arbres **dont** nous voyons les sommets sont des châtaigniers*, the trees of which we see the tops are chestnut trees.

De qui, on the contrary, refers exclusively to persons.

Ex. — *Vous savez très bien **de qui** je parle*, you know very well of whom I speak.

Dont cannot be used when the noun which follows *whose* is in any other case than the nominative or direct objective, or is governed by a preposition. **De qui** for persons, or **duquel, de laquelle**, etc., for both persons and things, must be used.

Ex. — *C'est un général à la valeur **duquel** l'ennemi ne saurait résister*, he is a general against whose valor the enemy could make no resistance.

---

* Literally, what is it that is lacking to you?

Ex. — *Ma tante est une dame sur la sympathie* ***de laquelle*** (or ***de qui***) *vous pouvez compter*, my aunt is a lady upon whose sympathy you may rely.

Voici les inventions sur les mérites ***desquels*** *on a des doutes*, these are the inventions of whose merits people have doubts.

À qui, like *de qui*, has reference solely to persons. When animals or inanimate objects are spoken of, **auquel, à laquelle, auxquels,** or **auxquelles** must be used.

Ex. — *Il n'y a guère de positions* ***auxquelles*** *cet homme n'aspire*, there are hardly any positions to which this man does not aspire.

C'est une chose ***à laquelle*** *je ne pensais pas*, it is a thing of which I did not think.

Lequel, laquelle, etc., replace *qui* or *que* when the use of either of the latter would make the sense ambiguous.

Ex. — *Le cousin de madame Dulac,* ***lequel*** (and not *qui*) *a fait fortune en Amérique, est arrivé hier*, Mrs. Dulac's cousin, who has made a fortune in America, arrived yesterday.

La tante de ce jeune étranger, ***laquelle*** *demeure à Rome, est venue me voir aujourd'hui*, this young stranger's aunt, who lives at Rome, came to see me to-day.

In the same way **dont** is replaced by **duquel, de laquelle,** etc.

Ex. — *Les filles du marchand* ***desquelles*** *je vous ai parlé sont ici*, the merchant's daughters of whom I spoke to you are here.

Quoi que, in two words, is an indefinite pronoun, signifying *whatever*.

Ex. — ***Quoi qu'ils en disent,*** *je vais poursuivre mon but*, whatever they may say (of it), I am going to pursue my aim.

The Verb.

As the verb **aller** is of constant occurrence, its full conjugation, differing greatly from the model of the first conjugation, is given below. The pupil should study it thoroughly, until he has all of its various forms by heart.

Aller, to go.

Pres. Part. Allant, *going.* *Past Part.* Allé, *gone.*

	Je	*Tu*	*Il*	*Nous*	*Vous*	*Ils*
Indic. Pres.	vais,	vas,	va,	allons,	allez,	vont.
Imperfect.	allais,	allais,	allait,	allions,	alliez,	allaient.
Past Def.	allai,	allas,	alla,	allâmes,	allâtes,	allèrent.
Past Indef. or Perf.	suis allé,	es allé,	est allé,	sommes allés,	êtes allés,	sont allés.
	ai été,	as été,	a été,	avons été,	avez été,	ont été.
Pluperfect.	étais allé,	étais allé,	était allé,	étions allés,	étiez allés,	étaient allés.
	avais été,	avais été,	avait été,	avions été,	aviez été,	avaient été.
Future.	irai,	iras,	ira,	irons,	irez,	iront.
Cond. Pres.	irais,	irais,	irait,	irions,	iriez,	iraient.
Perf.	serais allé,	serais allé,	serait allé,	serions allés,	seriez allés,	seraient allés.
	aurais été,	aurais été,	aurait été,	aurions été,	auriez été,	auraient été.
Imperative.		va,		allons,	allez.	
Subj. Pres.	aille,	ailles,	aille,	allions,	alliez,	aillent.
Imperfect.	allasse,	allasses,	allât,	allassions,	allassiez,	allassent.
Perf.	sois allé,	sois allé,	soit allé,	soyons allés,	soyez allés,	soient allés.
	aie été,	aies été,	ait été,	ayons été,	ayez été,	aient été.
Pluperfect.	fusse allé,	fusses allé,	fût allé,	fussions allés,	fussiez allés,	fussent allés.
	eusse été,	eusses été,	eût été,	eussions été,	eussiez été,	eussent été.

NOTE. — *J'ai été, j'avais été, j'aurais été*, etc., are not synonymous with *je suis allé, j'étais allé, je serais allé.* The former must be used whenever the return from the place mentioned has taken place; the latter, when the return has not been made: for instance, *Il a été en Europe*, he has been to Europe, implies the return; but *il est allé en Europe*, he has gone to Europe, intimates that he is not back yet. The fut. perf. is formed like the cond. perf.

The imperative *va* is spelled *vas* when followed by y or by en; as, *vas-y, vas en savoir des nouvelles*, go there, and make inquiries about it. However, it takes no s when the y is followed by a verb; as, *va y mettre bon ordre*, go and set things right.

Conjugation of Verbs.

The conjugation of a verb is the formation and arrangement of its several parts, according to its voices, moods, tenses, numbers, and persons.

French verbs are divided into *four* conjugations,* distinguished from one another by the termination of the infinitive mood.

The First ends in **er**:	**chant-*er*,**	*to sing.*
The Second ends in **ir**:	**chois-*ir*,**	*to choose.*
The Third ends in **oir**:	**rec(ev)-*oir*,**	*to receive.*
The Fourth ends in **re**:	**vend-*re*,**	*to sell.*

There are *four* different ways of conjugating the same verb: (1) *affirmatively;* (2) *negatively;* (3) *interrogatively;* (4) *interrogatively and negatively.*

Verbs are *regular, irregular,* or *defective.*

A verb is *regular* when it coincides in all its terminations with the verb which is given as a *model* of the conjugation to which it belongs.

A verb is *irregular* when it *deviates* from the model of its conjugation.

A verb is *defective* when it *wants* some *mood, tense,* or *person.*

---

* The dictionary of the French Academy, which is the acknowledged authority in the matter, gives about 4020 simple verbs; that is, without including their compounds. Of that total, about nine-tenths, 3600, belong to the first conjugation, 355 to the second, 10 to the third, and 50 to the fourth.

These numbers are always increasing through the addition of new verbs formed with the help of substantives for the first conjugation and of adjectives for the second; as, —

gant, glove; *ganter,* to put gloves on.
cher, dear; *chérir,* to cherish.

It may be worth noticing, however, that, since the origin of the French language, not a single new verb has been added to those of the third and fourth conjugations.

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (1) Affirmatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

j'ai,	*I have.*
tu as,	*thou hast.*
il, elle, *or* on a,	*he, she,* or *one has.*
nous avons,	*we have.*
vous avez,	*you have.*
ils *or* elles ont,	*they have.*

IMPERFECT.

j'avais,	*I had, was having,* or *used to have.*
tu avais,	*thou hadst,* etc.
il avait,	*he had.*
nous avions,	*we had.*
vous aviez,	*you had.*
ils avaient,	*they had.*

PAST DEFINITE.†

j'eus,	*I had* or *did have.*
tu eus,	*thou hadst,* etc.
il eut,	*he had.*
nous eûmes,	*we had.*
vous eûtes,	*you had.*
ils eurent,	*they had.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OF PERFECT.

j'ai eu,	*I have had.**
tu as eu,	*thou hast had.*
il a eu,	*he has had.*
nous avons eu,	*we have had.*
vous avez eu,	*you have had.*
ils ont eu,	*they have had.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais eu,	*I had had.*
tu avais eu,	*thou hadst had.*
il avait eu,	*he had had.*
nous avions eu,	*we had had.*
vous aviez eu,	*you had had.*
ils avaient eu,	*they had had.*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus eu,	*I had had.*
tu eus eu,	*thou hadst had.*
il eut eu,	*he had had.*
nous eûmes eu,	*we had had.*
vous eûtes eu,	*you had had.*
ils eurent eu,	*they had had.*

* We give here the *literal* translation. For the true rendering of the past indefinite, the pupil must be guided by the rules and exercises on **avoir** and **être**, and the four conjugations given in the various lessons.

† For the employment of this tense, the student is referred to Course II.

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
j'aurai,	*I shall* or *will have.*	j'aurai eu,	*I shall* or *will have had.*
tu auras,	*thou wilt have.*	tu auras eu,	*thou wilt have had.*
il aura,	*he will have.*	il aura eu,	*he will have had.*
nous aurons,	*we shall have.*	nous aurons eu,	*we shall have had.*
vous aurez,	*you will have.*	vous aurez eu,	*you will have had.*
ils auront,	*they will have.*	ils auront eu,	*they will have had.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
j'aurais,	*I should have.*	j'aurais eu,	*I should have had.*
tu aurais,	*thou wouldst have.*	tu aurais eu,	*thou wouldst have had.*
il aurait,	*he would have.*	il aurait eu,	*he would have had.*
nous aurions,	*we should have.*	nous aurions eu,	*we should have had.*
vous auriez,	*you would have.*	vous auriez eu,	*you would have had.*
ils auraient,	*they would have.*	ils auraient eu,	*they would have had.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

aie,	*have (thou).*
qu'il ait,*	*let him have.*
ayons,	*let us have.*
ayez,	*have (ye* or *you).*
qu'ils aient,*	*let them have.*

* Borrowed from the subjunctive present.

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (1) Affirmatively.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

que j'aie,	*that I (may) have.**
que tu aies,	*that thou mayst have.*
qu'il ait,	*that he may have.*
que nous ayons,	*that we may have.*
que vous ayez,	*that you may have.*
qu'ils aient,	*that they may have.*

IMPERFECT.

que j'eusse,	*that I (might) have.**
que tu eusses,	*that thou mightst have.*
qu'il eût,	*that he might have.*
que nous eussions,	*that we might have.*
que vous eussiez,	*that you might have.*
qu'ils eussent,	*that they might have.*

Compound Tenses.

PERFECT.

que j'aie eu,	*that I (may) have had.**
que tu aies eu,	*that thou mayst have had.*
qu'il ait eu,	*that he may have had.*
que nous ayons eu,	*that we may have had.*
que vous ayez eu,	*that you may have had.*
qu'ils aient eu,	*that they may have had.*

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse eu,	*that I (might) have had.**
que tu eusses eu,	*that thou mightst have had.*
qu'il eût eu,	*that he might have had.*
que nous eussions eu,	*that we might have had.*
que vous eussiez eu,	*that you might have had.*
qu'ils eussent eu,	*that they might have had.*

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . avoir, *to have.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . ayant, *having.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . ayant eu, *having had.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (variable) . . . . . eu, *had.*

---

* This is only one of various renderings of the subjunctive in English. The pupil is referred to Course II. for explanations and rules touching the correct translation of this mood.

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (2) Negatively.

(Instead of **pas**, put **point** for a stronger negation, **jamais** for *never*, and **plus** for *no more* or *no longer*.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je n'ai pas,	*I have not.*
tu n'as pas,	*thou hast not.*
il n'a pas,	*he has not.*
nous n'avons pas,	*we have not.*
vous n'avez pas,	*you have not.*
ils n'ont pas,	*they have not.*

IMPERFECT.

je n'avais pas,	*I had not.*
tu n'avais pas,	*thou hadst not.*
il n'avait pas,	*he had not.*
nous n'avions pas,	*we had not.*
vous n'aviez pas,	*you had not.*
ils n'avaient pas,	*they had not.*

PAST DEFINITE.

je n'eus pas,	*I had not.*
tu n'eus pas,	*thou hadst not.*
il n'eut pas,	*he had not.*
nous n'eûmes pas,	*we had not.*
vous n'eûtes pas,	*you had not.*
ils n'eurent pas,	*they had not.*

FUTURE.

je n'aurai pas,	*I shall not have.*
tu n'auras pas,	*thou wilt not have.*
il n'aura pas,	*he will not have.*
nous n'aurons pas,	*we shall not have.*
vous n'aurez pas,	*you will not have.*
ils n'auront pas,	*they will not have.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OF PERFECT.

je n'ai pas eu,	*I have not had.*
tu n'as pas eu,	*thou hast not had.*
il n'a pas eu,	*he has not had.*
nous n'avons pas eu,	*we have not had.*
vous n'avez pas eu,	*you have not had.*
ils n'ont pas eu,	*they have not had.*

PLUPERFECT.

je n'avais pas eu,	*I had not had.*
tu n'avais pas eu,	*thou hadst not had.*
il n'avait pas eu,	*he had not had.*
nous n'avions pas eu,	*we had not had.*
vous n'aviez pas eu,	*you had not had.*
ils n'avaient pas eu,	*they had not had.*

PAST ANTERIOR.

je n'eus pas eu,	*I had not had.*
tu n'eus pas eu,	*thou hadst not had.*
il n'eut pas eu,	*he had not had.*
nous n'eûmes pas eu,	*we had not had.*
vous n'eûtes pas eu,	*you had not had.*
ils n'eurent pas eu,	*they had not had.*

FUTURE PERFECT.

je n'aurai pas eu,	*I shall not have had.*
tu n'auras pas eu,	*thou wilt not have had.*
il n'aura pas eu,	*he will not have had.*
nous n'aurons pas eu,	*we shall not have had.*
vous n'aurez pas eu,	*you will not have had.*
ils n'auront pas eu,	*they will not have had.*

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (2) Negatively.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je n'aurais pas,	*I should not have.*
tu n'aurais pas,	*thou wouldst not have.*
il n'aurait pas,	*he would not have.*
nous n'aurions pas,	*we should not have.*
vous n'auriez pas,	*you would not have.*
ils n'auraient pas,	*they would not have.*

Compound Tenses.

PERFECT.

je n'aurais pas eu,	*I should not have had.*
tu n'aurais pas eu,	*thou wouldst not have had.*
il n'aurait pas eu,	*he would not have had.*
nous n'aurions pas eu,	*we should not have had.*
vous n'auriez pas eu,	*you would not have had.*
ils n'auraient pas eu,	*they would not have had.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

n'aie pas,	*have not (thou).*
qu'il n'ait pas,	*let him not have.*
n'ayons pas,	*let us not have.*
n'ayez pas,	*have not (ye* or *you).*
qu'ils n'aient pas,	*let them not have.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que je n'aie pas,	*that I (may) not have.*
que tu n'aies pas,	*that thou mayst not have.*
qu'il n'ait pas,	*that he may not have.*
que nous n'ayons pas,	*that we may not have.*
que vous n'ayez pas,	*that you may not have.*
qu'ils n'aient pas,	*that they may not have.*

PERFECT.

que je n'aie pas eu,	*that I (may)*	*not have had.*
que tu n'aies pas eu,	*that thou mayst*	
qu'il n'ait pas eu,	*that he may*	
que nous n'ayons pas eu,	*that we may*	
que vous n'ayez pas eu,	*that you may*	
qu'ils n'aient pas eu,	*that they may*	

IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
que je n'eusse pas,	*that I (might) not have.*	que je n'eusse pas eu,	*that I (might) not have had.*
que tu n'eusses pas,	*that thou mightst not have.*	que tu n'eusses pas eu,	*that thou mightst not have had.*
qu'il n'eût pas,	*that he might not have.*	qu'il n'eût pas eu,	*that he might not have had.*
que nous n'eussions pas,	*that we might not have.*	que nous n'eussions pas eu,	*that we might not have had.*
que vous n'eussiez pas,	*that you might not have.*	que vous n'eussiez pas eu,	*that you might not have had.*
qu'ils n'eussent pas,	*that they might not have.*	qu'ils n'eussent pas eu,	*that they might not have had.*

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . ne pas avoir, *not to have.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . n'ayant pas, *not having.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . n'ayant pas eu, *not having had.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (variable) . . . . . pas eu, *not had.*

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (3) Interrogatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
PRESENT.		PAST INDEFINITE OF PERFECT.	
ai-je ?	*have I ?*	ai-je eu ?	*have I had ?*
as-tu ?	*hast thou ?*	as-tu eu ?	*hast thou had ?*
a-t-il ?	*has he ?*	a-t-il eu ?	*has he had ?*
avons-nous ?	*have we ?*	avons-nous eu ?	*have we had ?*
avez-vous ?	*have you ?*	avez-vous eu ?	*have you had ?*
ont-ils ?	*have they ?*	ont-ils eu ?	*have they had ?*
IMPERFECT.		PLUPERFECT.	
avais-je ?	*had I ?*	avais-je eu ?	*had I had ?*
avais-tu ?	*hadst thou ?*	avais-tu eu ?	*hadst thou had ?*
avait-il ?	*had he ?*	avait-il eu ?	*had he had ?*
avions-nous ?	*had we ?*	avions-nous eu ?	*had we had ?*
aviez-vous ?	*had you ?*	aviez-vous eu ?	*had you had ?*
avaient-ils ?	*had they ?*	avaient-ils eu ?	*had they had ?*

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (3) Interrogatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD. — *Continued.*

Simple Tenses.

PAST DEFINITE.

eus-je ?	*had I ?*
eus-tu ?	*hadst thou ?*
eut-il ?	*had he ?*
eûmes-nous ?	*had we ?*
eûtes-vous ?	*had you ?*
eurent-ils ?	*had they ?*

FUTURE.

aurai-je ?	*shall I have ?*
auras-tu ?	*wilt thou have ?*
aura-t-il ?	*will he have ?*
aurons-nous ?	*shall we have ?*
aurez-vous ?	*will you have ?*
auront-ils ?	*will they have ?*

Compound Tenses.

PAST ANTERIOR.

eus-je eu ?	*had I had ?*
eus-tu eu ?	*hadst thou had ?*
eut-il eu ?	*had he had ?*
eûmes-nous eu ?	*had we had ?*
eûtes-vous eu ?	*had you had ?*
eurent-ils eu ?	*had they had ?*

FUTURE PERFECT.

aurai-je eu ?	*shall I have had ?*
auras-tu eu ?	*wilt thou have had ?*
aura-t-il eu ?	*will he have had ?*
aurons-nous eu ?	*shall we have had ?*
aurez-vous eu ?	*will you have had ?*
auront-ils eu ?	*will they have had ?*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

aurais-je ?	*should I have ?*
aurais-tu ?	*wouldst thou have ?*
aurait-il ?	*would he have ?*
aurions-nous ?	*should we have ?*
auriez-vous ?	*would you have ?*
auraient-ils ?	*would they have ?*

PERFECT.

aurais-je eu ?	*should I have had ?*
aurais-tu eu ?	*wouldst thou have had ?*
aurait-il eu ?	*would he have had ?*
aurions-nous eu ?	*should we have had ?*
auriez-vous eu ?	*would you have had ?*
auraient-ils eu ?	*would they have had ?*

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (4) Negatively and Interrogatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

n'ai-je pas ?	*have I not ?*
n'as-tu pas ?	*hast thou not ?*
n'a-t-il pas ?	*has he not ?*
n'avons-nous pas ?	*have we not ?*
n'avez-vous pas ?	*have you not ?*
n'ont-ils pas ?	*have they not ?*

IMPERFECT.

n'avais-je pas ?	*had I not ?*
n'avais-tu pas ?	*hadst thou not ?*
n'avait-il pas ?	*had he not ?*
n'avions-nous pas ?	*had we not ?*
n'aviez-vous pas ?	*had you not ?*
n'avaient-ils pas ?	*had they not ?*

PAST DEFINITE.

n'eus-je pas ?	*had I not ?*
n'eus-tu pas ?	*hadst thou not ?*
n'eut-il pas ?	*had he not ?*
n'eûmes-nous pas ?	*had we not ?*
n'eûtes-vous pas ?	*had you not ?*
n'eurent-ils pas ?	*had they not ?*

FUTURE.

n'aurai-je pas ?	*shall I not have ?*
n'auras-tu pas ?	*wilt thou not have ?*
n'aura-t-il pas ?	*will he not have ?*
n'aurons-nous pas ?	*shall we not have ?*
n'aurez-vous pas ?	*will you not have ?*
n'auront-ils pas ?	*will they not have ?*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OF PERFECT.

n'ai-je pas eu ?	*have I not had ?*
n'as-tu pas eu ?	*hast thou not had ?*
n'a-t-il pas eu ?	*has he not had ?*
n'avons-nous pas eu ?	*have we not had ?*
n'avez-vous pas eu ?	*have you not had ?*
n'ont-ils pas eu ?	*have they not had ?*

PLUPERFECT.

n'avais-je pas eu ?	*had I not had ?*
n'avais-tu pas eu ?	*hadst thou not had ?*
n'avait-il pas eu ?	*had he not had ?*
n'avions-nous pas eu ?	*had we not had ?*
n'aviez-vous pas eu ?	*had you not had ?*
n'avaient-ils pas eu ?	*had they not had ?*

PAST ANTERIOR.

n'eus-je pas eu ?	*had I not had ?*
n'eus-tu pas eu ?	*hadst thou not had ?*
n'eut-il pas eu ?	*had he not had ?*
n'eûmes-nous pas eu ?	*had we not had ?*
n'eûtes-vous pas eu ?	*had you not had ?*
n'eurent-ils pas eu ?	*had they not had ?*

FUTURE PERFECT.

n'aurai-je pas eu ?	*shall I not have had ?*
n'auras-tu pas eu ?	*wilt thou not have had ?*
n'aura-t-il pas eu ?	*will he not have had ?*
n'aurons-nous pas eu ?	*shall we not have had ?*
n'aurez-vous pas eu ?	*will you not have had ?*
n'auront-ils pas eu ?	*will they not have had ?*

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (4) Negatively and Interrogatively.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

n'aurais-je pas ?	*should I not have ?*
n'aurais-tu pas ?	*wouldst thou not have ?*
n'aurait-il pas ?	*would he not have ?*
n'aurions-nous pas ?	*should we not have ?*
n'auriez-vous pas ?	*would you not have ?*
n'auraient-ils pas ?	*would they not have ?*

Compound Tenses.

PAST.

n'aurais-je pas eu ?	*should I not*	*have had ?*
n'aurais-tu pas eu ?	*wouldst thou not*	
n'aurait-il pas eu ?	*would he not*	
n'aurions-nous pas eu ?	*should we not*	
n'auriez-vous pas eu ?	*would you not*	
n'auraient-ils pas eu ?	*would they not*	

Auxiliary — *être, to be* — Affirmatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je suis,	*I am.*
tu es,	*thou art.*
il est,	*he is.*
nous sommes,	*we are.*
vous êtes,	*you are.*
ils sont,	*they are.*

IMPERFECT.

j'étais,	*I was* or *used to be.*
tu étais,	*thou wast.*
il était,	*he was.*
nous étions,	*we were.*
vous étiez,	*you were.*
ils étaient,	*they were.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OR PERFECT.

j'ai été,	*I have been.*
tu as été,	*thou hast been.*
il a été,	*he has been.*
nous avons été,	*we have been.*
vous avez été,	*you have been.*
ils ont été,	*they have been.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais été,	*I had been.*
tu avais été,	*thou hadst been.*
il avait été,	*he had been.*
nous avions été,	*we had been.*
vous aviez été,	*you had been.*
ils avaient été,	*they had been.*

PAST INDEFINITE.		PAST ANTERIOR.	
je fus,	*I was.*	j'eus été,	*I had been.*
tu fus,	*thou wast.*	tu eus été,	*thou hadst been.*
il fut,	*he was.*	il eut été,	*he had been.*
nous fûmes,	*we were.*	nous eûmes été,	*we had been.*
vous fûtes,	*you were.*	vous eûtes été,	*you had been.*
ils furent,	*they were.*	ils eurent été,	*they had been.*
FUTURE.		**FUTURE PERFECT.**	
je serai,	*I shall be, will be.*	j'aurai été,	*I shall have been.*
tu seras,	*thou wilt be.*	tu auras été,	*thou wilt have been.*
il sera,	*he will be.*	il aura été,	*he will have been.*
nous serons,	*we shall be.*	nous aurons été,	*we shall have been.*
vous serez,	*you will be.*	vous aurez été,	*you will have been.*
ils seront.	*they will be.*	ils auront été,	*they will have been*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je serais,	*I should be.*	j'aurais été,	*I should have been.*
tu serais,	*thou wouldst be.*	tu aurais été,	*thou wouldst have been.*
il serait,	*he would be.*	il aurait été,	*he would have been.*
nous serions,	*we should be.*	nous aurions été,	*we should have been.*
vous seriez,	*you would be.*	vous auriez été,	*you would have been.*
ils seraient,	*they would be.*	ils auraient été,	*they would have been.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sois,	*be (thou).*
qu'il soit,	*let him be.*
soyons,	*let us be.*
soyez,	*be (ye* or *you).*
qu'ils soient,	*let them be.*

Auxiliary — *être, to be* — Affirmatively.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
PRESENT.		**PERFECT.**	
que je sois,	*that I (may) be.*	que j'aie été,	*that I (may) have been.*
que tu sois,	*that thou mayst be.*	que tu aies été,	*that thou mayst have been.*
qu'il soit,	*that he may be.*	qu'il ait été,	*that he may have been.*
que nous soyons,	*that we may be.*	que nous ayons été,	*that we may have been.*
que vous soyez,	*that you may be.*	que vous ayez été,	*that you may have been.*
qu'ils soient,	*that they may be.*	qu'ils aient été,	*that they may have been.*
IMPERFECT.		**PLUPERFECT.**	
que je fusse,	*that I (might) be.*	que j'eusse été,	*that I (might) have been.*
que tu fusses,	*that thou mightst be.*	que tu eusses été,	*that thou mightst have been.*
qu'il fût,	*that he might be.*	qu'il eût été,	*that he might have been.*
que nous fussions,	*that we might be.*	que nous eussions été,	*that we might have been.*
que vous fussiez,	*that you might be.*	que vous eussiez été,	*that you might have been.*
qu'ils fussent,	*that they might be.*	qu'ils eussent été,	*that they might have been.*

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . être, *to be.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . étant, *being.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . ayant été, *having been.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (invariable) . . . . . été,* *been.*

---

* The past participle *été* is always invariable.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Model Verb in *er* . . . . . **Chant-*er*,** *to sing.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je chante,	*I sing.*
tu chantes,	*thou singest.*
il *or* elle chante,	*he* or *she sings.*
nous chantons,	*we sing.*
vous chantez,	*you sing.*
ils *or* elles chantent,	*they sing.*

IMPERFECT.

je chantais,	*I was singing*, or *I used to sing.*
tu chantais,	*thou wast singing.*
il *or* elle chantait,	*he* or *she was singing.*
nous chantions,	*we were singing.*
vous chantiez,	*you were singing.*
ils *or* elles chantaient,	*they were singing.*

PAST DEFINITE.

je chantai,	*I sang* or *did sing.*
tu chantas,	*thou didst sing.*
il *or* elle chanta,	*he* or *she sang.*
nous chantâmes,	*we sang.*
vous chantâtes,	*you sang.*
ils *or* elles chantèrent,	*they sang.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OR PERFECT.

j'ai chanté,	*I have sung.*
tu as chanté,	*thou hast sung.*
il *or* elle a chanté,	*he* or *she has sung.*
nous avons chanté,	*we have sung.*
vous avez chanté,	*you have sung.*
ils *or* elles ont chanté,	*they have sung.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais chanté,	*I had been singing.*
tu avais chanté,	*thou hadst been singing.*
il *or* elle avait chanté,	*he* or *she had been singing.*
nous avions chanté,	*we had been singing.*
vous aviez chanté,	*you had been singing.*
ils *or* elles avaient chanté,	*they had been singing.*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus chanté,	*I had sung.*
tu eus chanté,	*thou hadst sung.*
il *or* elle eut chanté,	*he* or *she had sung.*
nous eûmes chanté,	*we had sung.*
vous eûtes chanté,	*you had sung.*
ils *or* elles eurent chanté,	*they had sung.*

FIRST CONJUGATION. — *Continued.*

Model Verb in *er* . . . . . **Chant-*er*, *to sing.***

INDICATIVE MOOD. — *Continued.*

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
je chanterai,	*I shall* or *will sing.*	j'aurai chanté,	*I shall have sung.*
tu chanteras,	*thou wilt sing.*	tu auras chanté,	*thou wilt have sung.*
il *or* elle chantera,	*he* or *she will sing.*	il *or* elle aura chanté,	*he* or *she will have sung.*
nous chanterons,	*we shall sing.*	nous aurons chanté,	*we shall have sung.*
vous chanterez,	*you will sing.*	vous aurez chanté,	*you will have sung.*
ils *or* elles chanteront,	*they will sing.*	ils *or* elles auront chanté,	*they will have sung.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je chanterais,	*I should* or *would sing.*	j'aurais chanté,	*I should have sung.*
tu chanterais,	*thou wouldst sing.*	tu aurais chanté,	*thou wouldst have sung.*
il *or* elle chanterait,	*he* or *she would sing.*	il *or* elle aurait chanté,	*he* or *she would have sung.*
nous chanterions,	*we should sing.*	nous aurions chanté,	*we should have sung.*
vous chanteriez,	*you would sing.*	vous auriez chanté,	*you would have sung.*
ils *or* elles chanteraient,	*they would sing.*	ils *or* elles auraient chanté,	*they would have sung.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

chante,	*sing (thou).*
chantons,	*let us sing.*
chantez,	*sing (ye* or *you).*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que je chante,	*that I (may) sing.*
que tu chantes,	*that thou mayst sing.*
qu'il *or* qu'elle chante,	*that he* or *she may sing.*
que nous chantions,	*that we may sing.*
que vous chantiez,	*that you may sing.*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles chantent,	*that they may sing.*

IMPERFECT.

que je chantasse,	*that I (might) sing.*
que tu chantasses,	*that thou mightst sing.*
qu'il *or* qu'elle chantât,	*that he* or *she might sing.*
que nous chantassions,	*that we might sing.*
que vous chantassiez,	*that you might sing.*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles chantassent,	*that they might sing.*

PERFECT.

que j'aie chanté,	*that I (may)*	*have sung.*
que tu aies chanté,	*that thou mayst*	
qu'il *or* qu'elle ait chanté,	*that he* or *she may*	
que nous ayons chanté,	*that we may*	
que vous ayez chanté,	*that you may*	
qu'ils *or* qu'elles aient chanté,	*that they may*	

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse chanté,	*that I (might)*	*have sung.*
que tu eusses chanté,	*that thou mightst*	
qu'il *or* qu'elle eût chanté,	*that he* or *she might*	
que nous eussions chanté,	*that we might*	
que vous eussiez chanté,	*that you might*	
qu'ils *or* qu'elles eussent chanté,	*that they might*	

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . chanter, *to sing.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . chantant, *singing.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . ayant chanté, *having sung.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (variable) . . . . . chanté, e, *sung.*

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Model Verb in *ir* . . . . . **Chois-*ir*, *to choose*.**

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je choisis,	*I choose.*
tu choisis,	*thou choosest.*
il *or* elle choisit.	*he* or *she chooses.*
nous choisissons.	*we choose.*
vous choisissez.	*you choose.*
ils *or* elles choisissent,	*they choose.*

IMPERFECT.

je choisissais,	*I was choosing* or *used to choose.*
tu choisissais,	*thou wast choosing.*
il *or* elle choisissait,	*he* or *she was choosing.*
nous choisissions,	*we were choosing.*
vous choisissiez,	*you were choosing.*
ils *or* elles choisissaient,	*they were choosing.*

PAST DEFINITE.

je choisis,	*I chose* or *did choose.*
tu choisis,	*thou didst choose.*
il *or* elle choisit,	*he* or *she chose.*
nous choisîmes,	*we chose.*
vous choisîtes,	*you chose.*
ils *or* elles choisirent,	*they chose.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OR PERFECT.

j'ai choisi,	*I have chosen.*
tu as choisi,	*thou hast chosen.*
il *or* elle a choisi,	*he* or *she has chosen.*
nous avons choisi,	*we have chosen.*
vous avez choisi,	*you have chosen.*
ils *or* elles ont choisi,	*they have chosen.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais choisi,	*I had chosen.*
tu avais choisi,	*thou hadst chosen.*
il *or* elle avait choisi,	*he* or *she had chosen.*
nous avions choisi,	*we had chosen.*
vous aviez choisi,	*you had chosen.*
ils *or* elles avaient choisi,	*they had chosen.*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus choisi,	*I had chosen.*
tu eus choisi,	*thou hadst chosen.*
il *or* elle eut choisi,	*he* or *she had chosen.*
nous eûmes choisi,	*we had chosen.*
vous eûtes choisi,	*you had chosen.*
ils *or* elles eurent choisi,	*they had chosen.*

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
je choisirai,	*I shall choose.*	j'aurai choisi,	*I shall have chosen.*
tu choisiras,	*thou wilt choose.*	tu auras choisi,	*thou wilt have chosen.*
il *or* elle choisira,	*he* or *she will choose.*	il *or* elle aura choisi,	*he* or *she will have chosen.*
nous choisirons,	*we shall choose.*	nous aurons choisi,	*we shall have chosen.*
vous choisirez,	*you will choose.*	vous aurez choisi,	*you will have chosen.*
ils *or* elles choisiront,	*they will choose.*	ils *or* elles auront choisi,	*they will have chosen.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je choisirais,	*I should choose.*	j'aurais choisi,	*I should have chosen.*
tu choisirais,	*thou wouldst choose.*	tu aurais choisi,	*thou wouldst have chosen.*
il *or* elle choisirait,	*he* or *she would choose.*	il *or* elle aurait choisi,	*he* or *she would have chosen.*
nous choisirions,	*we should choose.*	nous aurions choisi,	*we should have chosen.*
vous choisiriez,	*you would choose.*	vous auriez choisi,	*you would have chosen.*
ils *or* elles choisiraient,	*they would choose.*	ils *or* elles auraient choisi,	*they would have chosen.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

choisis,	*choose* (*thou*).
choisissons,	*let us choose.*
choisissez,	*choose* (*ye* or *you*).

Auxiliary — *avoir, to have* — (3) Interrogatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD. — *Continued.*

Simple Tenses.

PAST DEFINITE.

eus-je ?	*had I ?*
eus-tu ?	*hadst thou ?*
eut-il ?	*had he ?*
eûmes-nous ?	*had we ?*
eûtes-vous ?	*had you ?*
eurent-ils ?	*had they ?*

FUTURE.

aurai-je ?	*shall I have ?*
auras-tu ?	*wilt thou have ?*
aura-t-il ?	*will he have ?*
aurons-nous ?	*shall we have ?*
aurez-vous ?	*will you have ?*
auront-ils ?	*will they have ?*

Compound Tenses.

PAST ANTERIOR.

eus-je eu ?	*had I had ?*
eus-tu eu ?	*hadst thou had ?*
eut-il eu ?	*had he had ?*
eûmes-nous eu ?	*had we had ?*
eûtes-vous eu ?	*had you had ?*
eurent-ils eu ?	*had they had ?*

FUTURE PERFECT.

aurai-je eu ?	*shall I have had ?*
auras-tu eu ?	*wilt thou have had ?*
aura-t-il eu ?	*will he have had ?*
aurons-nous eu ?	*shall we have had ?*
aurez-vous eu ?	*will you have had ?*
auront-ils eu ?	*will they have had ?*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

aurais-je ?	*should I have ?*
aurais-tu ?	*wouldst thou have ?*
aurait-il ?	*would he have ?*
aurions-nous ?	*should we have ?*
auriez-vous ?	*would you have ?*
auraient-ils ?	*would they have ?*

PERFECT.

aurais-je eu ?	*should I have had ?*
aurais-tu eu ?	*wouldst thou have had ?*
aurait-il eu ?	*would he have had ?*
aurions-nous eu ?	*should we have had ?*
auriez-vous eu ?	*would you have had ?*
auraient-ils eu ?	*would they have had ?*

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Model Verb in *oir* . . . . . **Rec(ev)-*oir*,** *to receive.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je reçois,	*I receive.*
tu reçois,	*thou receivest.*
il *or* elle reçoit,	*he* or *she receives.*
nous recevons,	*we receive.*
vous recevez,	*you receive.*
ils *or* elles reçoivent,	*they receive.*

IMPERFECT.

ju recevais,	*I was receiving* or *used to receive.*
tu recevais,	*thou wast receiving.*
il *or* elle recevait,	*he* or *she was receiving.*
nous recevions,	*we were receiving.*
vous receviez,	*you were receiving.*
ils *or* elles recevaient,	*they were receiving.*

PAST DEFINITE.

je reçus,	*I received* or *did receive.*
tu reçus,	*thou receivedst.*
il *or* elle reçut,	*he* or *she received.*
nous reçûmes,	*we received.*
vous reçûtes,	*you received.*
ils *or* elles reçurent.	*they received.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OF PERFECT.

j'ai reçu,	*I have received.*
tu as reçu,	*thou hast received.*
il *or* elle a reçu,	*he* or *she has received.*
nous avons reçu,	*we have received.*
vous avez reçu,	*you have received.*
ils *or* elles ont reçu,	*they have received.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais reçu,	*I had received* or *been receiving.*
tu avais reçu,	*thou hadst received.*
il avait *or* elle reçu,	*he* or *she had received.*
nous avions reçu,	*we had received.*
vous aviez reçu,	*you had received.*
ils *or* elles avaient reçu,	*they had received.*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus reçu,	*I had received.*
tu eus reçu,	*thou hadst received.*
il *or* elle eut reçu,	*he* or *she had received.*
nous eûmes reçu,	*we had received.*
vous eûtes reçu,	*you had received.*
ils *or* elles eurent reçu,	*they had received.*

THIRD CONJUGATION. — *Continued.*

Model Verb in *oir* . . . . . **Rec(ev)-*oir*, *to receive*.**

INDICATIVE MOOD. — *Continued.*

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
je recevrai,	*I shall receive.*	j'aurai reçu,	*I shall have received.*
tu recevras,	*thou wilt receive.*	tu auras reçu,	*thou wilt have received.*
il *or* elle recevra,	*he* or *she will receive.*	il *or* elle aura reçu,	*he* or *she will have received.*
nous recevrons,	*we shall receive.*	nous aurons reçu,	*we shall have received.*
vous recevrez,	*you will receive.*	vous aurez reçu,	*you will have received.*
ils *or* elles recevront,	*they will receive.*	ils *or* elles auront reçu,	*they will have received.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je recevrais,	*I should receive.*	j'aurais reçu,	*I should have received.*
tu recevrais,	*thou wouldst receive.*	tu aurais reçu,	*thou wouldst have received.*
il *or* elle recevrait,	*he* or *she would receive.*	il *or* elle aurait reçu,	*he* or *she would have received.*
nous recevrions,	*we should receive.*	nous aurions reçu,	*we should have received.*
vous recevriez,	*you would receive.*	vous auriez reçu,	*you would have received.*
ils *or* elles recevraient,	*they would receive.*	ils *or* elles auraient reçu,	*they would have received.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

reçois,	*receive (thou).*
recevons,	*let us receive.*
recevez,	*receive (ye* or *you).*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

que je reçoive,	*that I (may) receive.*
que tu reçoives,	*that thou mayst receive.*
qu'il *or* qu'elle reçoive,	*that he* or *she may receive.*
que nous recevions,	*that we may receive.*
que vous receviez,	*that you may receive.*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles reçoivent,	*that they may receive.*

IMPERFECT.

que je reçusse,	*that I (might) receive.*
que tu reçusses,	*that thou mightst receive.*
qu'il *or* qu'elle reçût,	*that he* or *she might receive.*
que nous reçussions,	*that we might receive.*
que vous reçussiez,	*that you might receive.*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles reçussent,	*that they might receive.*

PERFECT.

que j'aie reçu,	*that I (may)*	*have received.*
que tu aies reçu,	*that thou mayst*	
qu'il *or* qu'elle ait reçu,	*that he* or *she may*	
que nous ayons reçu,	*that we may*	
que vous ayez reçu,	*that you may*	
qu'ils *or* qu'elles aient reçu,	*that they may*	

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse reçu,	*that I (might)*	*have received.*
que tu eusses reçu,	*that thou mightst*	
qu'il *or* qu'elle eût reçu,	*that he* or *she might*	
que nous eussions reçu,	*that we might*	
que vous eussiez reçu,	*that you might*	
qu'ils *or* qu'elles eussent reçu,	*that they might*	

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . recevoir,* *to receive.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . recevant, *receiving.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . ayant reçu, *having received.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (variable) . . . . . reçu, e, *received.*

---

* All verbs in *evoir* change *ev* into *oi* before the consonant of the three persons sing. and 3d pers. plur. of the pres. ind., pres. subj., and in the 2d pers. sing. of the imperative. Except in the pret., impf. subj., and past part., they retain *ev*, and the stem *recev* is then followed by the endings of the 1st conjugation. Notice, also, that the fut. and cond. take the forms *recevrai-s*, instead of *recevoirai-s*.

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Model Verb in *re* . . . . . **Vend-*re*,** *to sell.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je vends,	*I sell.*
tu vends,	*thou sellest.*
il *or* elle vend,	*he* or *she sells.*
nous vendons,	*we sell.*
vous vendez,	*you sell.*
ils *or* elles vendent,	*they sell.*

IMPERFECT.

je vendais,	*I was selling* or *used to sell.*
tu vendais,	*thou wast selling.*
il *or* elle vendait,	*he* or *she was selling.*
nous vendions,	*we were selling.*
vous vendiez,	*you were selling.*
ils *or* elles vendaient,	*they were selling.*

PAST DEFINITE.

je vendis,	*I sold* or *did sell.*
tu vendis,	*thou didst sell.*
il *or* elle vendit,	*he* or *she sold.*
nous vendîmes,	*we sold.*
vous vendîtes,	*you sold.*
ils *or* elles vendirent,	*they sold.*

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OF PERFECT.

j'ai vendu,	*I have sold.*
tu as vendu,	*thou hast sold.*
il *or* elle a vendu,	*he* or *she has sold.*
nous avons vendu,	*we have sold.*
vous avez vendu,	*you have sold.*
ils *or* elles ont vendu,	*they have sold.*

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais vendu,	*I had sold* or *been selling.*
tu avais vendu,	*thou hadst sold.*
il *or* elle avait vendu,	*he* or *she had sold.*
nous avions vendu,	*we had sold.*
vous aviez vendu,	*you had sold.*
ils *or* elles avaient vendu,	*they had sold.*

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus vendu,	*I had sold.*
tu eus vendu,	*thou hadst sold.*
il *or* elle eut vendu,	*he* or *she had sold.*
nous eûmes vendu,	*we had sold.*
vous eûtes vendu,	*you had sold.*
ils *or* elles eurent vendu,	*they had sold.*

FUTURE.		FUTURE PERFECT.	
je vendrai,	*I shall sell.*	j'aurai vendu,	*I shall have sold.*
tu vendras,	*thou wilt sell.*	tu auras vendu,	*thou wilt have sold.*
il *or* elle vendra,	*he* or *she will sell.*	il *or* elle aura vendu,	*he* or *she will have sold.*
nous vendrons,	*we shall sell.*	nous aurons vendu,	*we shall have sold.*
vous vendrez,	*you will sell.*	vous aurez vendu,	*you will have sold.*
ils *or* elles vendront,	*they will sell.*	ils *or* elles auront vendu,	*they will have sold.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.		PERFECT.	
je vendrais,	*I should sell.*	j'aurais vendu,	*I should have sold.*
tu vendrais,	*thou wouldst sell.*	tu aurais vendu,	*thou wouldst have sold.*
il *or* elle vendrait,	*he* or *she would sell.*	il *or* elle aurait vendu,	*he* or *she would have sold.*
nous vendrions,	*we should sell.*	nous aurions vendu,	*we should have sold.*
vous vendriez,	*you would sell.*	vous auriez vendu,	*you would have sold.*
ils *or* elles vendraient,	*they would sell.*	ils *or* elles auraient vendu,	*they would have sold.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vends,	*sell (thou).*
vendons,	*let us sell.*
vendez,	*sell (ye* or *you).*

FOURTH CONJUGATION. — *Continued.*

Model Verb in *re* . . . . . Vend-*re*, *to sell.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

que je vende,	*that I (may) sell.*
que tu vendes,	*that thou mayst sell.*
qu'il *or* qu'elle vende,	*that he* or *she may sell.*
que nous vendions,	*that we may sell.*
que vous vendiez,	*that you may sell.*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles vendent,	*that they may sell.*

IMPERFECT.

que je vendisse,	*that I (might) sell.*
que tu vendisses,	*that thou mightst sell.*
qu'il *or* qu'elle vendît,	*that he* or *she might sell.*
que nous vendissions,	*that we might sell.*
que vous vendissiez,	*that you might sell.*
qu'ils *or* qu'elles vendissent,	*that they might sell.*

Compound Tenses.

PERFECT.

que j'aie vendu,	*that I (may)*	*have sold.*
que tu aies vendu,	*that thou mayst*	
qu'il *or* qu'elle ait vendu,	*that he* or *she may*	
que nous ayons vendu,	*that we may*	
que vous ayez vendu,	*that you may*	
qu'ils *or* qu'elles aient vendu,	*that they may*	

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse vendu,	*that I (might)*	*have sold.*
que tu eusses vendu,	*that thou mightst*	
qu'il *or* qu'elle eût vendu,	*that he* or *she might*	
que nous eussions vendu,	*that we might*	
que vous eussiez vendu,	*that you might*	
qu'ils *or* qu'elles eussent vendu,	*that they might*	

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . vendre, *to sell.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . vendant, *selling.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . ayant vendu, *having sold.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (variable) . . . . . vendu, e, *sold.*

The Passive Voice.

When the object of a verb makes the sense complete without a preposition, it is said to be the *direct* object.* When, on the contrary, a preposition is required, either expressed or understood, in order to complete the sense of the verb, the object is called the *indirect.**

Ex. — ***Cet enfant a frappé mon chien***, this child has struck my dog.
J'ai envoyé un message, I have sent a message.
Le commandant du navire fut tué par un sauvage, the captain of the vessel was killed by a savage.
Je vous ai parlé de lui, I spoke of him to you.

A verb which requires a direct object can always be conjugated in two quite different ways, — in the *active* voice and the *passive* voice.

In the *active* voice it is conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir.*

Ex. — ***Mes voisins ont vendu leurs voitures***, my neighbors have sold their carriages.

In the *passive* voice it is conjugated with the auxiliary *être.*

Ex. — ***Les voitures ont été vendues par mes voisins***, the carriages have been sold by my neighbors.

It may be seen that the *subject* of the verb in the active voice becomes the *indirect object* in the passive, while the *object* is turned into the *subject.*

---

* The direct object always answers to the question qui? (*whom?*) for persons, or quoi? (*what?*) for things. Ex.: *Cet enfant a frappé quoi? — Mon chien. J'ai envoyé quoi? — Un message.* Here, then, we have the words *chien* and *message* as direct objects of the verbs *frapper* and *envoyer* respectively.

The indirect object answers to the question à qui? (*to whom?*) for persons, and à quoi? (*to what?*) for things. Ex.: *J'ai parlé à qui? — À vous.*

The indirect object further answers to qui and quoi *in conjunction with any other preposition.* Ex.: *Je vous ai parlé de qui? — De lui. Le commandant fut tué par qui? — Par un sauvage.* Here *lui* and *sauvage* are the indirect objects.

PASSIVE VERB.

Model Verb . . . . . *être frappé, to be struck.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je suis / tu es } frappé *or* frappée, *I am struck.*
il est frappé, elle est frappée.
nous sommes / vous * êtes } frappés *or* frappées.
ils sont frappés, elles sont frappées.

IMPERFECT.

j'étais / tu étais } frappé *or* frappée, *I was struck.*
il était frappé, elle était frappée.
nous étions / vous étiez } frappés *or* frappées.
ils étaient frappés, elles étaient frappées.

PAST DEFINITE.

je fus / tu fus } frappé *or* frappée, *I was struck.*
il fut frappé, elle fut frappée.
nous fûmes / vous fûtes } frappés *or* frappées.
ils furent frappés, elles furent frappées.

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OR PERFECT.

j'ai été / tu as été } frappé *or* frappée { *I have been struck, I was struck.*
il a été frappé, elle a été frappée.
nous avons été / vous avez été } frappés *or* frappées.
ils ont été frappés, elle ont été frappées.

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais été / tu avais été } frappé *or* frappée, *I had been struck.*
il avait été frappé, elle avait été frappée.
nous avions été / vous aviez été } frappés *or* frappées.
ils avaient été frappés, elles avaient été frappées.

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus été / tu eus été } frappé *or* frappée, *I had been struck.*
il eut été frappé, elle eut été frappée.
nous eûmes été / vous eûtes été } frappés *or* frappées.
ils eurent été frappés, elles eurent été frappées.

---

* When *vous* is used as a mark of respect in place of *tu*, the past part. must be put in the *sing.* (agreeing with the gender of *vous*).

FUTURE.

je serai } frappé *or* frappée, *I shall be struck.*
tu seras }
il sera frappé, elle sera frappée.
nous serons } frappés *or* frappées.
vous serez }
ils seront frappés, elles seront frappées.

FUTURE PERFECT.

j'aurai été } frappé *or* frappée { *I shall have been struck.*
tu auras été }
il aura été frappé, elle aura été frappée.
nous aurons été } frappés *or* frappées.
vous aurez été }
ils auront été frappés, elles auront été frappées.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

je serais } frappé *or* frappée, *I should be struck.*
tu serais }
il serait frappé, elle serait frappée.
nous serions } frappés *or* frappées.
vous seriez }
ils seraient frappés, elles seraient frappées.

PERFECT.

j'aurais été } frappé *or* frappée { *I should have been struck.*
tu aurais été }
il aurait été frappé, elle aurait été frappée.
nous aurions été } frappés *or* frappées.
vous auriez été }
ils auraient été frappés, elles auraient été frappées.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sois frappé *or* frappée, *be struck (thou).*
soyons } frappés *or* frappées, { *let us be struck.*
soyez } { *be struck (ye* or *you).*

PASSIVE VERB. — *Continued.*

Model Verb . . . . . ***être frappé***, *to be struck.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

que je sois } frappé *or* frappée { *that I (may) be struck.*
que tu sois }
qu'il soit frappé, qu'elle soit frappée.
que nous soyons } frappés *or* frappées.
que vous soyez }
qu'ils soient frappés, qu'elles soient frappées.

IMPERFECT.

que je fusse } frappé *or* frappée { *that I (might) be struck.*
que tu fusses }
qu'il fût frappé, qu'elle fût frappée.
que nous fussions } frappés *or* frappées.
que vous fussiez }
qu'ils fussent frappés, qu'elles fussent frappées.

Compound Tenses.

PERFECT.

que j'aie été } frappé *or* frappée { *that I (may) have been struck.*
que tu aies été }
qu'il ait été frappé, qu'elle ait été frappée.
que nous ayons été } frappés *or* frappées.
que vous ayez été }
qu'ils aient été frappés, qu'elles aient été frappées.

PLUPERFECT.

que j'eusse été } frappé *or* frappée { *that I (might) have been struck.*
que tu eusses été }
qu'il eût été frappé, qu'elle eût été frappée.
que nous eussions été } frappés *or* frappées.
que vous eussiez été }
qu'ils eussent été frappés, qu'elles eussent été frappées.

INFINITIVE MOOD . . . . . être frappé *or* frappée, *to be struck.*

PRESENT PARTICIPLE . . étant frappé *or* frappée } *being struck.* | PERFECT PARTICIPLE . . ayant été frappé *or* frappée } *having been struck.*

PAST PARTICIPLE (variable) . . . . . frappé *or* frappée, *struck.*

The Past Participle.

The past participle, employed without auxiliary, is considered as an adjective, and therefore agrees with the noun or pronoun which it modifies.

The past participle, used with *être*, agrees in gender and number with the *subject* (Lesson XV., Rule 18).

Ex. — *Deux jeunes filles ont été trouvées dans la rivière, où elles se sont noyées accidentellement*, two young girls have been found in the river, where they were accidentally drowned.

The past participle, used with *avoir*, agrees in gender and number with its *direct object*, if the latter *precedes* it.

Ex. — *Les demoiselles que vous avez vues sont sœurs*, the young ladies whom you have seen are sisters.

But is invariable if the direct object follows it, or if there is none.

Ex. — *Vous avez vu des demoiselles qui sont sœurs*, you have seen some young ladies who are sisters.

The Adverb.

The adverb in French is invariable. Adverbs of manner are formed by adding the suffix **ment** to the feminine adjective.

Ex. — *Sec, sèchement; heureux, heureusement; vif, vivement.*

However, **ment** is added to the *masculine*, if it ends in a vowel (when it ends with two, the last one is cut off).

Ex. — *Juste, justement; poli, polie, poliment.*

In the case of the adjectives *beau, nouveau, fou,* and *mou,* the forms *bel, nouvel, fol,* and *mol,* are considered as the regular masculines; hence the adverbs become *bellement,* etc.

Should the adjective end in **nt**, it is to the masculine again that the suffix **ment** is added; but the **nt** is changed into **m** in the process.

Ex. — *Prudent, prudemment; méchant, méchamment.*

The three adjectives *lent, présent,* and *véhément,* however, form their adverbs according to the general rule; thus, *lentement, présentement,* etc.

The following adjectives, while forming their adverbs regularly, place an acute accent over the **e** before **ment**: —

aveugle, *blind.*	aveuglément, *blindly.*
commode, *convenient.*	commodément, *conveniently.*
commun, *common.*	communément, *commonly.*
conforme, *conformable.*	conformément, *conformably.*
confus, *confused.*	confusément, *confusedly.*
diffus, *diffuse.*	diffusément, *diffusely.*
énorme, *enormous.*	énormément, *enormously.*
exprès, *express (positive).*	expressément, *expressly.*
immense, *immense.*	immensément, *immensely.*
importun, *importunate.*	importunément, *importunately.*
incommode, *inconvenient.*	incommodément, *inconveniently.*
obscur, *dark.*	obscurément, *obscurely.*
opiniâtre, *obstinate.*	opiniâtrément, *obstinately.*
précis, *exact.*	précisément, *exactly.*
profond, *deep.*	profondément, *profoundly.*
uniforme, *uniform.*	uniformément, *uniformly.*

The following adjectives form their adverbs irregularly: —

bref, *short, brief.*	brièvement, *briefly.*
gentil, *pretty, nice, gentle.*	gentiment, *prettily, nicely.*
traître, *treacherous.*	traîtreusement, *treacherously.*

Besides the adverbs ending in **ment**, there are many others of which the following are the most in use: —

ainsi, *thus.*	exprès, *purposely.*
aussi, *also.*	fort, *very.*
bien, *well.*	mal, *badly.*

même, *even.*

Adjectives of quality are also occasionally used as adverbs, in which case they are, of course, invariable.

Ex. — *Ce ténor chante faux*, this tenor sings out of tune.

The principal adjectives thus employed are, —

bas, *low*,	*used with*	parler, *to speak*.
bon, *good*,	"	sentir, *to smell*.
cher, *dear*,	"	coûter, *to cost*, acheter, *and* vendre.
clair, *clear*,	"	voir, *to see*.
droit, *straight*,	"	marcher, *to walk*.
exprès, *expressly*,	"	faire, *to make*; venir, *to come*; and many others.
faux, *out of tune*,	"	chanter, *to sing*; jouer, *to play*.
haut, *loud*,	"	parler, *to speak*.
juste, *in tune*,	"	chanter *and* jouer.
mauvais, *bad*,	"	sentir, *to smell*.
vite, *quickly*,	*used always, there being no adverb.*	

Place of Adverbs.

Contrary to English usage, an adverb in French can never be placed between the subject and the verb. It usually stands directly after the verb in a simple tense, and between the auxiliary and past participle in a compound tense.

Ex. — *Il partit bientôt*, he soon went away.
Elles jouent bien du piano, they play the piano well.
Cet enfant a énormément grandi, this child has grown enormously.

Exceptions to this rule are *hier, demain, aujourd'hui, ici, là*, and all adverbial locutions, which stand after the past participle.

Ex. — *Nous sommes allées hier au théâtre*, we went to the theater yesterday.
Mon frère est parti tout à l'heure pour l'Europe, my brother has just left for Europe.

However, in interrogative or exclamatory sentences, or when the attention must be drawn upon the adverb, the latter may begin the sentence.

Ex. — *Combien de fois ne vous ai-je pas dit cela?* How many times have I not told you that?

The Preposition.

No preposition can ever stand at the end of a clause in French, as is sometimes the case in English.

Ex. — What is your sister speaking of? *De quoi mademoiselle votre sœur parle-t-elle?*

Similarity of English and French Words.

The student will doubtless have noticed the great similarity of very many words in the two languages, particularly as regards those of more than two syllables.

Words with certain endings are mostly identical in the two languages.* Such endings are, —

ace, ice,	as *grâce, police.*
ance, ence,	" *repentance, providence, innocence.*
ant, ent,	" *pétulant, latent, pénitent.*
acle,	" *spectacle, obstacle.*
ade,	" *fusillade, cannonade.*
al,	" *royal, papal.*
ble,	" *capable, Bible, noble, trouble.*
ge, gue,	" *privilège, catalogue.*
ile,	" *mobile, agile.*
ine,	" *héroïne, sardine.*
ion,	" *nation, privation.*
ude,	" *solicitude, rectitude.*

Many other words (nouns and adjectives) have no other difference than a slight change in the termination. Such are words ending as follows: —

acy	changed into	**atie,**	as *aristocratie.*
ary, ory		**aire, oire,**	" *tributaire, Grégoire.*
ancy, ency		**ance, ence,**	" *pétulance, décence, régence.*
ia		**ie,**	" *Pensylvanie, Asie.*
ic, cal		**ique,**	as *musique, dogmatique, république.*

* Of course, allowing for accents.

ine	changed into	**in,***	as	*clandestin.*
ist		**iste,**	"	*liste, baptiste.*
ive		**if,***	"	*primitif, actif.*
or, our		**eur,**	"	*acteur, mineur.*
ous		**eux,**	"	*joyeux, fameux.*
ty after a vowel		**té,**	"	*beauté, université.*
y after a consonant		**ie,**	"	*sympathie, monarchie, mélancolie.*

Many English verbs with the following endings may be converted into French verbs simply by a change of their terminations. Thus, —

ate	becomes	**er,**	as	to agitate, incriminate,	*agiter, incriminer.*
ish	"	**ir,**	"	to finish,	*finir.*
ise, ize	"	**iser,**	"	to civilize,	*civiliser.*
use	"	**user,**	"	to abuse,	*abuser.*
ute	"	**uer** / **uter**	"	to execute, constitute,	*exécuter, constituer.*
ore	"	**orer,**	"	to explore,	*explorer.*
fy	"	**fier,**	"	to solidify,	*solidifier.*

* It is to be remarked that in the *feminine* this ending is identical with the English *ive, ine.*

VOCABULARY.

FRENCH-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH-FRENCH.

PASSIVE VERB.

Model Verb . . . . . ***être frappé, to be struck.***

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

je suis / tu es } frappé *or* frappée, *I am struck.*
il est frappé, elle est frappée.
nous sommes / vous * êtes } frappés *or* frappées.
ils sont frappés, elles sont frappées.

IMPERFECT.

j'étais / tu étais } frappé *or* frappée, *I was struck.*
il était frappé, elle était frappée.
nous étions / vous étiez } frappés *or* frappées.
ils étaient frappés, elles étaient frappées.

PAST DEFINITE.

je fus / tu fus } frappé *or* frappée, *I was struck.*
il fut frappé, elle fut frappée.
nous fûmes / vous fûtes } frappés *or* frappées.
ils furent frappés, elles furent frappées.

Compound Tenses.

PAST INDEFINITE OR PERFECT.

j'ai été / tu as été } frappé *or* frappée { *I have been struck, I was struck.*
il a été frappé, elle a été frappée.
nous avons été / vous avez été } frappés *or* frappées.
ils ont été frappés, elle ont été frappées.

PLUPERFECT.

j'avais été / tu avais été } frappé *or* frappée, *I had been struck.*
il avait été frappé, elle avait été frappée.
nous avions été / vous aviez été } frappés *or* frappées.
ils avaient été frappés, elles avaient été frappées.

PAST ANTERIOR.

j'eus été / tu eus été } frappé *or* frappée, *I had been struck.*
il eut été frappé, elle eut été frappée.
nous eûmes été / vous eûtes été } frappés *or* frappées.
ils eurent été frappés, elles eurent été frappées.

---

* When *vous* is used as a mark of respect in place of *tu*, the past part. must be put in the *sing.* (agreeing with the gender of *vous*).

VOCABULARY.*

I. FRENCH-ENGLISH.

A.

., *has.*
ep., *to, at.*
lant, adj., *abundant, plentiful.*
ot, n. m., *apricot.*
ıce, n. f., *absence.*
ıt, -e, adj., *absent.*
ument, adv., *absolutely.*
ıté, p.p., *accepted.*
ıter, v. tr., *to accept.*
nplir, v. tr., *to accomplish.*
:é, p.p., *bought.*
:er, v. tr., *to buy.*
ır, n. m., *actor.*
, -ve, adj., *active, brisk.*
n, n. f., *act, action.*
:e, n. f., *actress.*
rablement, adv., *admirably.*
ration, n. f., *admiration.*
rer, v. tr., *to admire.*
ıser, v. tr., *to address* (letters, .).
:n, n. m., *Adrian.*
'e, n. f., *affair, thing.*
'es, n. f. pl., *business.*
:ion, n. f., *affection.*
ıchir, v. tr., *to prepay, stamp.*
ıue, f., *Africa.*

âgé, adj., *old, aged.*
âge, n. m., *age.*
agent, n. m., *agent.*
agent de change, n. m., *exchange broker.*
agile, adj., *agile.*
agir, v. intr., *to act.*
aider, v. tr., *to help, aid.*
aïeul, n. m., *grandfather.*
aïeux, n. m. pl., *ancestors, forefathers.*
aiguille, n. f., *needle.*
aiguille à tricoter, n. f., *knitting needle.*
aimable, adj., *amiable.*
aime (il), pres. indic., *he likes.*
aimer, v. tr., *to love, like, care for, be fond of, fancy.*
aimez (vous), v. tr., *you like, love.*
aîné, adj., *elder.*
ainsi, adv., *thus.*
air, n. m., *air.*
  avoir l'air, *to appear, look, seem.*
aise, n. f., *ease.*
  être bien aise, *to be glad.*
ajouté, p.p., *added.*
ajouter, v. tr., *to add.*

---

t goes without saying that we give only the words occurring in the exercises, and he meaning in which they have been used; for a word may have several acceptations ı languages. The words contained in the Appendix have been left out.

alarmé, p.p. as adj., *alarmed.*
Alaska, n., *Alaska.*
Alice, n. f., *Alice.*
allé, p.p., *gone.*
†**aller**, v. intr., *to go.*
†**aller bien**, *to keep time* (of a watch), *to be well* (of persons).
†**aller en voiture**, *to go for a drive.*
†**allez !** imper. of **aller**, *go !*
alors, adv., *then.*
amateur, n. m., *amateur.*
ambition, n. f., *ambition.*
amener, v. tr., *to bring* (of persons).
amer, -ère, adj., *bitter.*
amèrement, adv., *bitterly.*
Américain, n. m., *American.*
Amérique, f., *America.*
Amérique du Sud, f., *South America.*
ami, n. m., *friend.*
amiral, n. m., *admiral.*
amusant, -e, adj., *amusing.*
amusement, n. m., *amusement, enjoyment.*
an, n. m., *year.*
Anglais, n. m., *Englishman.*
anglais, n. m., *English.*
Anglaise, n. f., *Englishwoman.*
Angleterre, f., *England.*
animal, n. m., *animal.*
année, n. f., *year.*
annonce, n. f., *advertisement.*
annoncer, v. tr., *to announce, proclaim.*
annulaire, n. m., *ring finger.*
antérieur, adj., *anterior.*
août, n. m., *August.*
apercevoir, v. tr., *to perceive, make out.*
apparence, n. f., *appearance.*
†**appartient**, pres. indic. of **appartenir**, *belongs.*
†**appartiennent**, pres. indic., *they belong.*
appeler, v. tr., *to call.*
appétit, n. m., *appetite.*
applaudir, v. tr., *to applaud.*
application, n. f., *industry.*
apporté, p.p., *brought, fetched.*
apporter, v. tr., *to bring, fetch.*
†**apprendre**, v. tr., *to learn.*
†**appris**, p.p., *learnt.*
appuyer, v. tr., *to support.*
après, prep., *after.*
après-demain, adv., *day after tomorrow.*
après-midi, n. m. and f., *afternoon.*
arbre, n. m., *tree.*
architecture, n. f., *architecture.*
ardoise, n. f., *slate.*
argent, n. m., *silver, money.*
argent comptant, n. m., *ready money, cash.*
armée, n. f., *army.*
arracher, v. tr., *to draw, extract.*
arrivé, p.p., *arrived, happened.*
arriver, v. intr., *to arrive.*
arrogant, -e, adj., *arrogant.*
Arthur, n. m., *Arthur.*
artificiel, -le, adj., *artificial.*
artiste, n. m. and f., *artist.*
assassin, n. m. and f., *murderer, assassin.*
†**asseyez-vous**, *sit down !*
assez, adv., *enough.*
assez bien, adv. loc., *quite well.*
assiette, n. f., *plate.*
†**assis**, p.p. of **asseoir**, *seated, sitting.*
assurément, adv., *assuredly, certainly, surely.*
assurer, v. tr., *to assure.*
attaquer, v. tr., *to attack.*
attelé (de), p.p., *drawn (by)* (of a carriage).
attendre, v. tr. and intr., *to expect, wait (for).*
attentif, -ve, adj., *attentive.*
attraper, v. tr., *to catch.*
au, prep. and art. m. s., *to the.*
aucun, -e, adj., *no.*
aucun, pron., *nobody, no one.*

au-dessus, adv., *above.*
aumône, n. f., *alms.*
aujourd'hui, adv., *to-day, nowadays.*
auquel, à laquelle, auxquels, auxquelles, pron., *to whom, to which.*
aussi, adv., *also, too, as, so.*
aussitôt que, conj., *as soon as.*
autant, adv., *as much, as many.*
automne, n. m. and f., *autumn, fall.*
autre, adj., *other.*
autrefois, adv., *formerly.*
autrement, adv., *otherwise.*
autrui, pron., *others.*
aux, prep. and art. m. pl., *to the.*
avance, v. intr., *is fast* (of a watch).
avancé, p.p. as adj., *advanced.*
avancer, v. intr., *to advance, go fast* (of a watch).
avant-dernier, -ère, adj., *last but one.*
avant-hier, adv., *day before yesterday.*
avec, prep., *with.*
avenir, n. m., *future.*
aveugle, adj., *blind.*
avis, n. m., *advice, notice, opinion.*
avocat, n. m., *lawyer.*
†avoir, v. tr., *to have.*
avril, n. m., *April.*

B.

bagage, n. m., *luggage, baggage.*
bague, n. f., *ring.*
bain, n. m., *bath.*
bal, n. m., *ball, dance.*
balayer, v. tr., *to sweep.*
balle, n. f., *ball, sphere.*
banc, n. m., *bench.*
Baptiste, n. m., *Baptist.*
barre, n. f., *bar, rod of iron or wood.*
bas, -se, adj., *low.*
bas, adv., *low.*
bas, n. m., *stocking.*
basse (contre), n. f., *bass viol.*
bataille, n. f., *battle.*
bateau, n. m., *boat.*
bâtiment, n. m., *building.*
bâtir, v. tr., *to build.*
bâton, n. m., *stick.*
battu, p.p. of **battre**, *beaten.*
bavard, -e, adj., *talkative.*
beau, belle, adj., *beautiful, fine.*
beaucoup, adv., *much, many, a good deal.*
beauté, n. f., *beauty.*
bébé, n. m., *baby.*
bel, -le, adj., *fine, beautiful.*
bénéfice, n. m., *profit, gain.*
bénir, v. tr., *to bless.*
berceuse, n. f., *rocking-chair.*
berger, n. m., *shepherd.*
Berthe, n. f., *Bertha.*
besoin, n. m., *need, want.*
bête, adj., *stupid, silly.*
beurre, n. m., *butter.*
bibliothèque, n. f., *library.*
bien, adv., *well, much, many.*
eh bien! loc. interj., *well!*
bien, n. m., *good, welfare.*
bien cuit, adj., *well done (cooked).*
bienfaisance, n. f., *benevolence.*
bientôt, adv., *soon.*
bijou, n. m., *jewel.*
bijouterie, n. f., *jewelry.*
billet, n. m., *note, ticket, check, bill.*
billet de banque, n. m., *bank note.*
billet de chemin de fer, n. m., *railway ticket.*
billet de commerce, n. m., *draft, note, bill.*
billet de théâtre, n. m., *theater ticket.*
bissextile, adj., *leap* (year).
blâmer, v. tr., *to blame.*
blanc, -che, adj., *white.*
Blanche, n. f., *Blanche.*
bleu, -e, adj., *blue.*
bœuf, n. m., *beef, ox.*
†boire, v. tr. and intr., *to drink.*
†bois (je), pres. indic., *I drink.*
bois, n. m., *wood.*

boîte, n. f., *box.*
bon, -ne, adj., *good.*
bon cœur, n. m., *big heart, kind heart.*
Bonheur (Rosa), a celebrated French painter of scenery and animals.
bonjour, n. m., *good morning!*
bon marché, adv., *cheap.*
bonne, n. f., *maid.*
bonne (d'enfant), n. f., *nurse.*
bonne nuit, n. f., *good night!*
bonsoir, n. m., *good evening!*
bord, n. m., *border, edge.*
bord de la mer, n. m., *seaside, shore.*
bouche, n. f., *mouth.*
Bouguereau, a renowned French painter.
†**bouillir**, v. intr., *to boil.*
boulanger, n. m., *baker.*
bouteille, n. f., *bottle.*
boutique, n. f., *shop, store.*
bouton, n. m., *button.*
bouton de manchettes, n. m., *stud, sleeve links.*
brave, adj., *brave.*
bravoure, n. f., *pluck.*
bref, -ève, adj., *short.*
brillant, -e, adj., *brilliant, shining.*
brique, n. f., *brick.*
broche, n. f., *brooch.*
broché, adj., *unbound.*
bronchite, n. f., *bronchitis.*
brosse, n. f., *eraser, brush.*
brouillard, n. m., *fog, mist.*
bruit, n. m., *noise, rumor.*
brûlant, -e, adj., *burning, scorching.*
Bruxelles, *Brussels.*
†**bu**, p.p. of boire, *drunk.*
bureau, n. m., *office, desk.*

C.

cacher, v. tr., *to hide.*
cadeau, n. m., *present, gift.*
cadet, -te, adj., *younger.*
cadre, n. m., *frame.*
café, n. m., *coffee.*
cage, n. f., *cage.*
cahier, n. m., *copy book, exercise book.*
cahier de chansons, n. m., *song book, book of songs.*
Californie, f., *California.*
camarade, n. m. and f., *comrade.*
campagne, n. f., *country.*
Canada, m., *Canada.*
canif, n. m., *penknife.*
canne, n. f., *stick, cane.*
cantatrice, n. f., *professional singer.*
caoutchoucs, n. m., *rubber shoes.*
capitaine, n. m., *captain.*
caporal, n. m., *corporal.*
car, conj., *for.*
caractère, n. m., *character, disposition.*
carafe, n. f., *bottle.*
carte géographique, n. f., *map.*
carton à chapeau, n. m., *hatbox.*
cas, n. m., *case.*
cassé, p.p., *broken.*
casser, v. tr., *to break.*
catarrhe, n. m., *cold, catarrh.*
catholique, adj., *Catholic.*
cause, n. f., *cause, reason.*
cave, n. f., *cellar.*
ce, cette, adj., *this, that.*
céder, v. tr., *to yield, give up.*
cela, pron., *that.*
célèbre, adj., *celebrated.*
celle, pron. f., *that, this (one).*
celle-ci, pron. f., *this one.*
celle-là, pron. f., *that one.*
celles, pron. f. pl., *these, those.*
celui, pron. m., *this, that (one).*
celui-ci, pron. m., *this one.*
celui-là, pron. m., *that one.*
celui qui, pron. m., *he who.*
cent, *hundred;* -ième, *hundredth.*
central, -e, adj., *central.*
cent un, adj., *hundred and one.*
cent unième, adj., *hundred and first.*
cependant, conj., *still, nevertheless.*

cerise, n. f., *cherry.*
certainement, adv., *certainly, indeed.*
ces, pron. m. and f. pl., *these, those.*
cesse, n. f., *ceasing.*
sans cesse, *eternally.*
cet, -te, adj., *this, that.*
ceux, pron. m. pl., *these, those.*
ceux-ci, pron. m. pl., *those* (here).
ceux-là, pron. m. pl., *those* (yonder).
chacun, -e, pron., *each one.*
chagrin, n. m., *sorrow.*
chair, n. f., *flesh.*
chaise, n. f., *chair.*
chaleur, n. f., *heat.*
chambre, n. f., *room, chamber.*
chambre à coucher, n. f., *bedroom.*
champ, n. m., *field.*
chandelier, n. m., *candlestick.*
chandelle, n. f., *candle.*
changer, v. tr. and intr., *to change.*
chanson, n. f., *song.*
chanson à reprises, n. f., *glee.*
chansonnette, n. f., *ditty.*
chant, n. m., *song.*
chant d'église, n. m., *chant.*
chant sacré, n. m., *sacred song.*
chanté, p.p., *sung.*
chanter, v. tr. and intr., *to sing.*
chapeau, n. m, *hat.*
chapelle, n. f., *chapel.*
maître de chapelle, n. m., *choir master.*
chaque, adj., *each.*
charitable, adj., *charitable.*
charité, n. f., *charity, alms.*
Charles, n. m., *Charles.*
charmant, -e, adj., *charming.*
chasse, n. f., *hunt, hunting, chase.*
chasser, v. tr., *to drive away, chase, hunt.*
chasseur, n. m., *hunter, huntsman.*
chat, n. m., *cat.*
château, n. m., *castle.*
chaud, -e, adj., *warm, hot.*
chaussette, n. f., *sock.*
chemin, n. m., *road, way.*
chemin de fer, n. m., *railway.*
cheminée, n. f., *chimney.*
dessus de cheminée, n.m., *chimneypiece, mantelpiece.*
chemise, n. f., *shirt.*
chemise de nuit, n. f., *night* { *gown.* / *shirt.* }
chèque, n. m., *check.*
cher, -ère, adj, *dear, expensive.*
chercher (à), v. intr., *to endeavor, try.*
cheval, n. m., *horse.*
cheveu, n. m., *hair.*
chevreau, n. m., *kid.*
chez, prep., *at the house of, at home.*
chien, n. m., *dog.*
Chili, m., *Chile.*
Chine, f., *China.*
chocolat, n. m., *chocolate.*
chœur, n. m., *choir.*
en chœur, adv. loc., *in chorus.*
choisir, v. tr., *to choose.*
chose, n. f., *thing.*
chrétien, -ne, adj., *Christian.*
chrysanthème, n. m., *chrysanthemum.*
ciel, n. m., pl. **cieux**, *sky, heaven.*
cigogne, n. f., *stork.*
cimetière, n. m., *cemetery.*
cinq, adj., *five.*
cinquante, adj., *fifty.*
cinquantième, adj., *fiftieth.*
citoyen, n. m., *citizen.*
clair, -e, adj., *clear.*
clarinette, n. f., *clarinet.*
Clarisse, n. f., *Clarissa.*
classe, n. f., *class.*
client, n. m., *client, customer.*
climat, n. m., *climate.*
cloche, n. f., *bell.*
clocher, n. m., *steeple.*
cocher, n. m., *coachman.*
cœur, n. m., *heart.*
coin, n. m., *corner.*
coin du feu, n. m., *fireside.*

col, n. m., *collar.*
collation, n. f., *lunch.*
colline, n. f., *hill.*
colonie, n. f., *colony.*
combien, adv., *how much?*
combien de temps, adv., *how long?*
comique, adj., *comical.*
commande (il), v. tr. and intr., *he commands.*
commander (à), v. tr. and intr., *to command.*
comme, adv., *as, like.*
commencé, p.p., *commenced.*
commencer, v. tr., *to commence.*
comment, adv., *how?*
comment allez-vous? *how are you?*
comment se fait-il? *how does it happen?*
commissaire de police, n. m., *police inspector.*
commode, n. f., *chest of drawers.*
commun, -e, adj., *common.*
communément, adv., *commonly.*
communication, n. f., *communication.*
†**comprendre**, v. tr., *to understand, comprise.*
†**compris**, p.p., *understood, comprised.*
comptant (argent), n. m., *ready money, cash.*
compte (il), v. tr., *he counts.*
compter, v. tr., *to count, rely.*
concentrer, v. tr., *to concentrate.*
concert, n. m., *concert.*
concevez-vous cela? *can you imagine such a thing?*
concevoir, v. tr., *to conceive.*
condamner, v. tr., *to condemn.*
conditionnel, n. m., *conditional.*
conduite, n. f., *conduct, behavior.*
confiance, n. f., *confidence.*
conforme, adj., *conformable, in accordance with.*
conformément, adv., *conformably.*
confus, adj., *confused.*
conjonctif, adj., *conjunctive.*
conjugaison, n. f., *conjugation.*
†**connais** (je), *I know.*
†**connaissez** (vous), *you know.*
†**connaître**, v. tr., *to know, be acquainted with.*
conquérant, n. m., *victor, conqueror.*
†**conquis**, p.p. of **conquérir**, *conquered.*
construction, n. f., *structure, construction.*
content, -e, adj., *contented, satisfied.*
continuellement, adv., *continually.*
contraire, adj., *contrary.*
  au contraire, adv. loc., *on the contrary.*
contre, prep., *against.*
contrebandier, n. m., *smuggler.*
corde, n. f., *rope, twine, string.*
cornet à piston, n. m., *cornet.*
correspondre, v. intr., *to correspond.*
corriger, v. tr., *to correct.*
costume, n. m., *costume.*
costume de bain, *bathing costume.*
couché, p.p., *lain.*
coucher, v. tr., *to put to bed, lay flat.*
cour, n. f., *yard, court.*
courage, n. m., *courage.*
courageux, -se, adj., *courageous.*
courant, adv., *instant* (of dates).
Courbet, late French admiral distinguished for his services in the East.
courrier, n. m., *messenger, courier.*
court, -e, adj., *short.*
cousin, n. m. } *cousin.*
cousine, n. f. }
couteau, n. m., *knife.*
couvert, n. m., *cover* (at table).
  le couvert est mis, *the table is set.*
†**couvert**, p.p. of **couvrir**, *covered.*
craie, n. f., *chalk.*
craintif, -ve, adj., *fearful, timid.*

cravate, n. f., *tie, cravat.*
crayon, n. m., *pencil.*
créature, n. f., *creature, being.*
crédit, n. m., *credit.*
créer, v. tr., *to create.*
crème, n. f., *cream.*
cri, n. m., *cry.*
criblé, p.p. as adj., lit., *sifted.*
criblé de dettes, *over head and ears in debt.*
criminel, -le, adj., *criminal.*
crocodile, n. m., *crocodile, alligator.*
†crois (je), *I believe, think.*
croyance, n. f., *belief.*
cuiller, n. f., *spoon.*
cuisine, n. f., *kitchen.*
cuisinier, n. m., *cook.*
†cuit, p.p., *cooked.*
curé, n. m., *priest, clergyman.*
curieux, -se, adj., *inquisitive, curious.*
cygne, n. m., *swan.*
cymbale, n. f., *cymbal.*

D.

dame, n. f., *lady, wife.*
danger, n. m., *danger.*
dangereux, -se, adj., *dangerous.*
dans, prep., *in.*
danse, n. f., *dance.*
danser, v. tr. and intr., *to dance.*
davantage, adv., *more.*
de, prep., *of, from.*
décembre, n. m., *December.*
décerner, v. tr., *to confer.*
décevoir, v. tr., *to disappoint, deceive.*
déchiré, p.p., *torn.*
déchoir, v. intr., *to fall, decline.*
découragé, p.p. as adj., *discouraged, dejected.*
décourager, v. tr., *to discourage.*
†découvert, p.p. of **découvrir**, *discovered; low* (of shoes).
défaite, n. f., *defeat.*
défaut, n. m., *defect, fault.*
défendu, p.p. as adj., *forbidden.*
dégradation, n. f., *degradation.*
déjà, adv., *already.*
déjeuné, p.p., *breakfasted.*
déjeuner, n. m., *breakfast.*
petit *or* **premier déjeuner**, *early breakfast.*
déjeuner, v. intr., *to take breakfast.*
de la, part. art. f. s., *some, any.*
delà de (au), prep., *beyond.*
délicieux, -se, adj., *delicious.*
délivrance, n. f., *deliverance.*
demain, adv., *to-morrow.*
demandé, p.p., *asked.*
demander, v. tr., *to demand, ask for.*
demander pardon, v. intr., *to beg pardon.*
déménager, v. intr., *to move out, remove.*
demeure, n. f., *dwelling, abode.*
demeuré, p.p., *dwelt, lived.*
demeurer, v. intr., *to dwell, live.*
demi, -e, adj., *half.*
demi-heure, n. f., *half hour.*
demoiselles, n. f. pl., *the misses, daughters, young ladies.*
dent, n. f., *tooth.*
dentelle, n. f., *lace.*
départ, n. m., *departure.*
dépendre, v. intr., *to depend.*
depuis, adv. and prep., *since.*
depuis quand, adv., *how long?*
déranger, v. tr., *to disturb.*
dernier, dernière, adj., *last.*
des, part. art. pl., *some, any.*
des, prep. and art., m. and f. pl., *of the.*
dès, prep., *since, from.*
descendent (ils), v. intr., *they come down.*
descendre, v. intr., *to come down, descend; put up* (at a hotel).

descendu, p.p., *come down, descended.*
désire (je), v. tr., *I want, desire.*
désirer, v. tr., *to desire.*
désirez (vous), v. tr., *you want, desire.*
désirons (nous), v. tr., *we want, desire.*
désobéir (à), v. intr., *to disobey.*
dès que, conj. loc., *since, after, as soon as.*
dessert, n. m., *dessert.*
dessus (au-), adv., *above.*
dette, n. f., *debt.*
deux, adj., *two.*
deux cent quarante-huit, adj., *two hundred and forty-eight.*
deux cents, adj., *two hundred.*
deuxième, adj, *second.*
devant, n. m., *front, forepart.*
†**devenu**, p.p. of **devenir**, *become.*
†**deviens** (je), pres. indic. of **devenir**, *I become.*
†**devient** (il), pres. indic. of **devenir**, *becomes.*
devoir, n. m., *duty, task, lesson, exercise.*
devoir, v. tr. and intr., *ought, must, to be obliged.*
devoir, v. tr., *to owe.*
dévorer, v. tr., *to devour.*
devriez (vous), cond. of **devoir**, *you ought.*
Dieu, n. m., *God.*
différence, n. f., *difference.*
différent, -e, adj., *different.*
difficile, adj., *difficult.*
digne, adj., *worthy.*
dimanche, n. m., *Sunday.*
diminuer, v. tr., *to lessen, decrease.*
dîner, n. m., *dinner.*
dîner, v. intr., *to dine.*
†**dirait** (on), cond. of **dire**, *one would think.*
†**dire**, v. tr., *to tell, say.*
on dirait, *one would think.*
directeur, n. m. } *director, principal.*
directrice, n. f. }
discret, discrète, adj., *discreet.*
discrétion, n. f., *discretion.*
†**disent**, pres. indic. and subj. of **dire**, *they say.*
disjonctif, adj., *disjunctive.*
distinctement, adv., *clearly, distinctly.*
distinguer, v. tr., *to distinguish, make out.*
distrait, -e, adj., *inattentive, distracted.*
†**dit**, p.p. of **dire**, *said, told.*
†**dit**, 3d pers. sing. pres. indic. of **dire**, *says.*
on dit, *it is said, they say.*
dix, adj., *ten.*
dix-huit, adj., *eighteen.*
dix-neuf, adj., *nineteen.*
dix-sept, adj., *seventeen.*
docteur, n. m., *doctor, physician.*
doigt, n. m., *finger.*
petit doigt, n. m., *little finger.*
doit, pres. indic. of **devoir**, *ought.*
ce doit être, *it must be.*
dollar, n. m., *dollar.*
domestique, n. m. and f., *servant.*
donc, conj., *then, accordingly.*
donné, p.p., *given.*
donner, v. tr., *to give.*
donnez-moi, *give me.*
dont, rel. pron., *of whom, of which, whose.*
dorénavant, adv., *henceforth.*
†**dormez!** imper., *sleep!*
†**dormi**, p.p., *slept.*
†**dormir**, v. intr., *to sleep.*
†**dors!** 2d pers. sing. imper. of **dormir**, *sleep!*
douanier, n. m., *custom-house officer.*
douceur, n. f., *gentleness, sweetness.*
douleur, n. f., *sorrow, pain, suffering.*
doute, n. m., *doubt.*
douteux, -se, adj., *doubtful.*

ce, adj., *gentle, sweet.*
ıe, n. f., *dozen.*
adj., *twelve.*
, n. f., *drug.*
.dv., *straight.*
ı. m., *right.*
. art. m. s., *of the.*
t. art. m. s., *some, any.*
., *due.*
. of **devoir**, *owed.*
m., *duke.*
ns, adv. loc., *at least.*
. **de laquelle, desquels, des-**
es, pron., *of whom, of which.*
adj., *hard.*
, adv. loc., *by no means.*
ɜ **du tout**, adv., *not at all.*
sie, n. f., *dyspepsia.*

E.

f., *water.*
er (**à**), v. intr., *to escape*
n).
n. m. pl., *chess* (game).
a, fut. of **échoir**, *will fall*

, v. intr., *to fall due.*
ı. f., *school.*
e, adj., *economical, sparing.*
v. tr. and intr., *to write.*
pres. indic. of **écrire**, *writes.*
p.p., *written.*
nt, pres. indic. of **écrire**, *they*
.
d, n. m., *Edward.*
on, n. f., *education.*
v. tr., *to efface.*
. m., *fact.*
effet, adv. loc., *in fact, in-*
leed.
, adj., *efficacious.*
, adj., *equal.*
a **m'est égal**, *it's all the same*
o me.

église, n. f., *church.*
eh bien! interj., *well! how now!*
électricité, n. f., *electricity.*
éléphant, n. m., *elephant.*
élève, n. m. and f., *pupil.*
élevé, p.p. as adj., *brought up, bred.*
elle, pron., *she, it.*
elle-même, pron. f., *she herself.*
elles, pron., *they.*
elles-mêmes, pron. f., *themselves.*
emballer, v. tr., *to pack.*
embarras, n. m., *embarrassment.*
Émile, n. m., *Emile.*
Émilie, n. f., *Emily.*
emmener, v. tr., *to bring, take* or *lead away* (of persons).
empereur, n. m., *emperor.*
empire, n. m., *empire.*
employer, v. tr., *to employ.*
emporter, v. tr., *to carry, take away.*
emprunté, p.p., *borrowed.*
emprunter, v. tr., *to borrow.*
en, prep., *in.*
en, pron., *of it, of him, of her, of them; some, any.*
encore, adv., *yet, still, again.*
encre, n. f., *ink.*
encrier, n. m., *inkstand.*
endroit, n. m., *spot, place, locality.*
énergique, adj., *energetic.*
enfance, n. f., *childhood.*
enfant, n. m. and f., *child.*
engelure, n. f., *chilblain.*
enlevé, p.p., *taken away, carried off.*
enlever, v. tr., *to take away, carry off.*
ennemi, -e, adj., *hostile.*
ennemi, n. m., *enemy, foe.*
énorme, adj., *enormous.*
enragé, adj., *mad.*
enseigné, p.p., *taught.*
enseigner, v. tr., *to teach.*
entendre, v. tr., *to hear.*
entendre dire, *to hear it said.*
entendu, p.p., *heard, understood.*
c'est entendu, *all right, agreed.*

enterré, p.p., *buried.*
enterrer, v. tr., *to bury, inter.*
entêté, -e, adj., *obstinate, mulish.*
enthousiasme, n. m., *enthusiasm.*
entré, p.p., *entered.*
entrepreneur, n. m., *contractor.*
entreprise, n. f., *undertaking.*
entrer, v. intr., *to go in, enter.*
†**entretenir**, v. intr., *to keep up, maintain.*
†**enverrai** (j'), fut. of **envoyer**, *I shall send.*
envers, prep., *towards.*
envie, n. f., *envy, desire.*
avoir envie (de), *to have a mind (to).*
environ, adv., *about.*
envoyé, p.p., *sent.*
†**envoyer**, v. tr., *to send.*
épine, n. f., *thorn.*
épique, adj., *epic.*
espérance, n. f., *hope.*
espérer, v. tr. and intr., *to hope.*
espoir, n. m., *hope.*
esprit, n. m., *spirit, wit, mind.*
essayé, p.p., *tried.*
essayer, v. tr., *to try.*
essuyer, v. tr., *to wipe.*
†**est**, pres. indic. of **être**, *is.*
est-ce que, formula to begin a question.
estime, n. f., *esteem.*
et, conj., *and.*
établir, v. tr., *to establish.*
état, n. m., *business, profession.*
États-Unis, n. m. pl., *United States.*
été, n. m., *summer.*
†**été**, p.p. of **être**, *been.*
étendre, v. tr., *to stretch, extend.*
étoile, n. f., *star.*
étourdi, -e, adj., *giddy, thoughtless.*
étranger, n. m. } *stranger.*
étrangère, n. f. }
à l'étranger, adv., *abroad.*
†**être**, v. intr., *to be.*
étroit, -e, adj., *narrow.*
étude, n. f., *study.*
étudier, v. tr., *to study.*
†**eu**, p.p. of **avoir**, *had.*
Europe, f., *Europe.*
eux, pron., *they.*
eux-mêmes, pron., *they themselves.*
éveillé, p.p., *awaked.*
éveiller, v. tr., *to awake.*
éventail, n. m., *fan.*
exact, -e, adj., *precise, punctual, exact.*
excuse, n. f., *excuse.*
exercice, n. m., *exercise.*
expérimenté, adj., *experienced.*
expliquer, v. tr., *to explain.*
exposition, n. f., *exhibition.*
extensif, -ve, adj., *extensive.*
extérieur, -e, adj., *exterior, outer.*
extérieur, n. m., *exterior.*

F.

fable, n. f., *fable.*
fabrique, n. f., *factory.*
face, n. f., *face* (of things), *front.*
facile, adj., *easy.*
facteur, n. m., *postman.*
faible, adj., *weak, feeble.*
faim, n. f., *hunger.*
†**faire**, v. tr., *to do* or *make.*
faire beau, *to be fine weather.*
faire semblant (de), *to pretend.*
faire une visite, *to pay a visit.*
†**faisais** (je), impf. of **faire**, *I made, did.*
†**faisaient** (ils), impf. of **faire**, *they made, did.*
†**faisait** (il), impf. of **faire**, *he made, did.*
†**fait**, 3d pers. sing. pres. indic. of **faire**, *makes, does.*
†**fait**, p.p. of **faire**, *done, made.*
fait, n. m., *fact.*
au fait, *in fact.*
fameux, -se, adj., *famous.*

n. f., *family.*
.t, a celebrated American ad-
.
n. f., *fatigue.*
-e, adj., *tired.*
l), pres. indic. of **falloir**, *it is*
ıary.
. f., *mistake, fault.*
, n. m., *armchair.*
usse, adj., *false.*
lv., *out of tune.*
n. f., *woman, wife.*
de chambre, n. f., *lady's*
le ménage, n. f., *housekeeper.*
n. f., *window.*
).p., *shut, closed.*
v. tr., *to shut.*
f., *feast, festival, birthday.*
adj., *the late* (deceased).
n., *fire.*
ı du feu, n. m., *fireside.*
n. f., *leaf.*
n. m., *February.*
.dj., *faithful.*
ı. f., *fever.*
f., *daughter, girl.*
cuisine, n. f., *kitchenmaid.*
service, n. f., *housemaid.*
m., *son.*
tr., *to finish, complete.*
t, n. m., *flageolet.*
. f., *flower.*
ıranger, n. f., *orange blossom.*
ı. m., *river.*
f., *Florida.*
.. m., *Italian coin.*
. f., *flute.*
., *faith.*
f., *time* (in enumeration).
a fois, adv. loc., *at the same*
ime.
ı fois, *once.*
adj., *foolish.*
f., *folly, foolishness.*

†**font** (ils), pres. indic. of **faire**, *they make, they do.*
Fontainebleau, an historical castle in France.
force, n. f., *strength.*
forcer, v. tr., *to compel.*
forêt, n. f., *forest.*
fort, -e, adj., *strong, stout.*
fort, adv., *hard; very.*
fort, n. m., *fort, fortress.*
fortune, n. f., *fortune.*
fou, folle, adj., *foolish, crazy.*
foule, n. f., *crowd.*
fourchette, n. f., *fork.*
fournir, v. tr., *to furnish.*
fournisseur, n. m., *dealer, tradesman.*
frais, fraîche, adj., *fresh.*
fraise, n. f., *strawberry.*
framboise, n. f., *raspberry.*
franc, n. m., *franc* (French coin equal to 20 cents).
franc, franche, adj., *frank, straightforward, open.*
Français, n. m., *Frenchman.*
français, n. m., *French* (language).
français, -e, adj., *French.*
France, f., *France.*
François, n. m., *Francis.*
frapper, v. intr., *to knock.*
on frappe, *some one is knocking.*
Frédéric, n. m., *Frederick.*
fréquemment, adv., *frequently.*
frère, n. m., *brother.*
frétillant, adj., *frisky.*
froid, -e, adj., *cold.*
froid, n. m., *cold.*
†prendre froid, v. intr., *to catch cold.*
fromage, n. m., *cheese.*
frontière, n. f., *frontier, border.*
frotter, v. tr., *to rub.*
fruit, n. m., *fruit.*
fruiterie, n. f., *fruit stall, fruit store.*
fruitier, adj., *fruit-bearing.*
fumée, n. f., *smoke.*

fumer, v. intr., *to smoke.*
funèbre, adj., *funereal.*
funérailles, n. f. pl., *funeral, obsequies.*
fusil, n. m., *gun, musket, rifle.*
futur, n. m., *future.*

G.

gagner, v. tr., *to win, gain.*
gai, -e, adj., *gay, merry, cheery.*
Gambetta, great French statesman.
gant, n. m., *glove.*
garçon, n. m., *boy, bachelor, waiter.*
garder, v. tr., *to keep.*
gâté, p.p. as adj., *spoiled.*
gâteau, n. m., *cake.*
gauche, adj., *left, awkward.*
geler, v. intr., *to freeze.*
général, n. m., *general.*
général, -e, adj., *general.*
généralement, adv., *generally.*
généreux, -se, adj , *generous.*
genou, n. m., *knee.* [*ing.*
à genoux, *on one's knees, kneel-*
gens, n. m. (and sometimes f.) pl., *people.*
gentil, -le, adj., *pretty, nice, gentle.*
George, n. m., *George.*
gerçures, n. f., *chaps.*
gigot, n. m., *leg of mutton.*
glace, n. f., *mirror.*
glace, n. f., *ice, ice cream.*
glacé, -e, adj., *iced.*
gourmandise, n. f., *gluttony.*
goutte, n. f., *gout.*
gouvernante, n. f., *governess.*
gouvernement, n. m., *government.*
graisse, n. f., *grease.*
grammaire, n. f., *grammar.*
grand, -e, adj., *great.*
grand'mère, n. f., *grandmother.*
grand-père, n. m., *grandfather.*
grand'route, n. f., *highway.*
gras, -se, adj., *stout, fat.*
grégorien, -ne, adj., *Gregorian.*
grippe, n. f., *influenza, grippe.*
gris, -e, adj., *gray.*
gros, -se, adj., *big, burly.*
guère, ne . . ., adv., *hardly, scarcely.*
guérir, v. intr., *to get well.*
guérir, v. tr., *to cure.*
guerre, n. f., *war.*
guitare, n. f., *guitar.*
Gustave-Adolphe, *Gustavus Adolphus* (king of Sweden, and renowned warrior and statesman).

H.

habile, adj., *clever, skillful.*
habileté, n. f., *cleverness.*
habit, n. m., *coat.*
habitant, n. m., *inhabitant, inmate.*
habité, p.p., *inhabited, lived in.*
habiter, v. tr., *to inhabit.*
habitude, n. f., *habit, custom.*
comme d'habitude, *as usual.*
habituellement, adv., *habitually.*
***haïr**, v. tr., *to hate.*
***harnais**, n. m., *harness.*
***harpe**, n. f., *harp.*
Harvard, an American university.
***haut, -e**, adj., *high, tall.*
tout haut, adv., *aloud.*
Henri, n. m., *Henry.*
héroïque, adj., *heroic.*
heure, n. f., *hour, time, o'clock.*
heureusement, adv., *happily.*
heureux, -se, adj., *happy.*
***hibou**, n. m., *owl.*
hier, adv., *yesterday.*
histoire, n. f., *history, story, song.*
hiver, n. m., *winter.*
homme, n. m., *man.*
homme d'affaires, n. m., *business man.*
honnête, adj., *honest.*
***honte**, n. f., *shame.*
avoir honte, *to be ashamed.*

***honteux, -se**, adj., *ashamed, shameful.*
huile, n. f., *oil.*
huilier, n. m., *casters, cruet stand.*
***huit**, adj., *eight.*
***huit jours**, adv. loc., *a week.*
***huitième**, adj., *eighth.*
humble, adj., *humble.*
humeur, n. f., *temper.*
humidité, n. f., *moisture, dampness.*
hymne, n. m., *national anthem, song of praise.*
hymne, n. f., *hymn* (church).

I.

ici, adv., *here.*
il, pron., *he, it.*
†il y a, v. loc., *there is, there are.*
île, n. f., *isle, island.*
ils, pron. m. pl., *they.*
image, n. f., *image, likeness, picture.*
immense, adj., *immense.*
immortel, -le, adj., *immortal.*
imparfait, n. m., *imperfect.*
impératif, n. m., *imperative.*
impératrice, n. f, *empress.*
impoli, -e, adj., *impolite.*
impossible, adj., *impossible.*
imposteur, n. m., *impostor.*
impôt, n. m., *tax.*
impunément, adv., *with impunity.*
impuni, -e, adj., *unpunished.*
inactif, -ve, adj., *idle, inactive.*
indéfini, -e, adj., *indefinite.*
Indes, f. pl., *India.*
index, n. m., *forefinger.*
indicatif, n. m., *indicative.*
indolent, -e, adj., *indolent, sluggish.*
indulgent, -e, adj., *lenient, indulgent.*
infinitif, n. m., *infinitive.*
ingénieur, n. m., *engineer.*
ingrat, -e, adj., *ungrateful.*
ingratitude, n. f., *ingratitude.*
injure, n. f., *insult.*
injuste, adj., *unjust.*
inséparable, adj , *inseparable.*
insolvable, adj., *insolvent.*
inspecteur, n. m., *inspector.*
inspectrice, n. f., *inspectress.*
instant, n. m., *moment, instant.*
instruction, n. f., *instruction, knowledge.*
instruit, -e, adj., *well read, well educated.*
intelligent, -e, adj., *intelligent.*
intéressant, -e, adj., *interesting.*
intérieur, -e, adj , *interior, inner.*
intérieur, n. m., *interior.*
intransitif, adj., *intransitive.*
invité, n. m., *guest.*
invité, p.p., *invited.*
inviter, v. tr., *to invite.*
irrégulier, adj., *irregular.*
Italie, f., *Italy.*

J.

Jacques, n. m., *James, Jim.*
jaloux, -se, adj., *jealous.*
jamais, ne . . ., adv., *never.*
jambe, n. f., *leg.*
jambon, n. m., *ham.*
janvier, n. m., *January.*
Japon, m., *Japan.*
jardin, n. m., *garden.*
jardinier, n. m., *gardener.*
jardinière, n. f., *gardener's wife.*
je, pron., *I.*
Jean, n. m., *John.*
Jeanne, n. f., *Jane.*
Jeannette, dim. of **Jeanne**, *Janet.*
jeté, p.p., *thrown.*
jeter, v. tr., *to throw.*
jeu, n. m., *game; function of bodily organs.*
jeudi, n. m., *Thursday.*
jeune, adj., *young.*
joie, n. f., *joy.*
joli, -e, adj., *pretty.*
jouer, v. tr. and intr., *to play.*

jouer du piano, *to play the piano.*
jouir (de), v. intr., *to enjoy.*
joujou, n. m., *toy.*
jour, n. m., *day.*
journal, n. m., *newspaper.*
journée, n. f., *day.*
joyeusement, adv., *joyously.*
joyeux, -se, adj., *joyous, joyful.*
juillet, n. m., *July.*
juin, n. m., *June.*
jusqu'à, jusques à, prep., *until, till.*
juste, adj., *just, right, upright.*
justement, adv., *just, justly.*

L.

la, art. f., *the.*
lâche, n. m., *coward.*
lâchement, adv., *like a coward, cowardly.*
Lafayette, a celebrated French general who assisted the Americans against the English.
La Fontaine, a French fabulist.
laid, -e, adj., *ugly.*
laissé, p.p., *left.*
laisser, v. tr., *to let, let go, leave.*
lait, n. m., *milk.*
laitier, n. m., *milkman.*
lampe, n. f., *lamp.*
lanterne, n. f., *lantern.*
lard, n. m., *bacon.*
large, adj., *broad.*
latin, -e, adj., *Latin.*
lavabo, n. m., *washstand.*
le, art. m., *the.*
leçon, n. f., *lesson.*
léger, -ère, adj., *light.*
légumes, n. m., *vegetables.*
lent, -e, adj., *slow.*
lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles, pron., *which, which one.*
les, art. m. and f. pl., *the.*
lettre, n. f., *letter.*
lettre de change, n. f., *bill of exchange.*
lettre de crédit, n. f., *letter of credit.*
leur, adj., *their.*
leur, pron., *to them.*
lever, v. tr., *to lift, raise.*
lieu, n. m., *place, spot.*
au lieu de, prep. loc., *instead of.*
lieue, n. f., *league (four kilometers).*
lime, n. f., *file.*
linge, n. m., *linen, washing.*
lion, n. m., *lion.*
†lire, v. tr., *to read.*
lis (je), pres. indic. of **lire**, *I read.*
†lisez (vous), pres. indic. of **lire**, *you read.*
lit, n. m., *bed.*
litre, n. m., *liter.*
livre, n. m., *book.*
livre d'images, n. m., *picture book.*
livre, n. f., *pound.*
loi, n. f., *law.*
loin, adv., *far.*
lointain, -e, adj., *far.*
Londres, *London.*
long, -ue, adj., *long.*
Longfellow, an American poet.
Lorraine, f., *Lorraine* (a French province annexed by Germany in 1871).
lorsque, conj., *when.*
Loti (Pierre), the pseudonym of Julien Viaud, a well-known French author and academician.
louange, n. f., *praise.*
louer, v. tr., *to praise.*
Louis, n. m., *Lewis, Louis.*
Louise, n. f., *Louisa.*
lourd, -e, adj., *heavy, sultry.*
loyer, n. m., *rent.*
†lu, p.p. of **lire**, *read.*
Lucie, n. f., *Lucy.*
lugubrement, adv., *dismally.*
lui, pron. m., *he, to him, to her, to it.*
lui-même, pron. m., *he himself.*
lumière, n. f., *light.*
l'un et l'autre, pron., *both.*

'autre, pron., *each other.*
i l'un ni l'autre, pron., *neither.*
u l'autre, pron., *either.*
n. m., *Monday.*
Lyons (second city of France).

M.

Mr (for **Monsieur**), *Mr.*
ron. f., *my.*
ne, n. f., *madam.*
eine, n. f., *Maud.*
noiselle, n. f., *miss.*
in, n. m., *store, shop.*
ta, *Magenta* (the scene of a nch victory over the Austri- in 1859).
ifique, adj., *magnificent.*
. m., *May.*
e, adj., *thin, meager, lean.*
n. f., *hand.*
, m., *Maine* (a State of the ted States).
enant, adv., *now.*
conj., *but.*
n, n. f., *house.*
la maison, *at home.*
n de campagne, n. f., *country se.*
e, n. m., *master, teacher.*
e de chapelle, n. m., *choir ter.*
e de français, n. m., *French her.*
r, n. m., *major.*
r, **-e**, adj., *of age.*
dv., *ill, badly.*
e mal en pis, adv. loc., *from bad to worse.*
. m., *evil, ill, ache.*
la gorge, n. m., *sore throat.*
ux dents, n. m, *toothache.*
e tête, n. m., *headache.*
e, adj., *ill, sick.*
e, n. m. and f., *patient.*

maladie, n. f., *illness, malady, ailment.*
maladie du pays, n. f., *homesickness.*
Malakoff, a redoubt before Sevastopol in the Crimean War, 1854.
malheur, n. m., *misfortune, accident.*
malheureux, **-se**, adj., *unhappy, unfortunate.*
malhonnête, adj., *dishonest.*
malle, n. f., *trunk.*
malsain, **-e**, adj., *unhealthy, unwholesome.*
maman, n. f., *mamma.*
manchette, n. f., *cuff.*
mandoline, n. f., *mandolin.*
mange, v. tr., *eats.*
mangé, p.p., *eaten.*
manger, v. tr. and intr., *to eat.*
manquer, v. intr., *to be lacking or wanting.*
mansarde, n. f., *attic, garret.*
marchand, n. m., *merchant, storekeeper.*
marchandises, n. f., *goods, merchandise.*
marché, n. m., *market.*
bon marché, adv., *cheap.*
marché, p.p., *walked.*
marcher, v. intr., *to walk, go, advance.*
mardi, n. m., *Tuesday.*
maréchal, n. m., *marshal.*
mari, n. m., *husband.*
marié, p.p., *married.*
marier, v. tr., *to give in marriage, to marry.*
marin, n. m., *sailor.*
mars, n. m., *March.*
matelas, n. m., *mattress.*
matériaux, n. m. pl., *materials.*
matin, n. m., *morning.*
mauvais, **-e**, adj., *bad.*
méchamment, adv., *wickedly.*

méchant, -e, adj., *wicked.*
mécontent, -e, adj., *discontented.*
médecin, n. m., *doctor, physician.*
médecine, n. f., *medicine.*
médius, n. m., *middle finger.*
meilleur, adv., *better.*
le **meilleur**, *the best.*
Meissonier, a great French painter.
mélancolique, adj., *melancholy.*
mélodie, n. f., *melody, tune.*
même (added to a pers. pron.), *self.*
même, adj., *same.*
même, adv., *even.*
mémoire, n. f., *memory.*
menacer, v. tr., *to threaten, menace.*
ménage, n. m., *housekeeping.*
mendiant, n. m., *beggar.*
mené, p.p., *led.*
mener, v. tr., *to lead, take* (of persons).
mensonge, n. m., *lie.*
mer, n. f., *sea.*
merci, n. m., *thanks.*
mercredi, n. m., *Wednesday.*
mère, n. f., *mother.*
petite **mère**, n. f., *darling mamma.*
mériter, v. tr., *to deserve, merit.*
merveilleux, -se, adj., *wonderful, marvelous.*
mes, pron. m. and f. pl., *my.*
mesdames, n. f. pl., *ladies.*
mesdemoiselles, n. f. pl., *the misses, young ladies.*
messieurs, n. m. pl., *gentlemen, sirs.*
mesure, n. f., *measure.*
en **mesure**, adv. loc., *in time* (music).
mettez (vous), pres. indic. of **mettre**, *put.*
meubles, n. m. pl., *furniture.*
Mexique, m., *Mexico*, **Mexico** (the city).
midi, n. m., *noon, midday.*
mien (le), **la mienne, les miens, les miennes**, pron., *mine.*
mieux, adv., *better.*
de **mieux en mieux**, adv. loc., *better and better.*
le **mieux**, *best.*
migraine, n. f., *headache.*
mil (in dates, A.D.) and **mille**, adj., *thousand.*
milieu, n. m., *middle.*
militaire, adj., *military.*
mille, n. m., *mile.*
milliard, n. m., *thousand million.*
millième, adj., *thousandth.*
millier, n. m., *thousand.*
million, adj. and n. m., *million.*
millionième, adj., *millionth.*
mine, n. f., *mine.*
mine (avoir bonne, mauvaise), *to look well, ill.*
mineur, n. m., *minor.*
minuit, n. m., *midnight.*
minute, n. f., *minute.*
Miribel (de), a renowned French general.
†**mis**, p.p. of **mettre**, *put.*
misérable, adj., *miserable.*
Mlle, for *Miss.*
Mlles, for *Misses, the Misses.*
MM., for *Messieurs.*
Mme, for *Madame.*
Mmes, for *Mesdames.*
mode, n. f., *fashion.*
à la **mode**, adj. loc., *fashionable.*
modeste, adj., *modest.*
mœurs, n. f. pl., *customs.*
moi, pron., *I, to me, me.*
moi-même, pron., *I myself.*
moindre, adj., *less.*
le **moindre**, *the least.*
moineau, n. m., *sparrow.*
moins, adv., *less.*
au **moins**, adv. loc., *at least.*
du **moins**, adv. loc., *at least.*
le **moins**, *the least.*
mois, n. m., *month.*

Molière, a French playwright, one of the world's greatest comedy writers.
moment, n. m., *instant, moment.*
mon, pron. m., *my.*
monarque, n. m., *monarch.*
monde, n. m., *world, people.*
  beaucoup de monde, *many people.*
  pas le moins du monde, *not the least in the world.*
  peu de monde, *few people.*
  tout le monde, *everybody.*
monnaie, n. f., *change.*
  petite monnaie, *small change.*
monsieur, n. m., *gentleman, sir, Mr.*
montagne, n. f., *mountain.*
monter à cheval, v. intr., *to mount on horseback.*
montre, n. f., *watch.*
montrer, v. tr., *to show.*
monument, n. m., *monument.*
morceau, n. m., *piece.*
mordre, v. tr., *to bite.*
mort, n. f., *death.*
†mort, p.p. of **mourir**, *died.*
mortel, -le, adj., *mortal.*
mot, n. m., *word.*
mouche, n. f., *fly.*
mouchoir, n. m., *handkerchief.*
mouton, n. m., *sheep.*
mouvement, n. m , *movement.*
muet, -te, adj., *mute, dumb, silent.*
mur, n. m., *wall,*
mûr, -e, adj., *ripe.*
musée, n. m., *museum.*
musique, n. f., *music.*
myope, adj., *short-sighted.*
mystérieux, -se, adj., *mysterious.*

N.

nager, v. intr., *to swim.*
naïf, -ve, adj., *simple-minded.*
Naples, *Naples* (an Italian city).
Napoléon Ier, French emperor, and conqueror of nearly all Europe.
nappe, n. f., *tablecloth.*
national, -e, adj., *national.*
nature, n. f., *nature.*
navire, n. m., *ship, vessel.*
ne . . . guère, adv., *hardly, scarcely.*
ne . . . jamais, adv., *never.*
ne . . . pas, adv., *not.*
ne . . . personne, pron., *nobody.*
ne . . . plus, adv., *no more, no longer.*
ne . . . point, adv., *not at all.*
ne . . . que, adv., *only.*
ne . . . rien, pron., *nothing.*
†né, p.p. of **naître**, *born.*
négligent, -e, adj., *careless.*
nègre, n. m., *negro.*
Négrier (de), a great French general.
neige, n. f., *snow.*
Nellie, n. f., *Nelly.*
n'est-ce pas ? adv. loc., *is it not so ?*
neuf, adj., *nine.*
neuvième, adj., *ninth.*
neveu, n. m., *nephew.*
névralgie, n. f., *neuralgia.*
nez, n. m., *nose.*
ni, conj., *nor.*
  ne . . . ni, conj., *neither . . . nor.*
ni l'un ni l'autre, *neither the one nor the other.*
ni . . . ni, conj., *neither . . . nor.*
nièce, n. f., *niece.*
nier, v. tr. and intr., *to deny.*
noir, -e, adj., *black.*
nombreux, -se, adj., *numerous.*
nommer, v. tr., *to name, elect.*
non, adv., *no.*
nord, n. m., *north.*
nos, adj. m. and f. pl., *our.*
note, n. f., *account, reckoning.*
notre, adj. m. and f., *our.*
nôtre (le, la), les nôtres, pron., [*ours.*
nourrir, v. tr., *to nourish, feed.*
nous, pron., *we.*

nous-mêmes, pron. m. and f., *ourselves.*
nouveau, nouvelle, adj., *new, fresh.*
nouvel, -le, adj., *new.*
Nouvelle-Orléans, f., *New Orleans.*
nouvelles, n. f., *news.*
novembre, n. m., *November.*
nuage, n. m., *cloud.*
nuit, n. f., *night.*
nul, -le, adj., *no.*
numéro, n. m., *number.*

O.

obéir (à), v. intr., *to obey.*
obéissant, -e, adj., *obedient.*
objet, n. m., *object.*
obligation, n. f., *obligation.*
obscur, -e, adj., *obscure, dark.*
observation, n. f., *observation, remark.*
obstiné, -e, adj., *obstinate.*
†obtenir, v. tr., *to obtain, gain.*
occasion, n. f., *occasion, opportunity.*
occupé, -e, adj., *busy.*
octobre, n. m., *October.*
œil, n. m., *eye;* pl., **yeux.**
œillet, n. m., *carnation.*
œuf, n. m., *egg.*
†offert, p.p. of **offrir**, *offered.*
offre, n. f., *offer.*
†offrir, v. tr., *to offer.*
oh! interj., *oh! ah!*
oiseau, n. m., *bird.*
oisif, -ve, adj., *idle.*
on, pron., *people, one, they.*
oncle, n. m., *uncle.*
ongle, n. m., *nail.*
†ont (ils), pres. indic. of **avoir**, *they have.*
onze, adj., *eleven.*
opéra, n. m., *opera.*
l'Opéra, m., *or* **l'Académie nationale de musique**, a magnificent opera house in Paris.
or, n. m., *gold.*
orage, n. m., *storm.*
orange, n. f., *orange.*
oranger, n. m., *orange tree.*
ordinaire, adj., *ordinary.*
à l'ordinaire, adv. loc., *ordinarily.*
ordre, n. m., *order.*
oreille, n. f., *ear.*
orgueilleux, -se, adj., *proud.*
original, -e, adj., *original.*
originalité, n. f., *originality.*
orteil, n. m., *toe.*
ou, conj., *or.*
où, adv., *where.*
oublié, p.p., *forgotten.*
oublier, v. tr., *to forget.*
oui, adv., *yes.*
ours, n. m., *bear.*
ouvert, -e, adj., *open.*
†ouvert, p.p. of **ouvrir**, *opened.*
†ouvrez (vous), pres. indic. of **ouvrir**, *you open.*
†ouvrez! imper., *open!*
ouvrier, n. m., *workman.*

P.

pain, n. m., *bread.*
pain grillé, n. m., *toast.*
paix, n. f., *peace.*
palais, n. m., *palace.*
paletot, n. m., *coat.*
pâlir, v. intr., *to grow pale.*
panier, n. m., *basket.*
papa, n. m., *papa.*
papier, n. m., *paper.*
papier à lettres, n. m., *note paper.*
paquet, n. m., *package.*
par, prep., *by, through.*
parapluie, n. m., *umbrella.*
parc, n. m., *park.*
parce que, conj., *because.*
pardon, n. m., *pardon.*
pardonner (à), v. intr., *to pardon, forgive.*
pareil, -le, adj., *such, similar.*

parent, n. m., *parent, relative.*
paresse, n. f., *idleness.*
paresseux, -se, adj., *idle.* [*cisely.*
parfaitement, adv., *perfectly, pre-*
parfois, adv., *from time to time.*
Paris, m., *Paris* (capital of France).
parlé, p.p., *spoken.*
parler, v. intr., *to speak.*
parmi, *among.*
part, n. f., *part.*
  avoir part à, *to have a share in.*
  nulle part, *nowhere.*
  quelque part, *somewhere.*
partager, v. tr., *to share, divide.*
parti, p.p., *gone away, set out, left.*
participe, n. m., *participle.*
partie, n. f., *game, match, part.*
†partir, v. intr., *to set out, depart.*
partout, adv., *everywhere.*
pas du tout, adv. loc., *not at all.*
passé, n. m., *past.*
passer, v. intr., *to pass, go by.*
passer, v. tr., *to pass, hand.*
passez-moi, *pass me, hand me.*
patience, n. f., *patience.*
patiner, v. intr., *to skate.*
patrie, n. f., *country, fatherland.*
patriote, n. m. and f., *patriot.*
pâturage, n. m., *pasture.*
Paul, n. m., *Paul.*
Pauline, n. f., *Pauline.*
pauvre, adj., *poor.*
pavage, n. m., *pavement, paving.*
payer, v. tr., *to pay* (*for*).
pays, n. m., *country.*
peau, n. f., *skin.*
pêche, n. f., *fishing.*
peine, n. f., *trouble, pains.*
  à peine, adv. loc., *with difficulty, scarcely, hardly.*
†peint, p.p. of **peindre**, *painted.*
peintre, n. m. and f., *painter.*
peler, v. tr., *to peel.*
pendant, prep., *during, for.*
pendant que, adv., *while.*
pendre, v. tr., *to hang.*
pénétrer, v. tr., *to enter, penetrate.*
pénible, adj., *painful.*
pense (**je**), v. intr., *I think.*
pensée, n. f., *thought.*
penser (**à**), v. intr., *to think* (*of*).
pensez (**vous**), v. intr., *you think.*
Pensylvanie, f., *Pennsylvania.*
percepteur, n. m., *taxgatherer.*
percer, v. tr., *to pierce.*
percevoir, v. tr., *to perceive, feel, be conscious of; to collect* (taxes, rent, etc.).
perdre, v. tr., *to lose.*
perdu, p.p. of **perdre**, *lost.*
père, n. m., *father.*
perfidement, adv., *treacherously.*
périr, v. intr., *to perish.*
péritonite, n. f., *peritonitis.*
perle, n. f., *pearl.* [*ted.*
†permis, p.p. of **permettre**, *permit-*
Pérou, m., *Peru.*
perpétuel, -le, adj., *perpetual.*
perron, n. m., *flight of steps.*
persévérance, n. f., *perseverance.*
persévérant, -e, adj., *persevering.*
personne, n. f., *person, no one.*
  ne . . . personne, pron., *nobody.*
perte, n. f., *loss.*
pèse, pres. indic. of **peser**, *weighs.*
peser, v. intr., *to weigh.*
petit, -e, adj., *small, little, short.*
petit *or* **premier déjeuner**, n. m., *early breakfast.*
petit-fils, n. m., *grandson.*
petite-fille, n. f., *granddaughter.*
peu, adv., *little.*
peur, n. f., *fear.*
†peut (**il**), pres. indic. of **pouvoir**, *he* (*it*), *can, may.*
peut-être, adv., *perhaps.* [*I can.*
†peux (**je**), pres. indic. of **pouvoir**,
philosophe, n. m., *philosopher.*
phtisie, n. f., *consumption.*
piano, n. m., *pianoforte.*

pied, n. m., *foot.*
pierre, n. f., *stone.*
Pierre, n. m., *Peter.*
Pierrot, n. m., dim. of **Pierre**, *Peter.*
pilule, n. f., *pill.*
pire, adj., *worse.*
le **pire**, *the worst.*
pis, adv., *worse.*
le **pis**, *the worst.*
pitié, n. f., *pity.*
place, n. f., *place, square* (public).
plafond, n. m., *ceiling.*
plainte, n. f., *complaint.*
†**plaire** (**à**), v. intr., *to please.*
plaisanterie, n. f., *joke, jest.*
plaisir, n. m., *pleasure.*
†**plaît-il?** *I beg your pardon! what did you say?*
s'**il vous plaît**, adv. loc., *if you please.*
plan, n. m., *plan, project.*
plancher, n. m., *floor.*
plat, n. m., *dish.*
plein, -**e**, adj., *full.*
pleurer, v. intr., *to weep, cry.*
pleurésie, n. f., *pleurisy.*
pluie, n. f., *rain.*
plume, n. f., *feather, pen.*
plus, adv., *more.*
plusieurs, adj. and pron., *several.*
plus-que-parfait, n. m., *pluperfect.*
plutôt, adv., *rather.*
pneumonie, n. f., *pneumonia.*
poche, n. f., *pocket.*
poème, n. m., *poem.*
poète, n. m., *poet.*
poids, n. m., *weight.*
point, adv., *not.*
ne . . . point, *not at all.*
poire, n. f., *pear.*
poisson, n. m., *fish.*
poivre, n. m., *pepper.*
poli, -**e**, adj., *polite, polished.*
politique, n. f., *politics.*
polytechnique, adj., *polytechnic.*
pomme, n. f., *apple.*
pomme de terre, n. f., *potato.*
ponctuel, -**le**, adj., *punctual.*
ponctuellement, adv., *punctually.*
port, n. m., *port; dues.*
portant (**être bien**), *to be well, in good health.*
porte, n. f., *door, gate.*
porte bien (**elle se**), *she is quite well.*
porte-monnaie, n. m., *pocketbook.*
porter, v. tr., *to carry, bear, wear.*
portez (**comment vous portez-vous?**), *how do you do?*
portrait, n. m., *likeness, picture.*
possible, adj., *possible.*
poste aux lettres, n. f., *post, post office.*
pouce, n. m., *thumb.*
poupée, n. f., *doll.*
pour, prep., *for.*
pourquoi, adv., *why.*
†**pouvez** (**vous**), pres. indic. of **pouvoir**, *you can.*
prairie, n. f., *meadow.*
précédent, -**e**, adj., *preceding.*
précepteur, n. m., *tutor.*
"**Précieuses ridicules,**" one of the masterpieces of Molière.
précieux, -**se**, adj., *precious.*
précis, -**e**, adj., *exact, precise.*
précisément, adv., *exactly.*
préférer, v. tr., *to prefer.*
préférez (**vous**), v. tr., *you prefer.*
premier, -**ère**, adj., *first.*
†**prendra**, *will take.*
prendre, *to take, feel.*
près, adv., *near.*
près de, prep., *near.*
présent, n. m., *present.*
à **présent**, adv., *at present.*
presque, adv., *almost, nearly.*
pressé, p.p., *pressed.*
prestidigitateur, n. m., *prestidigitator, magician.*
prétendre, v. intr., *to pretend.*
prêté, p.p., *lent.*
prêter, v. tr., *to lend.*

prie (je vous), *I beg of you, I pray you.*
prient (ils), pres. indic., *they pray.*
prier, v. tr., *to pray, beg, entreat.*
prière, n. f., *prayer.*
printemps, n. m., *spring.*
†pris, p.p. of **prendre**, *taken.*
prison, n. f., *prison.*
prisonnier, n. m., *prisoner.*
privé, -e, adj , *private.*
prix, n. m., *price, prize.*
probablement, adv., *probably.*
procès, n. m., *action* (at law).
prochain, -e, adj., *next.*
proche, adj., *close, near.*
prodigue, adj., *prodigal, extravagant.*
†produit, -e, p.p. of **produire**, *produced.*
professeur, n. m., *professor.*
profit, n. m., *profit, benefit.*
profond, -e, adj., *deep.*
profondeur, n. f., *depth.*
progrès, n. m., *progress.*
projet, n. m., *project, plan.*
†promets (je), pres. indic. of **promettre**, *I promise.*
†promis, p.p., *promised.*
promptement, adv., *promptly.*
proposition, n. f., *proposition, proposal.*
propre, adj., *clean; own.*
propriétaire, n. m. and f., *owner, landlord.*
protecteur, n. m., *protector.*
protéger, v. tr., *to protect.*
protestant, -e, adj., *Protestant.*
proverbe, n. m., *proverb, saying.*
prudemment, adv., *prudently.*
prudent, -e, adj., *prudent.*
prussien, -ne, adj., *Prussian.*
pthisie, n. f., *consumption.*
public, publique, adj., *public.*
puis, adv., *then.*
†puis (je), pres. indic. of **pouvoir**, *I can.*
puissant, -e, adj., *powerful, mighty.*
punir, v. tr., *to punish.*
punition, n. f., *punishment.*
pupitre, n. m., *desk.*

Q.

qualité, n. f., *quality.*
qualités, n. f. pl., *good qualities.*
quand, adv., *when.*
  depuis quand, loc. adv., *how long?*
quantité, n. f., *quantity.*
quarante, adj , *forty.*
quart, n. m., *quarter.*
quatorze, adj., *fourteen.*
quatre, adj., *four.*
quatre-vingts, adj., *eighty.*
quatre-vingt-deux, adj., *eighty-two.*
quatre-vingt-douzième, adj., *ninety-second.*
quatre-vingt-onze, adj., *ninety-one.*
quatre-vingt-un, adj., *eighty-one.*
quatrième, adj , *fourth.*
que, conj., *that, as.*
que (qu'), rel. pron., *that, what, whom, which.*
que (qu'), inter. pron., *what.*
  ne . . . que, adv., *only.*
quel, quelle, adj., *what, which.*
quelque, adj., *some.*
quelquefois, adv., *sometimes.*
quelqu'un, pron., *some one.*
qu'est-ce que, pron., *what* (object).
qu'est-ce qui, pron., *what* (subject).
qui, inter. pron., *who.*
qui, rel. pron., *who, which, that, whom.*
  à qui, *to whom, whose.*
  de qui, *of, from, whom, of which.*
qui est-ce que, pron., *whom* (object).
qui est-ce qui, pron., *who* (subject).
quinine, n. f., *quinine.*
quinzaine, n. f., *a fortnight.*
quinze, adj., *fifteen.*

quinze jours, n., *a fortnight.*
quitter, v. tr., *to quit, leave.*
quoi, inter. pron., *what.*
  à quoi, *to what.*
  après quoi, *after which.*
  de quoi, *of what.*
  il n'y a pas de quoi, *don't speak of it, not at all.*

R.

raconté, p.p., *related, told.*
raconter, v. tr., *to tell, relate.*
rafraîchir, v. tr., *to refresh.*
raisin, n. m., *grape.*
raison, n. f., *reason, right.*
  avoir raison, *to be right.*
raisonnable, adj., *reasonable.*
rapidité, n. f., *rapidity.*
rappeler, v. tr., *to recall.*
rare, adj., *rare.*
récapitulation, n. f., *review.*
récemment, adv., *recently, lately.*
recevoir, v. tr., *to receive.*
recevoir des nouvelles de quelqu'un, *to hear from some one.*
réclamer, v. tr. and intr., *to claim, clamor.*
récompense, n. f., *reward.*
reconnaissant, -e, adj., *grateful.*
†**reconnu**, p.p. of **reconnaître**, *recognized.*
reçu, p.p. of **recevoir**, *received.*
redingote, n. f., *frock coat, Prince-Albert.*
redoutable, adj., *redoubtable, formidable.*
réel, -le, adj., *real.*
réfléchir, v. intr., *to reflect.*
refuser, v. tr., *to refuse.*
regarder, v. tr., *to look at, consider.*
regardez ! imper., *look !*
règle, n. f., *ruler, rule.*
régné, p.p., *reigned.*
régner, v. intr., *to reign.*
regretter, v. tr., *to regret.*
régulier, adj., *regular.*
relié, -e, adj., *bound.*
religion, n. f., *religion.*
remarqué, p.p., *noticed.*
remarquer, v. tr., *to notice.*
remercier, v. tr., *to thank.*
remplacer, v. tr., *to replace.*
remplir, v. tr., *to fill; to fulfill.*
remporter, v. tr., *to gain a victory.*
rencontré, p.p., *met.*
rencontrer, v. tr., *to meet.*
rend (il), pres. indic. of **rendre**, *he renders, makes.*
rendre, v. tr., *to give back, render.*
rendu, p.p., *given back, rendered.*
rentré, p.p., *come home, come back, returned.*
rentrer, v. intr., *to come home.*
répandre, v. tr., *to spread, shed, spill.*
repas, n. m., *repast, meal.*
répliquer, v. tr. and intr., *to reply, answer.*
répondre, v. intr., *to answer, reply.*
répondu, p.p., *answered.*
réponse, n. f., *reply, response.*
représentant, n. m., *representative.*
reproche, n. m., *reproach.*
reptile, n. m., *reptile.*
réputation, n. f., *reputation.*
réservé, -e, adj., *reserved, retiring.*
résigné, p.p., *resigned, submissive.*
†**résolu**, p.p. of **résoudre**, *resolved, determined.*
respect, n. m., *respect.*
respectueux, -se, adj., *respectful.*
resté, p.p., *remained, stayed.*
rester, v. intr., *to remain, stay.*
rétabli, p.p. as adj., *recovered* (in health).
retarde, v. intr., *is slow* (of a watch).
retarder, v. intr., *to go too slowly, to be slow* (of a watch).

retour, n. m., *return.*
réussi, p.p., *succeeded.*
réussir, v. intr., *to succeed.*
rêve, n. m., *dream.*
revendre, v. tr., *to sell again.*
†revenu, p.p. of **revenir**, *returned, come back.*
rêver, v. intr., *to dream.*
rhumatisme, n. m., *rheumatism.*
rhume, n. m., *cold.*
riche, adj., *rich.*
rideau, n. m., *curtain.*
rien, pron., *anything, nothing.*
de rien, *don't speak of it, not at all.*
ne . . . rien, *nothing.*
rival, n. m., *rival.*
rivière, n. f., *river.*
robe, n. f., *dress; coat* (of a horse).
robuste, adj., *robust.*
roi, n. m., *king.*
Romain, m., *Roman.*
roman, n. m., *novel.*
romance, n. f., *love song.*
rose, n. f., *rose.*
rôti, n. m., *roast.*
rôti, -e, adj., *roast, roasted.*
rougeole, n. f., *measles.*
rougir, v. intr., *to blush, redden.*
royal, -e, adj., *royal.*
ruban, n. m., *ribbon.*
rubis, n. m., *ruby.*
rue, n. f., *street.*
ruisseau, n. m., *brook, stream.*

S.

sa, adj. f., *his, hers, its.*
sacré, -e, adj., *sacred.*
sage, adj., *well-behaved, wise.*
saignant, -e, adj., *rare, underdone.*
Sainte-Hélène, *Saint Helena* (island in the midst of the Atlantic, where Napoleon was banished by the English in 1815, and where he died May 5, 1821).
†sais (je and tu), pres. indic. of **savoir**, *I know, thou knowest.*
saisir, v. tr., *to seize.*
saison, n. f., *season.*
†sait (il), pres. indic. of **savoir**, *he knows.*
sale, adj., *dirty.*
salir, v. tr., *to soil, dirty.*
salle, n. f., *room.*
salle à manger, n. f., *dining-room.*
salle d'étude, n. f., *schoolroom.*
salon, n. m., *drawing-room.*
salubre, adj., *healthy, salubrious.*
salué, p.p., *bowed to.*
saluer, v. tr., *to greet, salute, bow to.*
samedi, n. m., *Saturday.*
sans, prep., *without.*
santé, n. f., *health.*
Saratoga, *Saratoga* (a well-known American watering place).
satisfait, -e, adj., *satisfied.*
saumon, n. m., *salmon.*
sauvé, p.p., *saved.*
sauver, v. tr., *to save, rescue.*
savant, -e, adj., *learned.*
†savez (vous), pres. indic. of **savoir**, *you know.*
†savoir, v. tr. and intr., *to know.*
scarlatine (la fièvre), n. f., *scarlet fever.*
sciatique, n. f., *sciatica.*
second, -e, adj., *second.*
secours, n. m., *help, succor, aid;* pl., *reënforcements.*
secrètement, adv., *secretly.*
sécurité, n. f., *security, safety.*
seize, adj., *sixteen.*
séjour, n. m., *sojourn, stay.*
sel, n. m., *salt.*
semaine, n. f., *week.*
semblable, n. m., *fellow man.*
semblant (faire), v. intr., *to pretend.*
†sentir, v. tr., *to feel; to smell.*
sept, adj., *seven.*
septembre, n. m., *September.*

septième, adj., *seventh.*
sérieux, -se, adj., *serious.*
serin, n. m., *canary.*
serre, n. f., *hothouse, conservatory.*
service, n. m., *service.*
serviette, n. f., *napkin.*
†**servir**, v. tr. and intr., *to serve.*
serviteur, n. m., *servant.*
ses, adj. m. and f. pl., *his, her, its.*
seul, -e, adj., *alone, only, sole.*
seulement, adv., *only.*
sévère, adj., *severe, strict.*
sévèrement, adv., *severely.*
si, adv., *so, as, yes.*
si, conj., *if.*
Sibérie, n. f., *Siberia* (vast and cold region of the Russian Empire in northern Asia, where are sent the unfortunate exiles).
siège, n. m., *seat.*
sien (le), **la sienne, les siens, les siennes**, pron., *his, hers, its.*
s'il vous plaît, adv. loc., *if you please.*
silencieux, -se, adj., *silent.*
simplement, adv., *simply.*
sitôt, adv., *so soon.*
situé, -e, adj., *situated, located.*
six, adj., *six.*
sixième, adj., *sixth.*
sobre, adj., *sober, moderate.*
société, n. f., *society.*
sœur, n. f., *sister.*
soi, pron., *one's self.*
soie, n. f., *silk.*
soif, n. f., *thirst.*
soigner, v. tr., *to take care of, attend.*
soigneux, -se, adj., *careful.*
soi-même, pron., *one's self.*
soins, n. m. pl., *care, attentions.*
soir, n. m., *evening.*
soirée, n. f., *evening, evening party.*
soixante, adj., *sixty.*
soixante-dix, adj., *seventy.*
soixante-dix-huit, adj., *seventy-eight.*
soixante et onze, adj., *seventy-one.*
soldat, n. m., *soldier.*
soleil, n. m., *sun.*
solide, adj., *solid, seaworthy.*
sombre, adj., *dark.*
somme, n. f., *sum.*
sommeil, n. m., *slumber.*
avoir sommeil, *to be sleepy.*
sommelier, n. m., *butler.*
son, adj. m., *his, her, its.*
son, n. m., *sound, tone.*
songe, n. m., *dream.*
†**sont**, pres. indic. of **être**, *they are.*
sorbet, n. m., *sherbet.*
Sorbonne, n. f., a celebrated establishment of learning in Paris.
sorte, n. f., *sort, kind.*
sorti, p.p. of **sortir**, *gone out.*
sou, n. m., *cent.*
souci, n. m., *care.*
soucoupe, n. f., *saucer.*
soudain, -e, adj., *sudden.*
soudainement, adv., *suddenly.*
soulever, v. tr., *to raise.*
soulier, n. m., *shoe.*
soulier découvert, *low shoe.*
soupe, n. f., *soup.*
souper, n. m., *supper.*
source, n. f., *spring.*
sourd, -e, adj., *deaf.*
souvent, adv., *often.*
†**soyez!** imper. of **être**, *be!*
spécial, -e, adj., *special.*
splendide, adj., *splendid.*
studieux, -se, adj., *studious, industrious.*
†**su**, p.p. of **savoir**, *known.*
subjonctif, n. m., *subjunctive.*
succès, n. m., *success.*
sucre, n. m., *sugar.*
sud, n. m., *south.*
Suède, f., *Sweden.*
suif, n. m., *tallow.*
suite (de), adv. loc., *in succession, following.*
sujet, -te, adj., *subject.*
sujet, n. m., *subject.*

supérieur, -e, adj., *superior.*
sûr, -e, adj., *certain, sure.*
sur, prep., *upon, on.*
suspendre, v. tr., *to hang up, suspend.*
système, n. m., *system.*

T.

ta, adj. f., *thy.*
table, n. f., *table.*
tableau, n. m., *picture.*
tableau (noir), n. m., *blackboard.*
tabouret, n. m., *stool.*
tâcher (de), v. intr., *to try, endeavor.*
tailleur, n. m., *tailor.*
tambour, n. m, *drum.*
tandis que, conj. loc, *while.*
tant, adv., *so many, so much.*
tante, n. f., *aunt.*
tapis, n. m., *carpet.*
tard, adv., *late.*
tasse, n. f., *cup.*
tel, -le, adj., *such.*
tellement, adv., *so much.*
temps, n. m., *time; weather.*
  combien de temps, adv. loc., *how long?*
  faire beau temps, *to be fine weather.*
tendre, adj., *tender, soft, new.*
terre, n. f., *earth, ground.*
terrible, adj., *terrible.*
tes, poss. adj. m. and f. pl., *thy.*
tête, n. f., *head.*
Texas (le), *Texas.*
thé, n. m., *tea.*
théâtre, n. m., *theater.*
Théâtre-Français, celebrated French theater in Paris.
thème, n. m., *exercise.*
tien (le), la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes, pron., *thine, yours.*
tiré, p.p., *drawn, dragged.*
tirer, v. tr., *to draw, drag.*
titre, n. m., *title.*
toi, pron., *thou, thee, you.*
toi-même, pron., *thyself, yourself.*
toilette, n. f., *toilet; dressing table.*
toit, n. m., *roof.*
tolérance, n. f., *tolerance.*
tolérant, -e, adj., *tolerant.*
tombé, p.p., *fallen.*
tomber, v. intr., *to fall.*
ton, adj. m., *thy, your.*
toqué, p.p. of **toquer,** as adj, *idiotic, out of one's mind.*
tort, n. m., *wrong.*
  avoir tort, *to be wrong.*
tôt, adv., *soon, early.*
toujours, adv., *always.*
  pour toujours, *for good.*
tour, n. m., *turn.*
  à son tour, adv. loc., *in his turn.*
tourmenter, v. tr., *to torment.*
tourné, p.p., *turned.*
tourner, v. tr. and intr., *to turn.*
tous, m. pl. of **tout,** *all.*
tous les deux, adj. and pron., *both.*
tous les jours, adv. loc., *every day.*
tout, -e, adj., *all, every, each, whole.*
tout, adv., *quite, entirely, all.*
tout, pron., *all, everything.*
tout, n. m., *(the) whole.*
tout à fait, adv. loc., *entirely, quite, wholly.*
tout à l'heure, adv. loc., *just now, presently.*
tout de même, adv. loc., *all the same.*
tout de suite, adv. loc., *at once, immediately.*
tout droit, adv. loc., *straight on.*
tout le monde, pron., *everybody.*
trahir, v. tr., *to betray.*
traite, n. f., *draft.*
traître, n. m., *traitor.*
tranche, n. f., *slice.*
tranquillité, n. f., *quiet, tranquillity.*
transitif, adj., *transitive.*
travail, n. m., *work.*
travailler, v. tr. and intr., *to work.*

travers (à), adv. and prep., *across.*
treize, adj., *thirteen.*
tremblant, pres. part. as adj., *trembling.*
trente, adj., *thirty.*
très, adv., *very.*
très bien, adv. loc., *very, quite well.*
tricoter, v. tr., *to knit.*
triste, adj., *sad.*
tristement, adv., *sadly.*
tristesse, n. f., *sadness.*
trois, adj., *three.*
troisième, adj., *third.*
trompe, n. f., *trunk* (of the elephant).
trompé, p.p., *deceived.*
tromper, v. tr., *to deceive.*
trompette, n. f., *trumpet* (instrument).
trop, adv., *too, too much.*
tropical, -e, adj., *tropical.*
troubler, v. tr., *to trouble.*
troupeau, n. m., *flock.*
trouvé, p.p., *found.*
trouver, v. tr., *to find.*
truite, n. f., *trout.*
tu, pron., *thou, you.*
tué, p.p., *killed.*
tuer, v. tr., *to kill.*
turquoise, n. f., *turquoise.*

U.

un, une, adj., *one.*
un, une, art., *a, an.*
uniforme, adj., *uniform.*
université, n. f., *university.*
usage, n. m., *custom, habit; wear* (of clothes, furniture, etc.).
utile, adj., *useful.*

V.

†va (il), pres. indic. of **aller**, *goes.*
va bien, *keeps good time* (of a watch).
vache, n. f., *cow.*
vain, -e, adj., *vain.*
en vain, adv. loc., *in vain.*
†vais (je), pres. indic. of **aller**, *I go, am going.*
vaisseau, n. m., *vessel.*
valet, n. m., *valet.*
valet de chambre, n. m., *valet.*
valet de pied, n. m., *footman.*
vanille, n. f., *vanilla.*
variole, n. f., *smallpox.*
†vas (tu), pres. indic. of **aller**, *you go.*
véhément, -e, adj., *vehement, violent.*
vendre, v. tr. and intr., *to sell.*
vendredi, n. m., *Friday.*
vendu, p.p., *sold.*
venimeux, -se, adj., *venomous.*
†venir, v. intr., *to come.*
†venu, p.p. of **venir**, *come.*
verbe, n. m., *verb.*
verbe auxiliaire, n. m., *auxiliary verb.*
verbe intransitif, n. m., *intransitive verb.*
verbe régulier, n. m., *regular verb.*
verbe transitif, n. m., *transitive verb.*
verger, n. m., *orchard.*
vérité, n. f., *truth.*
verre, n. m., *glass.*
vers, n. m., *verse.*
vert, -e, adj., *green.*
vertu, n. f., *virtue.*
vêtement, n. m., *clothes, garment.*
†veut (il), pres. indic. of **vouloir**, *wishes, wants.*
†veux (je), pres. indic. of **vouloir**, *I wish, want.*
viande, n. f., *meat.*
vice, n. m., *vice.*
Vichy, *Vichy* (a small French town noted for its thermal waters).
victime, n. f., *victim.*
victoire, n. f., *victory.*
victorieux, -se, adj., *victorious.*
vide, adj., *empty.*

vie, n. f., *life.*
vieil, -le, adj., *old.*
vieillir, v. intr., *to grow old.*
vieux, vieille, adj., *old.*
vif, -ve, adj., *quick, lively, bright.*
vigoureux, -se, adj., *vigorous.*
vilain, -e, adj., *ugly.*
village, n. m., *village.*
ville, n. f., *town, city.*
  en ville, adv. loc., *in town.*
ville d'eau, n. f., *seaside resort.*
vin, n. m., *wine.*
vinaigre, n. m., *vinegar.*
vingt, adj., *twenty.*
vingt-deux, adj., *twenty-two.*
vingtième, adj., *twentieth.*
vingt et un, adj., *twenty-one.*
vingt et unième, adj., *twenty-first.*
violon, n. m., *violin.*
violoncelle, n. m., *violoncello.*
visite, n. f., *visit.*
visité, p.p., *visited.*
visiter, v. tr., *to visit.*
vite, adj., *quick.*
vite, adv., *quickly.*
voici, adv., *here is, here are.*
voilà, adv., *there is, there are.*
†voir, v. tr., *to see.*
†vois (je), pres. indic. of **voir**, *I see.*
voisin, n. m. } *neighbor.*
voisine, n. f. }
voisinage, n. m., *neighborhood.*
voiture, n. f., *carriage.*
voix, n. f., *voice.*
  à haute voix, adv. loc., *aloud.*
voler, v. tr., *to rob, steal.*
voleur, n. m., *thief.*
†vont (ils), pres. indic. of **aller**, *they go.*
vos, poss. adj. m. and f. pl., *your.*
votre, poss. adj. m. and f., *your.*
vôtre (le, la), **les vôtres**, pron., *yours.*
†voulez (vous), pres. indic. of **vouloir**, *you wish, want.*
  vous voulez dire, v. intr., *you mean.*
†vouloir, v. tr. and intr., *to wish, want.*
†voulons (nous), pres. indic. of **vouloir**, *we wish, want.*
vous, pron., *you, thou.*
vous-même, pron., *yourself.*
vous-mêmes, pron., *yourselves.*
voyage, n. m., *journey, voyage.*
voyager, v. intr., *to travel.*
voyageur, n. m., *traveler.*
†voyant, pres. p. of **voir**, *seeing.*
†voyez (vous), pres. indic. of **voir**, *you see.*
†voyez ! imper., *look !*
vrai, -e, adj., *true.*
vraiment, adv., *indeed, really, truly, in truth.*
†vu, p.p. of **voir**, *seen.*
vulgaire, adj., *vulgar, common.*

W.

whist, n. m., *whist.*

Y.

y, adv., *there, thither.*
y, pron., (*by, at, to*) *it, him, her, them.*
yeux, n. m. pl. of **œil**, *eyes.*

Z.

Zélande (Nouvelle-), f., *New Zealand.*

II. ENGLISH-FRENCH.

A.

a, indef. art., *un, une.*
abode, n., *demeure*, f.
about, adv., *environ.*
above, adv., *au-dessus.*
above, prep., *au-dessus de.*
abroad, adv., *à l'étranger.*
absence, n , *absence*, f.
absent, adj., *absent.*
absolutely, adv., *absolument.*
abundant, adj., *abondant.*
academy, n. *académie*, f.
accept, v., *accepter.*
accepted, p p., *accepté.*
accident, n., *accident, malheur*, m.
accomplish, v., *accomplir.*
accordingly, adv., *donc.*
accusative (case), n., *accusatif*, m.
ache, n., *mal*, m. ; *douleur*, f.
across, prep., *à travers (de).*
act, n., *action*, f.
act, v., *agir.*
action, n., *procès* (at law), m. ; *action*, f.
active, adj., *actif.*
actor, n., *acteur*, m.
actress, n., *actrice*, f.
add, v., *ajouter.*
added, p.p., *ajouté.*
address, n., *adresse*, f.
address, v., *adresser.*
adjective, n., *adjectif*, m.
admirably, adv., *admirablement.*
admiral, n., *amiral*, m.
admiration, n., *admiration*, f.
admire, v., *admirer.*
Adrian, n , *Adrien*, m.
advance, v., *avancer, marcher.*
advanced, p.p. as adj., *avancé.*
adverb, n., *adverbe*, m.
adverbial, adj., *adverbial.*
advertisement, n., *annonce*, f.
advice, n., *avis*, m.
affair, n., *affaire*, f.
affection, n., *affection*, f.
affirmative, adj., *affirmatif.*
Africa, n., *Afrique*, f.
after, adv., *dès que.*
after, prep., *après.*
afternoon, n., *après-midi*, m. or f.
again, adv., *encore.*
against, prep., *contre.*
age, n., *âge*, m.
  to be of age, *être majeur.*
aged, adj., *âgé, âgé de.*
agent, n., *agent*, m.
agile, adj., *agile.*
agreed, p.p. as adj., *(c'est) convenu.*
aid, v., *aider.*
ailment, n., *mal*, m. ; *indisposition*, f.
air, n., *air*, m.
alarmed, p.p. as adj., *alarmé.*
Alaska, n., *Alaska.*
Alice, n., *Alice*, f.
all, adj., *tout.*
all, adv., *tout.*
  not at all, *pas du tout.*
all right, *c'est bien, entendu, compris.*
alligator, n., *crocodile*, m.
almost, adv., *presque.*
alms, n. pl., *aumône*, f.
alone, adj., *seul.*
aloud, adv., *à haute voix, tout haut.*
already, adv., *déjà.*
also, adv., *aussi.*
always, adv., *toujours.*
amateur, n., *amateur*, m.
ambition, n., *ambition*, f.
America, n , *Amérique*, f.
  South America, n., *Amérique du Sud.*
American, n., *Américain*, m. ; *Américaine*, f.

amiable, adj., *aimable.*
among, prep., *parmi.*
amusement, n., *amusement*, m.
amusing, adj., *amusant.*
an, indef. art., *un, une.*
ancestors, n. pl., *ancêtres, aïeux*, [m. pl.
and, conj., *et.*
animal, n., *animal*, m.
announce, v., *annoncer.*
answer, n., *réponse*, f.
answer, v., *répondre, répliquer.*
answered, p.p., *répondu.*
anthem, n., *chant* (national), m.
any, adj., *du, de la, des; quelque.*
appear, v., *paraître, avoir l'air.*
appearance, n., *apparence*, f.
appetite, n., *appétit*, m.
applaud, v., *applaudir* (*à*).
apple, n., *pomme*, f.
apricot, n., *abricot*, m.
April, n., *avril*, m.
architecture, n., *architecture*, f.
are (they), v., *ils sont.*
army, n., *armée*, f.
arrive, v., *arriver.*
arrived, p.p., *arrivé.*
arrogant, adj., *arrogant.*
Arthur, n., *Arthur*, m.
article, n., *article*, m.
artificial, adj., *artificiel.*
artist, n., *artiste*, m.
as, conj., *aussi.*
as . . . as, *aussi . . . que;* after a negation, *si . . . que.*
ashamed, adj., *honteux.*
to be ashamed, *avoir honte.*
ask, v., *demander.*
asked, p.p., *demandé.*
aspirate, adj., *aspiré.*
assassin, n., *assassin*, m.
assure, v., *assurer.*
assuredly, adv., *assurément.*
astonish, v., *étonner.*
at, prep., *à.*
attack, v., *attaquer.*
attend, v. tr., *soigner.*
attentions, n., *soins*, m. pl.
attic, n., *mansarde*, f.
August, n., *août*, m.
aunt, n., *tante*, f.
autumn, n., *automne*, m. and f.
auxiliary, adj., *auxiliaire.*
awkward, adj., *gauche.*
awoke, p.p., *éveillé.*

B.

baby, n., *bébé*, m.
bachelor, n., *garçon*, m.
bacon, n., *lard*, m.
bad, adj., *mauvais, méchant.*
from bad to worse, adv. loc., *de mal en pis.*
badly, adv., *mal.*
baggage, n., *bagage*, m.
baker, n., *boulanger*, m.
ball, n., *bal* (danse), m.; *balle* (*à* [*jouer*), f.
bank note, n., *billet de banque*, m.
Baptist, n., *Baptiste*, m.
bar, n., *barre*, f.
basket, n., *panier*, m.
bass viol, n., *contrebasse*, f.
bath, n., *bain*, m.
battle, n., *bataille*, f.
be! imper. of *être, soyez!*
be, v., *être.*
bear, n., *ours*, m.
bear, v., *porter.*
beat, v., *battre.*
beautiful, adj., *beau, bel*, m.; *belle*, f.
beauty, n., *beauté*, f.
because, conj., *parce que.*
become, p.p., *devenu.*
become, v., *devenir.*
he becomes, *il devient.*
I become, *je deviens.*
bed, n., *lit*, m.
bedroom, n., *chambre à coucher*, f.
beef, n., *bœuf*, m.
been, p.p., *été.*

beg, v., *demander, prier (de)*.
I beg of you, *je vous (en) prie*.
to beg pardon, *demander pardon*.
beggar, n., *mendiant*, m.
behavior, n., *conduite*, f.
being, n., *être*, m.; *créature*, f.
belief, n., *croyance*, f.
believe, v., *croire*.
I believe, *je crois*.
bell, n., *cloche*, f.
belong (they), pres. indic., *appartient*.
belongs, pres. indic., *appartient*.
bench, n., *banc*, m.
benefit, n., *profit*, m.
benevolence, n., *bienfaisance*, f.
Bertha, n., *Berthe*, f.
best, adj., *le meilleur*.
best, adv., *le mieux*.
betray, v., *trahir*.
better, adj., *meilleur*.
better, adv., *mieux*.
better and better, adv. loc., *de mieux en mieux*.
beyond, prep., *au-delà (de)*.
big, adj., *grand, gros*.
bill, n., *billet de commerce*.
bill of exchange, *lettre de change*, f.
bird, n., *oiseau*, m.
birthday, n., *jour de fête*, m.; *fête*, f.
bite, v., *mordre*.
bitter, adj., *amer*.
bitterly, adv., *amèrement*.
black, adj., *noir*.
black, n., *noir*, m.
blackboard, n., *tableau (noir)*, m.
blame, v., *blâmer*.
Blanche, n., *Blanche*, f.
bless, v., *bénir*.
blind, adj., *aveugle*.
blue, adj., *bleu*.
blush, v., *rougir*.
boat, n., *bateau*, m.
boil, v., *bouillir*.
bonnet, n., *chapeau*, m.
book, n., *livre*, m.
picture book, *livre d'images*, m.
book of songs, *cahier de chansons*, m.
border, n., *bord*, m.; *frontière*, f.
born, p.p., *né*.
I was born, *je suis né*.
borrow, v., *emprunter*.
borrowed, p.p., *emprunté*.
both, adj., *les deux*.
both, pron., *tous les deux, l'un et l'autre*.
bottle, n., *bouteille, carafe*, f.
bought, p.p., *acheté*.
bound, p.p. as adj., *relié* (of books).
bow (to), v., *saluer*.
bowed (to), p.p., *salué*.
box, n., *boîte*, f.
boy, n., *garçon, enfant*, m.
brave, adj., *brave, courageux*.
bread, n., *pain*, m.
break, v., *casser*.
breakfast, n., *déjeuner*, m.
early or first breakfast, *petit* or *premier déjeuner*.
to have or take breakfast, *déjeuner*.
breakfasted, *déjeuné*.
bred, p.p. as adj., *élevé*.
brick, n., *brique*, f.
bright, adj., *vif*.
brilliant, adj., *brillant*.
bring, v., *amener* (of persons), *apporter* (of things).
to bring away, *emmener* (of persons), *emporter* (of things).
brisk, adj., *vif, actif*.
broad, adj., *large*.
broken, p.p., *cassé*.
bronchitis, n., *bronchite*, f.
brooch, n., *broche*, f.
brook, n., *ruisseau*, m.
brother, n., *frère*, m.
brought, *amené* (of persons), *apporté* (of things).
brought up, p.p. as adj., *élevé*.
brown, adj., *brun*.
brush, n., *brosse*, f.
Brussels, n., *Bruxelles*.
build, v., *bâtir*.

building, n., *bâtiment*, m.
bureau, n., *bureau*, m.
buried, p.p., *enterré*.
burly, adj., *gros*.
burning, adj., *brûlant*.
bury, v., *enterrer*.
business, n., *affaires*, f., pl.
business man, n., *homme d'affaires*, m.
busy, adj., *occupé*.
but, conj., *mais*.
butler, n., *sommelier*, m.
butter, n., *beurre*, m.
button, n., *bouton*, m.
buy, v., *acheter*.
by, prep., *par*.

C.

cage, n., *cage*, f.
cake, n., *gâteau*, m.
California, n., *Californie*, f.
can, v., *pouvoir*.
  he can, *il peut*.
  I can, *je peux* or *puis*.
  you can, *vous pouvez*.
can you imagine such a thing? *concevez-vous cela?*
Canada, n., *Canada*, m.
canary, n., *serin*, *canari*, m.
candle, n., *chandelle*, f.
candlestick, n., *chandelier*, m.
cane, n., *canne*, f.
captain, n., *capitaine*, m.
care, n., *souci*, *soin*, m.; *sollicitude*, f.
care for, v., *soigner*, *aimer*.
careful, adj., *soigneux*.
careless, adj., *négligent*.
carnation, n., *œillet*, m.
carpet, n., *tapis*, m.
carriage, n., *voiture*, f.
carried, p.p., *porté*.
carried off, *enlevé*.
carry, v., *porter*, *emporter*.
carry off, *enlever*, *emporter*.
case, n., *cas*, m.
cash, n., *argent comptant*, m.
casters, n., *huilier*, m.
castle, n., *château*, m.
cat, n., *chat*, m.
catarrh, n., *catarrhe*, m.
catch, v., *attraper*, *prendre*.
Catholic, adj., *catholique*.
cause, n., *cause*, f.
ceiling, n., *plafond*, m.
celebrated, adj., *célèbre*.
cellar, n., *cave*, f.
cemetery, n., *cimetière*, m.
cent, n., *sou*, m.
central, adj., *central*.
certain, adj., *certain*, *sûr*.
certainly, adv., *certainement*, *assurément*.
chair, n., *chaise*, f.
chalk, n., *craie*, f.
chamber, n., *chambre*, f.
chambermaid, n., *fille de chambre*, f.
change, n., *changement*, m.; *monnaie*, f.
  small change, *petite monnaie*, f.
change, v., *changer*.
chant, n., *chant d'église*, m.
chapel, n., *chapelle*, f.
chaps, n., *gerçures*, f. pl.
character, n., *caractère*, m.
charitable, adj., *charitable*.
charity, n., *charité*, f.
Charles, n., *Charles*, m.
charming, adj, *charmant*.
chase, n., *chasse*, f.
chase (out), v., *chasser*.
cheap, adj. and adv., *bon marché*.
cheery, adj., *gai*.
cheese, n., *fromage*, m.
check, n., *chèque*, m.
cherry, n., *cerise*, f.
chess, n., *échecs*, m., pl.
chest of drawers, n., *commode*, f.
chilblain, n., *engelure*, f.
child, n., *enfant*, m. and f.
childhood, n., *enfance*, f.

Chile, n., *Chili*, m.
chimney, n., *cheminée*, f.
chimneypiece, n., *dessus de cheminée*, m.
China, n., *Chine*, f.
chocolate, n., *chocolat*, m.
choir, n., *chœur*, m.
choir master, n., *maître de chapelle*, m.
choose, v., *choisir*.
chorus (in), *en chœur*.
Christian, adj., *chrétien*.
Christian, n., *chrétien*, m.
chrysanthemum, n., *chrysanthème*, m.
church, n., *église*, f.
citizen, n., *citoyen*, m.
claim, v., *réclamer*.
clamor for, v., *réclamer*.
clarinet, n. *clarinette*, f. (instrument).
Clarissa, n., *Clarisse*, f.
class, n., *classe*, f.
clean, adj., *propre*.
clearly, adv., *clairement*.
clergyman, n., *curé*, *prêtre*, m.
clever, adj., *habile*, *adroit*, *malin*.
cleverness, n., *habileté*, *adresse*, f.
client, n., *client*, m.; *pratique*, f.
climate, n., *climat*, m.
clock, n., *horloge*, f. (on buildings); *pendule*, f. (in the house).
o'clock, adv. loc., *heure*, *heures*.
closed, p.p., *fermé*.
clothes, n., *vêtement*, m.
cloud, n., *nuage*, m.
coachman, n., *cocher*, m.
coat, n., *paletot*, *habit*, m.; *robe*, f. (of a horse).
coffee, n., *café*, m.
cold, adj., *froid*.
to be cold, *avoir froid*.
to catch cold, *prendre froid*.
cold, n., *froid*, *catarrhe*, m.
catch cold, *attraper un rhume*.
collar, n., *col*, m.
collect, v., *percevoir* (taxes, etc.).
colony, n., *colonie*, f.
come, p.p., *venu*.
come, v., *venir*.
come back, p.p., *revenu*, *rentré*.
come down, v., *descendre*.
they come down, *ils descendent*.
come down, p.p., *descendu*.
come home, v., *rentrer* (chez soi).
comical, adj., *comique*.
command, v., *commander*.
commands (he), v., *il commande*.
commence, v., *commencer*.
commenced, p.p., *commencé*.
common, adj., *commun*, *ordinaire*, *vulgaire*.
commonly, adv., *communément*, *ordinairement*.
communication, n., *communication*, f.
complaint, n., *plainte*, f.
complete, v., *compléter*, *finir*.
compound (tense), adj., *temps composé*.
comprise, v., *comprendre*.
comprised, p.p., *compris*.
comrade, n., *camarade*, m. and f.
conceive, v., *concevoir*.
concentrate, v., *concentrer*.
concert, n., *concert*, m.
condemn, v., *condamner*.
conditional, n., *conditionnel*, m.
conduct, n., *conduite*, f.
confer, v., *décerner*.
confidence, n., *confiance*, f.
conform, v., *conformer*.
conformable, adj., *conforme*.
conformably, adv., *conformément*.
confused, adj., *confus*.
conjugation, n., *conjugaison*, f.
conjunction, n., *conjonction*, f.
conjunctive, adj. *conjonctif*.
conquered, p.p., *conquis*.
conqueror, n., *conquérant*, m.
conservatory, n., *serre*, f.
consider, v., *considérer*, *regarder*.
construction, n., *construction*, f.

consumption, n., *phtisie*, f.
contented, adj., *content*.
continually, adv., *continuellement*.
contractor, n., *entrepreneur*, m.
contrary, adj., *contraire*.
on the contrary, adv. loc., *au contraire*.
cook, n., *cuisinier*, m.; *cuisinière*, f.
cooked, p.p. as adj., *cuit*.
copy book, n., *cahier*, m.
corner, n., *coin*, m.
cornet, n., *cornet à piston*, m.
corporal, n., *caporal*, m.
correct, v., *corriger*.
correctly, adv., *correctement*, *juste*.
correspond, v., *correspondre*.
costume, n., *costume*, m.
bathing costume, *costume de bain*.
count, v., *compter*.
country, n., *pays*, m.; *patrie*, *campagne*, f.
in the country, adv. loc., *à la campagne*.
country house, n., *maison de campagne*, f.
counts (he), v., *il compte*.
courage, n., *courage*, m.
courageous, adj., *courageux*.
courier, n., *courrier*, m.
court, n., *cour*, f.
cousin, n., *cousin*, m.; *cousine*, f.
cover, n., *couvert*, m. (plate, etc.).
covered, adj. and p.p., *couvert*.
cow, n., *vache*, f.
cowardly, adj., *lâche*.
in a cowardly manner, adv. loc., *lâchement*.
cravat, n., *cravate*, f.
crazy, adj., *fou*, *fol*, m.; *folle*, f.
cream, n., *crème*, f.
create, v., *créer*.
creature, n., *créature*, f.
credit, n., *crédit*, m.
criminal, adj., *criminel*.
crocodile, n., *crocodile*, m.
cry, n., *cri*, m.
cry, v., *crier*.
cuff, n., *manchette*, f.
cup, n., *tasse*, f.
cure, v., *guérir*.
curious, adj., *curieux*.
curtain, n., *rideau*, m.
custom, n., *usage*, m.; *coutume*, *habitude*, f.; *mœurs*, f. pl.
customer, n., *client*, m.; *pratique*, f.
custom-house officer, n., *douanier*, m.
cymbal, n., *cymbale*, f.

D.

dampness, n., *humidité*, f.
dance, n., *danse*, f.
dance, v., *danser*.
danger, n., *danger*, m.
dangerous, adj., *dangereux*.
dark, adj., *obscur*, *noir*, *sombre*.
dative (case), n., *datif*, m.
daughter, n., *fille*, *demoiselle*, f.
day, n., *jour*, m.; *journée*, f.
day before yesterday, *avant-hier*, m.
deaf, adj., *sourd*.
deal (a good), adv., *beaucoup*.
dealer, n., *fournisseur*, m.
dear, adj., *cher*, *chéri*.
dear, adv., *cher* (expensive).
death, n., *mort*, f.
debt, n., *dette*, *créance*, f.
over head and ears in debt, *criblé de dettes*.
deceive, v., *décevoir*, *tromper*.
deceived, p.p., *déçu*, *trompé*.
December, n., *décembre*, m.
decline, v., *déchoir*.
deep, adj., *profond*.
defeat, n., *défaite*, f.
defect, n., *défaut*, m.; *faute*, f.
definite, adj., *défini*.
degradation, n., *dégradation*, f.
dejected, adj., *découragé*.
delicious, adj., *délicieux*.
deliverance, n., *délivrance*, f.

demand, v., *demander.*
deny, v., *nier.*
depart, v., *partir.*
departure, n., *départ*, m.
depend, v., *dépendre.*
depth, n., *profondeur*, f.
descend, v., *descendre.*
descended, p.p., *descendu.*
deserve, v., *mériter.*
desire, n., *désir*, m.
desire, v., *désirer.*
desk, n., *pupitre*, m.
dessert, n., *dessert*, m.
determined, adj. as p.p., *résolu.*
devour, v., *dévorer.*
did (I, he, they), v., *je faisais, il faisait, ils faisaient.*
die, v., *mourir.*
died, p.p., *mort.*
difference, n., *différence*, f.
different, adj., *différent.*
difficult, adj., *difficile.*
difficulty, n., *difficulté*, f. [*peine.*
with **difficulty**, adv. loc., *avec*
diminish, v., *diminuer.*
dine, v., *dîner.*
dining-room, n., *salle à manger*, f.
dinner, n., *dîner*, m.
direct, adj., *direct.*
director, n., *chef, directeur*, m.; *directrice*, f.
dirty, adj., *sale.*
dirty, v., *salir.*
disappoint, v., *décevoir.*
discontented, adj., *mécontent.*
discourage, v., *décourager.*
discouraged, adj., *découragé.*
discovered, p.p. as adj., *découvert.*
discreet, adj., *discret.*
discretion, n., *discrétion*, f.
dish, n., *plat*, m.
dishonest, adj., *malhonnête.*
disjunctive, adj., *disjonctif.*
dismally, adv., *lugubrement.*
disobey, v., *désobéir.*
disposition, n., *caractère*, m.
distinctly, adv., *distinctement.*
distinguish, v., *distinguer.*
distracted, adj., *distrait.*
disturb, v., *déranger.*
ditty, n., *chansonnette*, f.
divide, v., *partager.*
do, v., *faire.*
I **do**, *je fais.*
they **do**, *ils font.*
you **do**, *vous faites.*
doctor, n., *médecin, docteur*, m.
does, v., *fait.*
dog, n., *chien*, m.
doll, n., *poupée*, f.
dollar, n., *dollar*, m.
done, p.p. of **do**, *fait.*
door, n., *porte*, f.
doubt, n., *doute*, m.
dozen, n., *douzaine*, f. [*traite*, f.
draft, n., *billet de commerce*, m.;
drag, v., *tirer.*
dragged, p.p., *tiré.*
draw, v., *tirer, arracher.*
drawing-room, n., *salon*, m.
drawn, p.p., *tiré; attelé* (*de*) (of a carriage).
dream, n., *songe, rêve*, m.
dream, v., *songer, rêver.*
dress, n., *robe*, f.
dressing table, n., *toilette*, f.
drink, v., *boire.*
I **drink**, *je bois.*
drive, n., *promenade en voiture*, f.
drive away, v., *chasser.*
drug, n., *drogue*, f.
drum, n., *tambour*, m.
drunk, p.p., *bu.*
due, adj., *dû.*
due, n., *dû*, m.
dues, n. pl., *port*, m.
duke, n., *duc*, m.
dumb, adj., *muet.*
during, prep., *pendant, durant.*
duty, n., *devoir*, m.

dwell, v., *demeurer, rester.*
dwelling, n., *demeure, habitation*, f.
dwelt, p.p. *demeuré.*
dyspepsia, n., *dyspepsie*, f.

E.

each, adj., *chaque, tout.*
each, pron., *chacun, tout.*
each one, *chacun*, m. ; *chacune*, f.
each other, *l'un l'autre*, m. s. ; *les uns les autres*, pl.
ear, n., *oreille*, f.
early, adv., *tôt.*
earth, n., *terre*, f.
easy, adj , *facile.*
eat, v., *manger.*
eaten, p.p., *mangé.*
eats (he), *il mange.*
economical, adj., *économe.*
edge, n., *bord*, m.
educated, adj., *bien élevé, instruit.*
education, n., *éducation*, f.
Edward, n., *Édouard*, m.
efface, v., *effacer.*
efficacious, adj., *efficace.*
egg, n., *œuf*, m.
eight, adj., *huit.*
eighteen, adj., *dix-huit.*
eighth, adj., *huitième.*
eighty, adj., *quatre-vingts.*
eighty-one, adj., *quatre-vingt-un.*
eighty-two, adj., *quatre-vingt-deux.*
either, pron., *l'un ou l'autre, chacun.*
elder, adj., *aîné.*
elect, v., *élire, nommer.*
electricity, n., *électricité*, f.
elephant, n., *éléphant*, m.
eleven, adj., *onze.*
eleventh, adj , *onzième.*
embarrassment, n., *embarras*, m.
Emilius, n., *Émile*, m.
Emily, n., *Émilie*, f.
emperor, n., *empereur*, m.
empire, n., *empire*, m.
employ, v., *employer.*
empress, n., *impératrice*, f.
empty, adj., *vide.*
end, n., *but*, m. ; *fin*, f.
endeavor, v., *chercher* (*à*), *tâcher* (*de*).
enemy, adj. and n., *ennemi.*
energetic, adj., *énergique.*
England, n., *Angleterre*, f.
English, adj., *anglais.*
Englishman, n., *Anglais*, m.
Englishwoman, n., *Anglaise*, f.
enjoy, v., *jouir* (*de*).
enjoyment, n., *amusement*, m.
enormous, adj., *énorme.*
enough, adv., *assez.*
enter, v., *entrer* (*dans*).
entered, p.p., *entré.*
enthusiastic, adj., *enthousiaste.*
entirely, adv., *entièrement, tout à fait.*
entreat, v., *prier.*
envy, n , *envie*, f.
envy, v., *envier.*
equal, adj., *égal.*
eraser, n., *brosse*, f.
error, n., *erreur, faute*, f.
escape, v., *échapper.*
establish, v., *établir.*
esteem, v., *estimer.*
Europe, n., *Europe*, f.
even, adv., *même.*
evening, n., *soir*, m. ; *soirée*, f.
evening party, n., *soirée*, f.
every, adj., *chaque, tout.*
everybody, pron., *tout le monde.*
every day, adv. loc., *tous les jours.*
everything, pron , *tout.*
everywhere, adv., *partout.*
evil, adj., *méchant.*
evil, n., *mal*, m.
exact, adj., *exact, précis.*
exactly, adv., *précisément, juste.*
example, n., *exemple*, m.
exchange broker, n., *agent de change*, m.

travers (à), adv. and prep., *across.*
treize, adj., *thirteen.*
tremblant, pres. part. as adj., *trembling.*
trente, adj., *thirty.*
très, adv., *very.*
très bien, adv. loc., *very, quite well.*
tricoter, v. tr., *to knit.*
triste, adj., *sad.*
tristement, adv., *sadly.*
tristesse, n. f., *sadness.*
trois, adj., *three.*
troisième, adj., *third.*
trompe, n. f., *trunk* (of the elephant).
trompé, p.p , *deceived.*
tromper, v. tr., *to deceive.*
trompette, n. f., *trumpet* (instrument).
trop, adv., *too, too much.*
tropical, -e, adj., *tropical.*
troubler, v. tr., *to trouble.*
troupeau, n. m., *flock.*
trouvé, p.p., *found.*
trouver, v. tr., *to find.*
truite, n. f., *trout.*
tu, pron., *thou, you.*
tué, p.p., *killed.*
tuer, v. tr., *to kill.*
turquoise, n. f., *turquoise.*

U.

un, une, adj., *one.*
un, une, art., *a, an.*
uniforme, adj., *uniform.*
université, n. f., *university.*
usage, n. m., *custom, habit; wear* (of clothes, furniture, etc.).
utile, adj., *useful.*

V.

†va (il), pres. indic. of **aller**, *goes.*
va bien, *keeps good time* (of a watch).
vache, n. f., *cow.*
vain, -e, adj., *vain.*
en vain, adv. loc., *in vain.*
†vais (je), pres. indic. of **aller**, *I go, am going.*
vaisseau, n. m., *vessel.*
valet, n. m., *valet.*
valet de chambre, n. m., *valet.*
valet de pied, n. m., *footman.*
vanille, n. f., *vanilla.*
variole, n. f., *smallpox.*
†vas (tu), pres. indic. of **aller**, *you go.*
véhément, -e, adj., *vehement, violent.*
vendre, v. tr. and intr., *to sell.*
vendredi, n. m., *Friday.*
vendu, p.p., *sold.*
venimeux, -se, adj., *venomous.*
†venir, v. intr., *to come.*
†venu, p.p. of **venir**, *come.*
verbe, n. m., *verb.*
verbe auxiliaire, n. m., *auxiliary verb.*
verbe intransitif, n. m., *intransitive verb.*
verbe régulier, n. m., *regular verb.*
verbe transitif, n. m., *transitive verb.*
verger, n. m., *orchard.*
vérité, n. f., *truth.*
verre, n. m., *glass.*
vers, n. m., *verse.*
vert, -e, adj., *green.*
vertu, n. f., *virtue.*
vêtement, n. m., *clothes, garment.*
†veut (il), pres. indic. of **vouloir**, *wishes, wants.*
†veux (je), pres. indic. of **vouloir**, *I wish, want.*
viande, n. f., *meat.*
vice, n. m., *vice.*
Vichy, *Vichy* (a small French town noted for its thermal waters).
victime, n. f., *victim.*
victoire, n. f., *victory.*
victorieux, -se, adj., *victorious.*
vide, adj., *empty.*

foolish, adj., *fou, fol*, m.; *folle*, f.
foolishness, n., *folie*, f.
foot, n., *pied*, m.
footman, n., *valet de pied*, m.
for, conj., *car*.
for, prep., *pour; pendant* (during).
forbidden, adj. and p.p., *défendu*.
force, v., *forcer*.
forefinger, n., *index*, m.
forepart, n., *devant*, m.
forest, n., *forêt*, f.
forgive, v., *pardonner*.
forgotten, p.p., *oublié*.
fork, n., *fourchette*, f.
formerly, adv., *autrefois*.
fort, n., *fort*, m.; *fortification*, f.
fortnight, n., *quinzaine*, f.; *quinze jours*.
fortress, n., *forteresse*, f.
fortune, n., *fortune*, f.
forty, adj., *quarante*.
found, p.p., *trouvé*.
four, adj., *quatre*.
fourth, adj., *quatrième*.
frame, n., *cadre*, m.
franc, n., *franc*, m. (20 cents).
France, n., *France*, f.
Francis, n., *François*, m.
frank, adj., *franc*.
Frederick, n., *Frédéric*, m.
free, adj., *libre*.
freeze, v., *geler*.
French, adj., *français*.
Frenchman, n., *Français*.
Frenchwoman, n., *Française*.
frequently, adv., *fréquemment*.
fresh, adj., *frais*, m.; *fraîche*, f.
Friday, n., *vendredi*, m.
friend, n., *ami*, m.; *amie*, f.
frisky, adj., *frétillant*.
frock coat, n., *redingote*, f.
from, prep., *de; dès* (of time).
front, n., *front, devant*, m.; *face*, f.
  in front, adv. loc., *en face*.
frontier, n., *frontière*, f.
fruit, n., *fruit*, m.
fruit stall or store, n., *fruiterie*, f.
fruit tree, n., *arbre fruitier*, m.
fruit woman, n., *fruitière*, f.
fulfill, v., *remplir*.
full, adj., *plein*.
funeral, adj., *funèbre*.
funeral, n., *funérailles*, f. pl.
funereal, adj., *funèbre*.
furnish, v., *fournir*.
furniture, n., *meubles*, m. pl.
future, n., *avenir, futur*, m.

G.

gain, n., *bénéfice*, m.
gain, v., *gagner, remporter* (victory).
game, n., *jeu*, m.
garden, n., *jardin*, m.
gardener, n., *jardinier*, m.
gardener's wife, n., *jardinière*.
garret, n., *mansarde*, f.
gate, n., *porte*, f.
gay, adj., *gai*.
general, adj., *général*.
general, n., *général*, m.
generally, adv., *généralement*.
generous, adj., *généreux*.
genitive (case), n., *génitif*, m.
gentle, adj., *gentil, bon, doux*.
gentleman, n., *monsieur*, m.
gentlemen, n. pl., *messieurs*, m. pl.
gentleness, n., *douceur*, f.
George, n., *George* or *Georges*, m.
giddy, adj., *étourdi*.
gift, n., *don, cadeau*, m.
girl, n., *fille, jeune fille*.
give, v., *donner*.
give back, *rendre*.
give me, *donnez-moi*.
give up, *céder*.
given, p.p., *donné*.
given back, *rendu*.
glad, adj., *aise, bien aise*.
  to be glad, *être bien aise*.

glass, n., *verre*, m.
glee, n., *joie; chanson à reprises*, f. (song).
glove, n., *gant*, m.
gluttony, n., *gourmandise*, f.
go! imper., *allez!*
go, v., *aller*.
I go or am going, *je vais*.
it goes, *il va*.
they go, *ils vont*.
you go, *tu vas* or *vous allez*.
go by, *passer*.
go fast, *avancer* (of a watch).
go for a drive, *aller en voiture*.
go in, *entrer*.
God, n., *Dieu*, m.
gold, n., *or*, m.
gone, p.p., *allé*.
gone away, *parti*.
gone out, *sorti*.
good, adj., *bon*, m.; *bonne*, f.
good, n., *bien*, m.
for good, adv. of time, *pour toujours*.
good day, *bonjour*, m.
good evening, *bonsoir*, m.
good morning, *bonjour*, m.
good night, *bonne nuit*, f.
goods, n. pl., *marchandise*, f.
gout, n., *goutte*, f.
governess, n., *gouvernante*, f.
government, n., *gouvernement*, m.
gown, n., *robe*, f.
granddaughter, n., *petite-fille*, f.
grandfather, n., *grand-père*, m.
grandmother, n., *grand'mère*, f.
grandson, n., *petit-fils*, m.
grape, n., *raisin*, m.
grateful, adj., *reconnaissant*.
gray, adj., *gris*.
grease, n., *graisse*, f.
great, adj., *grand*.
green, adj., *vert*.
greet, v., *saluer*.
Gregorian, adj., *grégorien* (chant).
grippe, n., *grippe*, f.
ground, n. *terre*, f.
grow old, v., *vieillir*.
grow pale, v., *pâlir*.
guest, n., *invité*.
guitar, n., *guitare*, f.
gun, n., *fusil*, m.

H.

habit, n., *usage*, m.; *habitude*, f.
habitually, adv., *habituellement*.
had, p.p., *eu*.
hair, n., *cheveu*, m.; *cheveux*, m. pl.
half, adj. and n., *demi*.
half hour, n., *demi-heure*, f.
ham, n., *jambon*, m.
hand, n., *main*, f.
hand, v., *passer*.
handkerchief, n., *mouchoir*, m.
hang, v., *pendre*.
hang up, v., *suspendre*.
happened, p.p., *arrivé*.
happily, adv., *heureusement*.
happy, adj., *heureux*.
hard, adj., *dur, rude, pénible, fort*.
hardly, adv., *à peine, ne . . . guère*.
harness, n., *harnais*, m.
harp, n., *harpe*, f.
Harvard University, *l'université de Harvard*.
has, v., *a*.
hat, n., *chapeau*, m.
hatbox, n., *carton à chapeau*, m.
hate, v., *haïr*.
have, v., *avoir*.
they have, *ils, elles ont*.
he, pron., *il, lui, celui*.
head, n., *tête*, f.
headache, *mal de tête*, m.; *migraine*, f.
health, n., *santé*, f.
healthy, adj., *bien portant, salubre* (of places).
hear, v., *entendre*.
hear from any one, *recevoir des nouvelles de quelqu'un*.
hear from us, *recevoir de nos nouvelles*.

hear it said, *entendre dire.*
heart, n., *cœur,* m.
kind, big heart, *bon cœur.*
heat, n., *chaleur,* f.
heaven, n., *ciel,* m.; *cieux,* m. pl.
heavy, adj., *lourd, pesant.*
help, n., *secours,* m.; *aide,* f.
help, v., *aider.*
henceforth, adv., *dorénavant.*
Henry, n., *Henri,* m.
her, adj., *son, sa, ses.*
her, pron., *la, lui, elle.*
from her, *d'elle.*
to her, *lui, à elle, y.*
here, adv., *ici.*
here is, are, *voici.*
hero, n., *héros,* m.
heroic, adj., *héroïque.*
hers, pron., *le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes, à elle.*
herself, pron., *elle-même.*
hide, v., *cacher.*
high, adj., *haut, élevé.*
highway, n., *grand'route,* f.
hill, n., *colline,* f.
him, pron., *lui, le.*
from him, *de lui.*
to him, *lui, à lui, y.*
himself, pron., *lui-même.*
his, adj., *son, sa, ses.*
his, pron., *le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes, à lui.*
history, n., *livre d'histoire,* m. (book); *histoire,* f.
home, adv., *à la maison, chez soi.*
home, n., *la maison, le chez-soi.*
homesickness, n., *mal du pays,* m.
honest, adj., *honnête.*
honorable, adj., *honorable.*
hope, n., *espoir,* m.; *espérance,* f.
hope, v., *espérer.*
horse, n., *cheval,* m.
hostile, adj., *hostile.*
hot, adj., *chaud.*
hothouse, n., *serre,* f.
hour, n., *heure,* f.
an hour and a half, *une heure et demie.*
house, n., *ménage,* m.; *maison,* f.
housekeeper, n., *chef de maison,* m.; *gouvernante,* f.
housekeeping, n., *ménage,* m.
housemaid, n., *fille de ménage,* f.
how, adv., *comment.*
how does it happen? *comment se fait-il?*
how do you do? *comment vous portez-vous?* or *te portes-tu?*
how long, *combien de temps, depuis quand.*
how much, many, *combien.*
how now! *eh bien!*
humble, adj., *humble.*
hundred, adj., *cent,* m.
hundred, n., *centaine,* f.
hundred and first, *cent unième.*
hundred and one, *cent un.*
hundredth, adj., *centième.*
hunger, n., *faim,* f.
hunt, n., *chasse,* f.
hunt, v. tr., *chasser.*
hunter, n., *chasseur,* m.
hunting, n., *chasse,* f.
huntsman, n., *chasseur,* m.
husband, n., *mari,* m.
hymn, n., *hymne,* m. and f.

I.

I, pron., *je, moi.*
ice, n., *glace,* f.
ice cream, n., *glace,* f.
iced water, n., *eau glacée,* f.
idiot, idiotic, adj., *toqué, idiot.*
idle, adj., *paresseux, oisif.*
idleness, n., *oisiveté, paresse,* f.
if, conj., *si.*
ill, adj., *malade.*
to look ill, *avoir mauvaise mine.*
ill, adv., *mal.*

ill, n., *mal*, m.; *maux*, pl.
illness, n., *maladie*, f.
image, n., *image*, f.
imagine such a thing (can you)? *concevez-vous cela ?*
immediately, adv., *immédiatement, sur-le-champ, tout de suite.*
immense, adj., *immense.*
immortal, adj., *immortel.*
imperative, n., *impératif*, m.
imperfect, n., *imparfait*, m.
impolite, adj., *impoli.*
impossible, adj., *impossible.*
impostor, n., *imposteur*, m.
impunity, n., *impunité*, f. [*nément.*
with impunity, adv. loc., *impu-*
in, prep., *dans, en ; de* (after a superlative).
inactive, adj., *inactif.*
inattentive, adj., *inattentif, distrait.*
indeed, adv., *en effet, certainement.*
indeed, interj., *vraiment !*
indefinite, adj., *indéfini.*
index, n., *index*, m.
India, n., *Indes*, f. pl.
indicative, n., *indicatif*, m.
indirect, adj., *indirect.*
indolent, adj., *indolent.*
indulgent, adj., *indulgent.*
industrious, adj., *laborieux, studieux.*
industry, n., *application*, f.
infinitive, n., *infinitif*, m.
influenza, n., *grippe*, f.
ingratitude, n., *ingratitude*, f.
inhabit, v., *habiter.*
inhabitant, n., *habitant*, m.
inhabited, p.p., *habité.*
ink, n., *encre*, f.
inkstand, n., *encrier*, m.
inner, adj., *intérieur.*
inquisitive, adj., *curieux.*
inseparable, adj., *inséparable.*
insolvent, adj., *insolvable.*
inspector (of police), n., *commissaire de police*, m.
instant, adv. (in dates), *courant*
instant, n., *instant, moment*, m.
instead (of), prep., *au lieu* (*de*).
instruction, n., *instruction*, f.
insult, n., *injure, insulte*, f.
intelligent, adj., *intelligent.*
inter, v., *enterrer.*
interesting, adj., *intéressant.*
interior, adj. and n., *intérieur*, m
interjection, n., *interjection*, f.
interrogative, adj., *interrogatif.*
intransitive, adj., *intransitif.*
invite, v., *inviter.*
invited, p.p., *invité.*
iron, n., *fer*, m.
irregular, adj., *irrégulier.*
island, n., *île*, f.
isle, n., *île*, f.
it, pron., *il, elle, le, la, lui.*
of it, *de lui, d'elle, en.*
to it, *lui, à lui, à elle, y.*
Italy, n., *Italie*, f.
its, adj., *son, sa, ses.*
its, pron., *le sien, la sienne, les sie les siennes, à lui, à elle.*

J.

James, n., *Jacques*, m.
Jane, n., *Jeanne*, f.
Janet, n., *Jeannette*, f.
January, n., *janvier*, m.
Japan, n., *Japon*, m.
jealous, adj., *jaloux.*
jest, n., *plaisanterie*, f.
jewel, n., *bijou*, m.
jewelry, n., *bijouterie*, f.
Jim, n., *Jacques*, m.
John, n., *Jean*, m.
joke, n., *plaisanterie*, f.
journey, n., *voyage*, m.
journey, v., *voyager.*
joyful, adj., *gai, joyeux, heureux.*
joyously, adv., *joyeusement.*
July, n., *juillet*, m.

June, n., *juin*, m.
just, adv., *juste, justement, exactement*.
justly, adv., *justement*.
just now, adv., *tout à l'heure*.

K.

keep, v., *garder*.
keeps good time, *va bien* (of a watch).
kid, n., *chevreau*, m.
kill, v., *tuer*.
killed, p.p., *tué*.
kind, adj., *bon*.
kind, n., *sorte, manière*, f.
kindness, n., *bonté*, f.
king, n., *roi*, m.
kitchen, n., *cuisine*, f.
kitchenmaid, n., *fille de cuisine*, f.
knee, n., *genou*, m.
on one's knees, adv. loc., *à genoux*.
kneeling, adj., *à genoux*.
knife, n., *couteau*, m.
knit, v., *tricoter*.
knitting needle, n., *aiguille à tricoter*, f.
knock, v., *frapper*.
some one is knocking, *on frappe*.
know, v., *connaître* (to be acquainted with), *savoir* (in the mind).
he knows, *il sait*.
he would know, *il saurait*.
I know, *je connais, je sais*.
you know, *tu sais, vous connaissez, vous savez*.
knowledge, n., *instruction*, f.
known, p.p., *connu, su*.

L.

lace, n., *dentelle*, f.
lacking (to be), v., *manquer*.
ladies, n. pl., *mesdames*, f. pl.
lady, n., *dame*.
young lady, *demoiselle, mademoiselle* (in addressing); *mesdemoiselles*, pl.
lain, p.p., *couché*.
lamp, n., *lampe*, f.
landlord, n., *propriétaire*, m. and f.
lantern, n., *lanterne*, f.
last, adj., *dernier*.
last but one, *avant-dernier*.
late (recently dead), adj., *feu*.
late, adv., *tard*.
lately, adv., *récemment*.
Latin, adj. and n., *latin*, m.
law, n., *loi*, f.
lawyer, n., *avocat*, m.
lay flat, v., *coucher*.
lead, v., *mener, conduire*.
leaf, n., *feuille*, f.
league, n., *lieue*, f.
lean, adj., *maigre*.
leap year, n., *année bissextile*, f.
learn, v., *apprendre*.
learned, adj., *savant*.
least, adj., *le moindre*.
least, adv., *le moins*.
at least, adv. loc., *au moins, du moins*.
leave, v., *quitter, laisser; partir*.
led, p.p., *mené*.
left, adj., *gauche*.
left, p.p., *parti* (intr.), *laissé* (tr.).
leg, n., *jambe*, f.
lend, v., *prêter*.
lenient, adj., *indulgent*.
lent, p.p., *prêté*.
less, adj., *moindre*.
less, adv., *moins*.
lessen, v., *diminuer*.
lesson, n., *devoir*, m.; *leçon*, f.
let, v., *laisser*.
let go, v., *laisser*.
letter, n., *lettre*, f.
letter of credit, *lettre de crédit*, f.
Lewis, n., *Louis*, m.
library, n., *bibliothèque*, f.
lie, n., *mensonge*, m.
life, n., *vie*, f.
lift, v., *lever, soulever*.

Chile, n., *Chili*, m.
chimney, n., *cheminée*, f.
chimneypiece, n., *dessus de cheminée*, m.
China, n., *Chine*, f.
chocolate, n., *chocolat*, m.
choir, n., *chœur*, m.
choir master, n., *maître de chapelle*, m.
choose, v., *choisir*.
chorus (in), *en chœur*.
Christian, adj., *chrétien*.
Christian, n., *chrétien*, m.
chrysanthemum, n., *chrysanthème*, m.
church, n., *église*, f.
citizen, n., *citoyen*, m.
claim, v., *réclamer*.
clamor for, v., *réclamer*.
clarinet, n. *clarinette*, f. (instrument).
Clarissa, n., *Clarisse*, f.
class, n., *classe*, f.
clean, adj., *propre*.
clearly, adv., *clairement*.
clergyman, n., *curé*, *prêtre*, m.
clever, adj., *habile*, *adroit*, *malin*.
cleverness, n., *habileté*, *adresse*, f.
client, n., *client*, m.; *pratique*, f.
climate, n., *climat*, m.
clock, n., *horloge*, f. (on buildings); *pendule*, f. (in the house).
  o'clock, adv. loc., *heure*, *heures*.
closed, p.p., *fermé*.
clothes, n., *vêtement*, m.
cloud, n., *nuage*, m.
coachman, n., *cocher*, m.
coat, n., *paletot*, *habit*, m.; *robe*, f. (of a horse).
coffee, n., *café*, m.
cold, adj., *froid*.
  to be cold, *avoir froid*.
  to catch cold, *prendre froid*.
cold, n., *froid*, *catarrhe*, m.
  catch cold, *attraper un rhume*.
collar, n., *col*, m.
collect, v., *percevoir* (taxes, etc.).
colony, n., *colonie*, f.
come, p.p., *venu*.
come, v., *venir*.
come back, p.p., *revenu*, *rentré*.
come down, v., *descendre*.
  they come down, *ils descendent*.
come down, p.p., *descendu*.
come home, v., *rentrer* (chez soi).
comical, adj., *comique*.
command, v., *commander*.
commands (he), v., *il commande*.
commence, v., *commencer*.
commenced, p.p., *commencé*.
common, adj., *commun*, *ordinaire*, *vulgaire*.
commonly, adv., *communément*, *ordinairement*.
communication, n., *communication*, f.
complaint, n., *plainte*, f.
complete, v., *compléter*, *finir*.
compound (tense), adj., *temps composé*.
comprise, v., *comprendre*.
comprised, p.p., *compris*.
comrade, n., *camarade*, m. and f.
conceive, v., *concevoir*.
concentrate, v., *concentrer*.
concert, n., *concert*, m.
condemn, v., *condamner*.
conditional, n., *conditionnel*, m.
conduct, n., *conduite*, f.
confer, v., *décerner*.
confidence, n., *confiance*, f.
conform, v., *conformer*.
conformable, adj., *conforme*.
conformably, adv., *conformément*.
confused, adj., *confus*.
conjugation, n., *conjugaison*, f.
conjunction, n., *conjonction*, f.
conjunctive, adj., *conjonctif*.
conquered, p.p., *conquis*.
conqueror, n., *conquérant*, m.
conservatory, n., *serre*, f.
consider, v., *considérer*, *regarder*.
construction, n., *construction*, f.

consumption, n., *phtisie*, f.
contented, adj., *content.*
continually, adv., *continuellement.*
contractor, n., *entrepreneur*, m.
contrary, adj., *contraire.*
  on the contrary, adv. loc., *au contraire.*
cook, n., *cuisinier*, m.; *cuisinière*, f.
cooked, p.p. as adj., *cuit.*
copy book, n., *cahier*, m.
corner, n., *coin*, m.
cornet, n., *cornet à piston*, m.
corporal, n., *caporal*, m.
correct, v., *corriger.*
correctly, adv., *correctement, juste.*
correspond, v., *correspondre.*
costume, n., *costume*, m. [*bain.*
  bathing costume, *costume de*
count, v., *compter.*
country, n., *pays*, m.; *patrie, campagne*, f. [*campagne.*
  in the country, adv. loc., *à la*
country house, n., *maison de campagne*, f.
counts (he), v., *il compte.*
courage, n., *courage*, m.
courageous, adj., *courageux.*
courier, n., *courrier*, m.
court, n., *cour*, f.
cousin, n., *cousin*, m.; *cousine*, f.
cover, n., *couvert*, m. (plate, etc.).
covered, adj. and p.p., *couvert.*
cow, n., *vache*, f.
cowardly, adj., *lâche.*
  in a cowardly manner, adv. loc., *lâchement.*
cravat, n., *cravate*, f.
crazy, adj., *fou, fol*, m.; *folle*, f.
cream, n., *crème*, f.
create, v., *créer.*
creature, n., *créature*, f.
credit, n., *crédit*, m.
criminal, adj., *criminel.*
crocodile, n., *crocodile*, m.
cry, n., *cri*, m.
cry, v., *crier.*
cuff, n., *manchette*, f.
cup, n., *tasse*, f.
cure, v., *guérir.*
curious, adj., *curieux.*
curtain, n., *rideau*, m.
custom, n., *usage*, m.; *coutume, habitude*, f.; *mœurs*, f. pl.
customer, n., *client*, m.; *pratique*, f.
custom-house officer, n., *douanier*, m.
cymbal, n., *cymbale*, f.

D.

dampness, n., *humidité*, f.
dance, n., *danse*, f.
dance, v., *danser.*
danger, n., *danger*, m.
dangerous, adj., *dangereux.*
dark, adj., *obscur, noir, sombre.*
dative (case), n., *datif*, m.
daughter, n., *fille, demoiselle*, f.
day, n., *jour*, m.; *journée*, f.
day before yesterday, *avant-hier*, m.
deaf, adj., *sourd.*
deal (a good), adv., *beaucoup.*
dealer, n., *fournisseur*, m.
dear, adj., *cher, chéri.*
dear, adv., *cher* (expensive).
death, n., *mort*, f.
debt, n., *dette, créance*, f.
  over head and ears in debt, *criblé de dettes.*
deceive, v., *décevoir, tromper.*
deceived, p.p., *déçu, trompé.*
December, n., *décembre*, m.
decline, v., *déchoir.*
deep, adj., *profond.*
defeat, n., *défaite*, f.
defect, n., *défaut*, m.; *faute*, f.
definite, adj., *défini.*
degradation, n., *dégradation*, f.
dejected, adj., *découragé.*
delicious, adj., *délicieux.*
deliverance, n., *délivrance*, f.

demand, v., *demander*.
deny, v., *nier*.
depart, v., *partir*.
departure, n., *départ*, m.
depend, v., *dépendre*.
depth, n., *profondeur*, f.
descend, v., *descendre*.
descended, p.p., *descendu*.
deserve, v., *mériter*.
desire, n., *désir*, m.
desire, v., *désirer*.
desk, n., *pupitre*, m.
dessert, n., *dessert*, m.
determined, adj. as p.p., *résolu*.
devour, v., *dévorer*.
did (I, he, they), v., *je faisais, il faisait, ils faisaient*.
die, v., *mourir*.
died, p.p., *mort*.
difference, n., *différence*, f.
different, adj., *différent*.
difficult, adj., *difficile*.
difficulty, n., *difficulté*, f.
  with difficulty, adv. loc., *avec peine*.
diminish, v., *diminuer*.
dine, v., *dîner*.
dining-room, n., *salle à manger*, f.
dinner, n., *dîner*, m.
direct, adj., *direct*.
director, n., *chef, directeur*, m.; *directrice*, f.
dirty, adj., *sale*.
dirty, v., *salir*.
disappoint, v., *décevoir*.
discontented, adj., *mécontent*.
discourage, v., *décourager*.
discouraged, adj., *découragé*.
discovered, p.p. as adj., *découvert*.
discreet, adj., *discret*.
discretion, n., *discrétion*, f.
dish, n., *plat*, m.
dishonest, adj., *malhonnête*.
disjunctive, adj., *disjonctif*.
dismally, adv., *lugubrement*.
disobey, v., *désobéir*.
disposition, n., *caractère*, m.
distinctly, adv., *distinctement*.
distinguish, v., *distinguer*.
distracted, adj., *distrait*.
disturb, v., *déranger*.
ditty, n., *chansonnette*, f.
divide, v., *partager*.
do, v., *faire*.
  I do, *je fais*.
  they do, *ils font*.
  you do, *vous faites*.
doctor, n., *médecin, docteur*, m.
does, v., *fait*.
dog, n., *chien*, m.
doll, n., *poupée*, f.
dollar, n., *dollar*, m.
done, p.p. of **do**, *fait*.
door, n., *porte*, f.
doubt, n., *doute*, m.
dozen, n., *douzaine*, f.
draft, n., *billet de commerce*, m.; *traite*, f.
drag, v., *tirer*.
dragged, p.p., *tiré*.
draw, v., *tirer, arracher*.
drawing-room, n., *salon*, m.
drawn, p.p., *tiré; attelé* (*de*) (of a carriage).
dream, n., *songe, rêve*, m.
dream, v., *songer, rêver*.
dress, n., *robe*, f.
dressing table, n., *toilette*, f.
drink, v., *boire*.
  I drink, *je bois*.
drive, n., *promenade en voiture*, f.
drive away, v., *chasser*.
drug, n., *drogue*, f.
drum, n., *tambour*, m.
drunk, p.p., *bu*.
due, adj., *dû*.
due, n., *dû*, m.
dues, n. pl., *port*, m.
duke, n., *duc*, m.
dumb, adj., *muet*.
during, prep., *pendant, durant*.
duty, n., *devoir*, m.

dwell, v., *demeurer, rester.*
dwelling, n., *demeure, habitation*, f.
dwelt, p.p. *demeuré.*
dyspepsia, n., *dyspepsie*, f.

E.

each, adj., *chaque, tout.*
each, pron., *chacun, tout.*
each one, *chacun*, m. ; *chacune*, f.
each other, *l'un l'autre*, m. s. ; *les uns les autres*, pl.
ear, n., *oreille*, f.
early, adv., *tôt.*
earth, n., *terre*, f.
easy, adj , *facile.*
eat, v., *manger.*
eaten, p.p., *mangé.*
eats (he), *il mange.*
economical, adj., *économe.*
edge, n., *bord*, m.
educated, adj., *bien élevé, instruit.*
education, n., *éducation*, f.
Edward, n., *Édouard*, m.
efface, v., *effacer.*
efficacious, adj., *efficace.*
egg, n., *œuf*, m.
eight, adj., *huit.*
eighteen, adj., *dix-huit.*
eighth, adj., *huitième.*
eighty, adj., *quatre-vingts.*
eighty-one, adj., *quatre-vingt-un.*
eighty-two, adj., *quatre-vingt-deux.*
either, pron., *l'un ou l'autre, chacun.*
elder, adj., *aîné.*
elect, v., *élire, nommer.*
electricity, n., *électricité*, f.
elephant, n., *éléphant*, m.
eleven, adj., *onze.*
eleventh, adj., *onzième.*
embarrassment, n., *embarras*, m.
Emilius, n., *Émile*, m.
Emily, n., *Émilie*, f.
emperor, n., *empereur*, m.
empire, n., *empire*, m.
employ, v., *employer.*
empress, n., *impératrice*, f.
empty, adj., *vide.*
end, n., *but*, m. ; *fin*, f.
endeavor, v., *chercher (à), tâcher (de).*
enemy, adj. and n., *ennemi.*
energetic, adj., *énergique.*
England, n., *Angleterre*, f.
English, adj., *anglais.*
Englishman, n., *Anglais*, m.
Englishwoman, n., *Anglaise*, f.
enjoy, v., *jouir (de).*
enjoyment, n., *amusement*, m.
enormous, adj., *énorme.*
enough, adv., *assez.*
enter, v., *entrer (dans).*
entered, p.p., *entré.*
enthusiastic, adj., *enthousiaste.*
entirely, adv., *entièrement, tout à fait.*
entreat, v., *prier.*
envy, n., *envie*, f.
envy, v., *envier.*
equal, adj., *égal.*
eraser, n., *brosse*, f.
error, n., *erreur, faute*, f.
escape, v., *échapper.*
establish, v., *établir.*
esteem, v., *estimer.*
Europe, n., *Europe*, f.
even, adv., *même.*
evening, n., *soir*, m. ; *soirée*, f.
evening party, n., *soirée*, f.
every, adj., *chaque, tout.*
everybody, pron., *tout le monde.*
every day, adv. loc., *tous les jours.*
everything, pron., *tout.*
everywhere, adv., *partout.*
evil, adj., *méchant.*
evil, n., *mal*, m.
exact, adj., *exact, précis.*
exactly, adv., *précisément, juste.*
example, n., *exemple*, m.
exchange broker, n., *agent de change*, m.

excuse, n., *excuse*, f.
exercise, n., *exercise, thème*, m.
exercise book, n., *cahier*, m.
exhibition, n., *exposition*, f.
expect, v, *attendre*.
expensive, adj., *cher, chère*.
experienced, adj., *expérimenté*.
explain, v., *expliquer*.
extend, v., *étendre*.
extensive, adj., *extensif*.
exterior, adj. and n., *extérieur*, m.
extravagant, adj., *extravagant*.
eye, n., *œil*, m.; *yeux*, pl.

F.

fable, n., *fable*, f.
face, n., *face*, f. (of things).
fact, n., *fait*, m.
fact (in), adv., *au fait, en effet*.
factory, n., *fabrique*, f.
faith, n., *foi*, f.
faithful, adj., *fidèle*.
fall, n., *automne*, m. and f.
fall, v., *tomber, déchoir* (fig.).
fall due, *échoir*.
  will fall due, *écherra*.
fallen, p.p., *tombé*.
false, adj., *faux*, m.; *fausse*, f.
family, n., *famille*, f.
famous, adj., *fameux*.
fan, n., *éventail*, m.
fancy, v., *aimer*.
far, adj., *lointain*.
far, adv., *loin*.
fashion, n., *mode, façon, manière*, f.
fashionable, adj., *à la mode*.
fast (to be), *avancer* (of a watch).
  is fast, *avance*.
fat, adj., *gras*.
father, n., *père, papa*.
fatherland, n., *patrie*, f.
fatigue, n., *fatigue*, f.
fault, n., *défaut*, m.; *faute*, f.
fear, n., *peur*, f.
fearful, adj., *timide*.
feast, n., *fête*, f.
feather, n., *plume*, f.
February, n., *février*, m.
feeble, adj., *faible*.
feed, v., *nourrir*.
feel, v., *sentir; percevoir* (sensation).
fellow man, n., *semblable*, m.
feminine, adj. and n., *féminin*, m.
fetch, v., *apporter*.
fever, n., *fièvre*, f.
few, adj., *peu (de)*.
few people, *peu de gens, peu de monde*.
field, n., *champ*, m.
fifteen, adj., *quinze*.
fiftieth, adj., *cinquantième*.
fifty, adj., *cinquante*.
file, n., *lime*, f.
fill, v., *remplir*.
find, v., *trouver*.
fine, adj., *beau, bel*, m.; *belle*, f.
finger, n., *doigt*, m.
  little finger, *petit doigt*, m.
  middle finger, *médius*, m.
  ring finger, *annulaire*, m.
finish, v., *finir*.
fire, n., *feu*, m.
fireside, n., *coin du feu*, m.
first, adj., *premier*.
fish, n., *poisson*, m.
fishing, n., *pêche*, f.
five, adj., *cinq*.
flageolet, n., *flageolet*, m.
flesh, n., *chair*, f.
flight of steps, n., *perron*, m.
flock, n., *troupeau*, m.
floor, n., *plancher*, m.
Florida, n., *Floride*, f.
florin, n., *florin*, m.
flower, n., *fleur*, f.
flute, n., *flûte*, f.
fly, n., *mouche*, f.
foe, n., *ennemi*, m.
fog, n., *brouillard*, m.
fond (to be), v., *aimer*.

foolish, adj., *fou, fol*, m.; *folle*, f.
foolishness, n., *folie*, f.
foot, n., *pied*, m.
footman, n., *valet de pied*, m.
for, conj., *car*.
for, prep., *pour; pendant* (during).
forbidden, adj. and p.p., *défendu*.
force, v., *forcer*.
forefinger, n., *index*, m.
forepart, n., *devant*, m.
forest, n., *forêt*, f.
forgive, v., *pardonner*.
forgotten, p.p., *oublié*.
fork, n., *fourchette*, f.
formerly, adv., *autrefois*.
fort, n., *fort*, m.; *fortification*, f.
fortnight, n., *quinzaine*, f.; *quinze jours*.
fortress, n., *forteresse*, f.
fortune, n., *fortune*, f.
forty, adj., *quarante*.
found, p.p., *trouvé*.
four, adj., *quatre*.
fourth, adj., *quatrième*.
frame, n., *cadre*, m.
franc, n., *franc*, m. (20 cents).
France, n., *France*, f.
Francis, n., *François*, m.
frank, adj., *franc*.
Frederick, n., *Frédéric*, m.
free, adj., *libre*.
freeze, v., *geler*.
French, adj., *français*.
Frenchman, n., *Français*.
Frenchwoman, n., *Française*.
frequently, adv., *fréquemment*.
fresh, adj., *frais*, m.; *fraîche*, f.
Friday, n., *vendredi*, m.
friend, n., *ami*, m.; *amie*, f.
frisky, adj., *frétillant*.
frock coat, n., *redingote*, f.
from, prep., *de; dès* (of time).
front, n., *front, devant*, m.; *face*, f.
  in front, adv. loc., *en face*.
frontier, n., *frontière*, f.
fruit, n., *fruit*, m.
fruit stall or **store**, n., *fruiterie*, f.
fruit tree, n., *arbre fruitier*, m.
fruit woman, n., *fruitière*, f.
fulfill, v., *remplir*.
full, adj., *plein*.
funeral, adj., *funèbre*.
funeral, n., *funérailles*, f. pl.
funereal, adj., *funèbre*.
furnish, v., *fournir*.
furniture, n., *meubles*, m. pl.
future, n., *avenir, futur*, m.

G.

gain, n., *bénéfice*, m.
gain, v., *gagner, remporter* (victory).
game, n., *jeu*, m.
garden, n., *jardin*, m.
gardener, n., *jardinier*, m.
gardener's wife, n., *jardinière*.
garret, n., *mansarde*, f.
gate, n., *porte*, f.
gay, adj., *gai*.
general, adj., *général*.
general, n., *général*, m.
generally, adv., *généralement*.
generous, adj., *généreux*.
genitive (case), n., *génitif*, m.
gentle, adj., *gentil, bon, doux*.
gentleman, n., *monsieur*, m.
gentlemen, n. pl., *messieurs*, m. pl.
gentleness, n., *douceur*, f.
George, n., *George* or *Georges*, m.
giddy, adj., *étourdi*.
gift, n., *don, cadeau*, m.
girl, n., *fille, jeune fille*.
give, v., *donner*.
give back, *rendre*.
give me, *donnez-moi*.
give up, *céder*.
given, p.p., *donné*.
given back, *rendu*.
glad, adj., *aise, bien aise*.
  to be glad, *être bien aise*.

glass, n., *verre*, m.
glee, n., *joie; chanson à reprises*, f. (song).
glove, n., *gant*, m.
gluttony, n., *gourmandise*, f.
go! imper., *allez!*
go, v., *aller*.
I go or am going, *je vais*.
it goes, *il va*.
they go, *ils vont*.
you go, *tu vas* or *vous allez*.
go by, *passer*.
go fast, *avancer* (of a watch).
go for a drive, *aller en voiture*.
go in, *entrer*.
God, n., *Dieu*, m.
gold, n., *or*, m.
gone, p.p., *allé*.
gone away, *parti*.
gone out, *sorti*.
good, adj., *bon*, m.; *bonne*, f.
good, n., *bien*, m.
for good, adv. of time, *pour toujours*.
good day, *bonjour*, m.
good evening, *bonsoir*, m.
good morning, *bonjour*, m.
good night, *bonne nuit*, f.
goods, n. pl., *marchandise*, f.
gout, n., *goutte*, f.
governess, n., *gouvernante*, f.
government, n., *gouvernement*, m.
gown, n., *robe*, f.
granddaughter, n., *petite-fille*, f.
grandfather, n., *grand-père*, m.
grandmother, n., *grand'mère*, f.
grandson, n., *petit-fils*, m.
grape, n., *raisin*, m.
grateful, adj., *reconnaissant*.
gray, adj., *gris*.
grease, n., *graisse*, f.
great, adj., *grand*.
green, adj., *vert*.
greet, v., *saluer*.
Gregorian, adj., *grégorien* (chant).
grippe, n., *grippe*, f.
ground, n. *terre*, f.
grow old, v., *vieillir*.
grow pale, v., *pâlir*.
guest, n., *invité*.
guitar, n., *guitare*, f.
gun, n., *fusil*, m.

H.

habit, n., *usage*, m.; *habitude*, f.
habitually, adv., *habituellement*.
had, p.p., *eu*.
hair, n., *cheveu*, m.; *cheveux*, m. pl.
half, adj. and n., *demi*.
half hour, n., *demi-heure*, f.
ham, n., *jambon*, m.
hand, n., *main*, f.
hand, v., *passer*.
handkerchief, n., *mouchoir*, m.
hang, v., *pendre*.
hang up, v., *suspendre*.
happened, p.p., *arrivé*.
happily, adv., *heureusement*.
happy, adj., *heureux*.
hard, adj., *dur, rude, pénible, fort*.
hardly, adv., *à peine, ne . . . guère*.
harness, n., *harnais*, m.
harp, n., *harpe*, f.
Harvard University, *l'université de Harvard*.
has, v., *a*.
hat, n., *chapeau*, m.
hatbox, n., *carton à chapeau*, m.
hate, v., *haïr*.
have, v., *avoir*.
they have, *ils, elles ont*.
he, pron., *il, lui, celui*.
head, n., *tête*, f.
headache, *mal de tête*, m.; *migraine*, f.
health, n., *santé*, f.
healthy, adj., *bien portant, salubre* (of places).
hear, v., *entendre*.
hear from any one, *recevoir des nouvelles de quelqu'un*.
hear from us, *recevoir de nos nouvelles*.

hear it said, *entendre dire.*
heart, n., *cœur*, m.
kind, big heart, *bon cœur.*
heat, n., *chaleur*, f.
heaven, n., *ciel*, m.; *cieux*, m. pl.
heavy, adj., *lourd, pesant.*
help, n., *secours*, m.; *aide*, f.
help, v., *aider.*
henceforth, adv., *dorénavant.*
Henry, n., *Henri*, m.
her, adj., *son, sa, ses.*
her, pron., *la, lui, elle.*
from her, *d'elle.*
to her, *lui, à elle, y.*
here, adv., *ici.*
here is, are, *voici.*
hero, n., *héros*, m.
heroic, adj., *héroïque.*
hers, pron., *le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes, à elle.*
herself, pron., *elle-même.*
hide, v., *cacher.*
high, adj., *haut, élevé.*
highway, n., *grand'route*, f.
hill, n., *colline*, f.
him, pron., *lui, le.*
from him, *de lui.*
to him, *lui, à lui, y.*
himself, pron., *lui-même.*
his, adj., *son, sa, ses.*
his, pron., *le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes, à lui.*
history, n., *livre d'histoire*, m. (book); *histoire*, f.
home, adv., *à la maison, chez soi.*
home, n., *la maison, le chez-soi.*
homesickness, n., *mal du pays*, m.
honest, adj., *honnête.*
honorable, adj., *honorable.*
hope, n., *espoir*, m.; *espérance*, f.
hope, v., *espérer.*
horse, n., *cheval*, m.
hostile, adj., *hostile.*
hot, adj., *chaud.*
hothouse, n., *serre*, f.
hour, n., *heure*, f.
an hour and a half, *une heure et demie.*
house, n., *ménage*, m.; *maison*, f.
housekeeper, n., *chef de maison*, m.; *gouvernante*, f.
housekeeping, n., *ménage*, m.
housemaid, n., *fille de ménage*, f.
how, adv., *comment.*
how does it happen? *comment se fait-il?*
how do you do? *comment vous portez-vous?* or *te portes-tu?*
how long, *combien de temps, depuis quand.*
how much, many, *combien.*
how now! *eh bien!*
humble, adj., *humble.*
hundred, adj., *cent*, m.
hundred, n., *centaine*, f.
hundred and first, *cent unième.*
hundred and one, *cent un.*
hundredth, adj., *centième.*
hunger, n., *faim*, f.
hunt, n., *chasse*, f.
hunt, v. tr., *chasser.*
hunter, n., *chasseur*, m.
hunting, n., *chasse*, f.
huntsman, n., *chasseur*, m.
husband, n., *mari*, m.
hymn, n., *hymne*, m. and f.

I.

I, pron., *je, moi.*
ice, n., *glace*, f.
ice cream, n., *glace*, f.
iced water, n., *eau glacée*, f.
idiot, idiotic, adj., *toqué, idiot.*
idle, adj., *paresseux, oisif.*
idleness, n., *oisiveté, paresse*, f.
if, conj., *si.*
ill, adj., *malade.*
to look ill, *avoir mauvaise mine.*
ill, adv., *mal.*

ill, n., *mal*, m.; *maux*, pl.
illness, n., *maladie*, f.
image, n., *image*, f.
imagine such a thing (can you)? *concevez-vous cela?*
immediately, adv., *immédiatement, sur-le-champ, tout de suite.*
immense, adj., *immense.*
immortal, adj., *immortel.*
imperative, n., *impératif*, m.
imperfect, n., *imparfait*, m.
impolite, adj., *impoli.*
impossible, adj., *impossible.*
impostor, n., *imposteur*, m.
impunity, n., *impunité*, f.
with impunity, adv. loc., *impunément.*
in, prep., *dans, en; de* (after a superlative).
inactive, adj., *inactif.*
inattentive, adj., *inattentif, distrait.*
indeed, adv., *en effet, certainement.*
indeed, interj., *vraiment!*
indefinite, adj., *indéfini.*
index, n., *index*, m.
India, n., *Indes*, f. pl.
indicative, n., *indicatif*, m.
indirect, adj., *indirect.*
indolent, adj., *indolent.*
indulgent, adj., *indulgent.*
industrious, adj., *laborieux, studieux.*
industry, n., *application*, f.
infinitive, n., *infinitif*, m.
influenza, n., *grippe*, f.
ingratitude, n., *ingratitude*, f.
inhabit, v., *habiter.*
inhabitant, n., *habitant*, m.
inhabited, p.p., *habité.*
ink, n., *encre*, f.
inkstand, n., *encrier*, m.
inner, adj., *intérieur.*
inquisitive, adj., *curieux.*
inseparable, adj., *inséparable.*
insolvent, adj., *insolvable.*
inspector (of police), n., *commissaire de police*, m.
instant, adv. (in dates), *courant.*
instant, n., *instant, moment*, m.
instead (of), prep., *au lieu* (*de*).
instruction, n., *instruction*, f.
insult, n., *injure, insulte*, f.
intelligent, adj., *intelligent.*
inter, v., *enterrer.*
interesting, adj., *intéressant.*
interior, adj. and n., *intérieur*, m.
interjection, n., *interjection*, f.
interrogative, adj., *interrogatif.*
intransitive, adj., *intransitif.*
invite, v., *inviter.*
invited, p.p., *invité.*
iron, n., *fer*, m.
irregular, adj., *irrégulier.*
island, n., *île*, f.
isle, n., *île*, f.
it, pron., *il, elle, le, la, lui.*
of it, *de lui, d'elle, en.*
to it, *lui, à lui, à elle, y.*
Italy, n., *Italie*, f.
its, adj., *son, sa, ses.*
its, pron., *le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes, à lui, à elle.*

J.

James, n., *Jacques*, m.
Jane, n., *Jeanne*, f.
Janet, n., *Jeannette*, f.
January, n., *janvier*, m.
Japan, n., *Japon*, m.
jealous, adj., *jaloux.*
jest, n., *plaisanterie*, f.
jewel, n., *bijou*, m.
jewelry, n., *bijouterie*, f.
Jim, n., *Jacques*, m.
John, n., *Jean*, m.
joke, n., *plaisanterie*, f.
journey, n., *voyage*, m.
journey, v., *voyager.*
joyful, adj., *gai, joyeux, heureux.*
joyously, adv., *joyeusement.*
July, n., *juillet*, m.

June, n., *juin*, m.
just, adv., *juste*, *justement*, *exactement*.
justly, adv., *justement*.
just now, adv., *tout à l'heure*.

K.

keep, v., *garder*.
keeps good time, *va bien* (of a watch).
kid, n., *chevreau*, m.
kill, v., *tuer*.
killed, p.p., *tué*.
kind, adj., *bon*.
kind, n., *sorte*, *manière*, f.
kindness, n., *bonté*, f.
king, n., *roi*, m.
kitchen, n., *cuisine*, f.
kitchenmaid, n., *fille de cuisine*, f.
knee, n., *genou*, m.
  on one's knees, adv. loc., *à genoux*.
kneeling, adj., *à genoux*.
knife, n., *couteau*, m.
knit, v., *tricoter*.
knitting needle, n., *aiguille à tricoter*, f.
knock, v., *frapper*.
  some one is knocking, *on frappe*.
know, v., *connaître* (to be acquainted with), *savoir* (in the mind).
  he knows, *il sait*.
  he would know, *il saurait*.
  I know, *je connais*, *je sais*.
  you know, *tu sais*, *vous connaissez*, *vous savez*.
knowledge, n., *instruction*, f.
known, p.p., *connu*, *su*.

L.

lace, n., *dentelle*, f.
lacking (to be), v., *manquer*.
ladies, n. pl., *mesdames*, f. pl.
lady, n., *dame*.
  young lady, *demoiselle*, *mademoiselle* (in addressing); *mesdemoiselles*, pl.
lain, p.p., *couché*.
lamp, n., *lampe*, f.
landlord, n., *propriétaire*, m. and f.
lantern, n., *lanterne*, f.
last, adj., *dernier*.
last but one, *avant-dernier*.
late (recently dead), adj., *feu*.
late, adv., *tard*.
lately, adv., *récemment*.
Latin, adj. and n., *latin*, m.
law, n., *loi*, f.
lawyer, n., *avocat*, m.
lay flat, v., *coucher*.
lead, v., *mener*, *conduire*.
leaf, n., *feuille*, f.
league, n., *lieue*, f.
lean, adj., *maigre*.
leap year, n., *année bissextile*, f.
learn, v., *apprendre*.
learned, adj., *savant*.
least, adj., *le moindre*.
least, adv., *le moins*.
  at least, adv. loc., *au moins*, *du moins*.
leave, v., *quitter*, *laisser*; *partir*.
led, p.p., *mené*.
left, adj., *gauche*.
left, p.p., *parti* (intr.), *laissé* (tr.).
leg, n., *jambe*, f.
lend, v., *prêter*.
lenient, adj., *indulgent*.
lent, p.p., *prêté*.
less, adj., *moindre*.
less, adv., *moins*.
lessen, v., *diminuer*.
lesson, n., *devoir*, m.; *leçon*, f.
let, v., *laisser*.
let go, v., *laisser*.
letter, n., *lettre*, f.
letter of credit, *lettre de crédit*, f.
Lewis, n., *Louis*, m.
library, n., *bibliothèque*, f.
lie, n., *mensonge*, m.
life, n., *vie*, f.
lift, v., *lever*, *soulever*.

light, adj., *léger*.
light, n., *lumière*, f.
like, adv., *comme, tel que*.
like, v., *aimer*.
  he likes, *il aime*.
  you like, *vous aimez*, or *tu aimes*.
likeness, n., *portrait*, m.; *image*, f.
linen, n., *linge*, m.
lion, n., *lion*, m.
liter, n., *litre*, m.
literally, adv., *littéralement*.
little, adj., *petit*.
little, adv., *peu*.
live, v., *demeurer*.
lived, p.p., *demeuré, habité*.
lively, adj., *vif, actif, gai*.
locality, n., *endroit*, m.
located, *situé*.
locution, n., *locution*, f.
London, n., *Londres*.
long, adj., *long*.
long, adv., *longtemps*.
look! imper., *regardez! voyez!*
look, v., *regarder, avoir l'air*.
Lorraine, n., *Lorraine*, f. (a French province taken by Germany in '71).
lose, v., *perdre*.
loss, n., *perte*, f.
lost, adj. and p.p., *perdu*.
Louis, n., *Louis*, m.
Louisa, n., *Louise*, f.
love, v., *aimer*.
  you love, *vous aimez*, or *tu aimes*.
love song, n., *romance*, f.
low, adj., *bas*.
Lucy, n., *Lucie*, f.
luggage, n., *bagage*, m.
lunch, n., *lunch*, m.; *collation*, f.
Lyons, n., *Lyon*.

M.

mad, adj., *fou, fol*, m.; *folle*, f.; *enragé* (of animals).
madam, n., *madame*.
made, p.p., *fait*.
magnificent, adj., *magnifique*.
maid, n., *fille, bonne*, f.
Maine, n., *Maine* (a State of the Union).
maintain, v., *entretenir*.
major, adj., *majeur*.
major, n., *personne majeure* (of age).
make, v., *faire*.
  I made, *je faisais*.
  I make, *je fais*.
make out, *distinguer*.
makes (he), *il fait*.
  they made, *ils faisaient*.
  they make, *ils font*.
malady, n., *maladie*, f.
malicious, adj., *méchant*.
mamma, n., *maman*, f.
  darling mamma, *petite mère*, f.
man, n., *homme*, m.
mandolin, n., *mandoline*, f.
mantelpiece, n., *dessus de cheminée*, m.
many, adv., *beaucoup* (*de*), *bien* (*de*).
  as many, *autant*.
  too many, *trop*.
many people, *beaucoup de monde, bien des gens*.
map, n., *carte géographique*, f.
March, n., *mars*, m.
market, n., *marché*, m.
married, p.p., *marié*.
marry, v., *marier* (give in marriage).
marshal, n., *maréchal*, m.
marvelous, adj., *merveilleux*.
masculine, adj. and n., *masculine*, m.
master, n., *maître*, m.
  French master, *maître de français*, m.
match, n., *partie*, f.
materials, n. pl., *matériaux*, m. pl.
mattress, n., *matelas*, m.
Maud, n., *Madeleine*, f.
May, n., *mai*, m.

may (he), v., *il peut.*
me, pron., *me, moi.*
meadow, n., *prairie*, f.
meager, adj., *maigre.*
meal, n., *repas*, m.
mean (you), v., *vous voulez dire.*
means, n. pl., *moyen*, m.
by no means, adv. loc., *pas du tout.*
measles, n., *rougeole*, f.
measure, n., *mesure*, f.
meat, n., *viande*, f.
roast meat, n., *rôti*, m.
medicine, n., *médecine*, f.
meet, v., *rencontrer.*
melancholy, adj., *mélancolique.*
melody, n., *mélodie*, f.
memory, n., *mémoire*, f.
menace, v., *menacer.*
mention, v., *mentionner.*
don't mention it or don't speak of it, *il n'y a pas de quoi; de rien.*
merchandise, n., *marchandise*, f.
merchant, n., *marchand, négociant*, m.
merit, v., *mériter.*
merry, adj., *joyeux, gai.*
messenger, n., *messager, courrier*, m.
met, p.p., *rencontré.*
Mexico, n., *Mexique*, m. (the country); *Mexico* (the city).
middle, n., *milieu*, m.
midnight, n., *minuit*, m.
mighty, adj., *puissant.*
mile, n., *mille*, m.
military, adj., *militaire.*
milk, n., *lait*, m.
milkman, n., *laitier*, m.
million, n., *million*, m.
millionth, n., *millionième*, m.
mind, n., *esprit*, m.
have a mind to, *avoir envie (de).*
out of one's mind, *toqué.*
mine, n., *mine*, f.
mine, pron., *le mien, la mienne, les miens, les miennes, à moi.*
minister, n., *ministre (protestant), prêtre*, m.
minute, n., *minute*, f.
mirror, n., *miroir*, m.; *glace*, f.
miserable, adj., *misérable.*
misfortune, n., *malheur*, m.; *infortune*, f.
miss, n., *mademoiselle.*
misses (the), n. pl., *mesdemoiselles, les demoiselles*, pl.
mist, n., *brouillard*, m.
mistake, n., *faute*, f.
Mister, Mr., n., *monsieur, M., Mr.*
moderate, adj., *sobre.*
modest, adj., *modeste.*
moisture, n., *humidité*, f.
moment, n., *moment*, m.
monarch, n., *monarque*, m.
Monday, n., *lundi*, m.
money, n., *argent*, m.
ready money, *argent comptant.*
month, n., *mois*, m.
monument, n., *monument*, m.
mood, n., *mode*, m.
more, adj., *plus.*
more, adv., *plus, davantage.*
morrow, n., *demain*, m.
mortal, adj., *mortel.*
mother, n., *mère.*
mountain, n., *montagne*, f.
mount on horseback, v., *monter à cheval.*
mouth, n., *bouche*, f.
move out, v., *déménager.*
movement, n., *mouvement*, m.
Mrs., n., *madame, Mme.*
much, adj. and adv., *beaucoup.*
as much as, *autant que.*
murderer, n., *assassin*, m.
music, n., *musique*, f.
musket, n., *fusil*, m.
must, v., *devoir.*
it must be, *ce doit être.*

mute, adj., *muet.*
mutton, n., *mouton*, m.
leg of mutton, n., *gigot*, m.
my, adj., *mon, ma, mes.*
mysterious, adj., *mystérieux.*

N.

name, v., *nommer, appeler.*
napkin, n., *serviette*, f.
Naples, *Naples* (an Italian city).
narrow, adj., *étroit.*
national, adj., *national.*
nature, n., *nature*, f.
near, adv., *près.*
near, prep., *près de.*
nearly, adv., *presque.*
necessary, adj., *nécessaire.*
need, n., *besoin*, m.
needle, n., *aiguille*, f.
negative, adj. and n., *négatif* (*-ive*).
negro, n., *nègre*, m.
neighbor, n., *voisin*, m.; *voisine*, f.
neighborhood, n., *voisinage*, m.
neither, conj., *ni.*
neither . . . nor, conj., *ni . . . ni.*
neither, pron., *ni l'un ni l'autre, ni l'une ni l'autre, ni les uns ni les autres, ni les unes ni les autres.*
Nelly, n., *Nellie*, f.
nephew, n., *neveu*, m.
neuralgia, n., *névralgie*, f.
never, adv., *jamais, ne . . . jamais.*
new, adj., *nouveau, nouvel*, m.; *nouvelle*, f.; *tendre* (of bread).
New Orleans, n., *Nouvelle-Orléans.*
news, n., *nouvelles*, f. pl.
newspaper, n., *journal*, m.
next, adj., *prochain.*
nice, adj., *gentil*, m.; *gentille*, f.
niece, n., *nièce*, f.
night, n., *soir*, m.; *nuit*, f.
nightgown, n., *chemise de nuit*, f.
nine, adj., *neuf.*
nineteen, adj., *dix-neuf.*
nineteenth, adj., *dix-neuvième.*
ninetieth, adj., *quatre-vingt-dixième.*
ninety, adj., *quatre-vingt-dix.*
ninety-second, adj., *quatre-vingt-douzième.*
ninety-two, adj., *quatre-vingt-douze.*
ninth, adj., *neuvième.*
no, adj., *aucun, nul.*
no, adv., *non.*
no more, no longer, adv., *ne . . . plus.*
nobody, no one, pron., *aucun, ne . . . personne.*
noise, n., *bruit*, m.
nominative (case), n., *nominatif*, m.
none, pron., *aucun.*
noon, n., *midi*, m.
north, n., *nord*, m.
nose, n., *nez*, m.
not, adv., *ne . . . pas.*
not at all, *ne . . . point, pas du tout.*
note, n., *billet*, m.
note paper, n., *papier à lettres*, m.
nothing, n., *rien*, m.
notice, n., *avis*, m.
notice, v., *remarquer.*
noticed, p.p., *remarqué.*
noun, n., *nom*, m.
nourish, v., *nourrir.*
novel, n., *roman*, m.
November, n., *novembre*, m.
now, adv., *maintenant, à présent.*
nowadays, adv., *aujourd'hui.*
nowhere, adv., *nulle part.*
numerous, adj., *nombreux.*
nurse, n., *bonne d'enfant*, f.
nursemaid, n., *bonne d'enfant*, f.

O.

obedient, adj., *obéissant.*
obey, v., *obéir.*
object, n., *objet*, m.
objective (case), n., *objectif*, m.

obligation, n., *obligation*, f.
obliged (to be), v., *devoir*.
observation, n., *observation*, f.
obstinate, adj., *obstiné, entêté*.
occasion, n., *occasion*, f.
October, n., *octobre*, m.
of, prep., *de*.
of him (her, it, them), *en*.
offer, n., *offre*, f.
offer, v., *offrir*.
offered, p.p., *offert*.
often, adv., *souvent*.
oil, n., *huile*, f.
old, adj, *vieux, vieil*, m.; *vieille*, f.
old (to grow), v., *vieillir*.
on, prep., *sur*.
once, adv., *une fois*.
  at once, adv. loc., *tout de suite*.
one, adj, *un, une, seul*.
one's self, pron., *soi, soi-même*.
only, adj., *seul*.
only, adv., *seulement, ne . . . que*.
open, adj., *franc, ouvert*.
open! imper., *ouvrez!*
open, v., *ouvrir*.
  you open, *vous ouvrez*.
opened, p.p., *ouvert*.
opera, n., *opéra*, m.
opinion, n., *opinion*, f.
opportunity, n., *opportunité, occasion*, f.
or, conj., *ou*.
orange, n., *orange*, f.
orange blossom, n., *fleur d'oranger*, f.
orange tree, n., *oranger*, m.
orchard, n., *verger*, m.
order, n., *ordre*, m.; *règle*, f.
ordinarily, adv., *ordinairement, à l'ordinaire, d'ordinaire*.
ordinary, adj., *ordinaire*.
original, adj., *original*.
originality, n., *originalité*, f.
other, adj., *autre*.
others, pron., *autrui, autres*.
otherwise, adv., *autrement*.
ought (one), v., *on devrait*.
  you ought, *vous devriez*.
our, adj., *notre, nos*.
ours, pron., *le nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres, à nous*.
ourselves, pron., *nous-mêmes*.
outer, adj., *extérieur*.
owe, v., *devoir*.
owed, p.p., *dû*.
owl, n., *hibou*, m.
own, adj., *propre*.
owner, n., *propriétaire*, m. and f.
ox, n., *bœuf*, m.

P.

pack, v., *emballer*.
package, n., *paquet*, m.
pain, n., *mal*, m.; *douleur, peine*, f.
painful, adj., *pénible*.
pains, n. pl., *peine*, f.
painted, p.p., *peint*.
painter, n., *peintre*, m.
palace, n., *palais*, m.
papa, n., *papa, père*.
paper, n., *papier*, m.
pardon, n., *pardon*, m.
  I beg your pardon? *plaît-il?*
  to beg pardon, *demander pardon*.
pardon, v., *pardonner (à)*.
parent, n., *parent*, m.
Paris, n., *Paris*, m.
park, n., *parc*, m.
parlor, n., *salon*.
part, n., *partie, part*, f.
participle, n., *participe*, m.
partitive, adj., *partitif*.
pass, v., *passer*.
  pass me, *passez-moi*.
passive, adj., *passif*, m.
past, n., *passé*, m.
pasture, n., *pâturage*, m.
patience, n., *patience*, f.
patient, n., *malade*, m. and f.
patriot, n., *patriote*, m. and f.
Paul, n., *Paul*, m.

Pauline, n., *Pauline*, f.
pavement, n., *pavé*, *trottoir*, m.
paving, n., *pavage*, m.
pay, v., *payer*.
to pay a visit, *faire une visite*.
peace, n., *paix*, f.
pear, n., *poire*, f.
pearl, n., *perle*, f.
peel, v., *peler*.
pen, n., *plume*, f.
pencil, n., *crayon*, m.
penetrated, p.p., *pénétré*.
penknife, n., *canif*, m.
Pennsylvania, n., *Pensylvanie*, f.
people, n., *le monde*, *on*, m.; *gens*, m. and f. pl.
pepper, n., *poivre*, m.
perceive, v., *apercevoir*, *percevoir*.
perfect, n., *passé*, *parfait*, m.
perfectly, adv., *parfaitement*.
perhaps, adv., *peut-être*.
perish, v., *périr*.
peritonitis, n., *péritonite*, f.
permitted, p.p., *permis*.
perpetual, adj., *perpétuel*.
perseverance, n., *persévérance*, f.
persevering, adj., *persévérant*.
person, n., *personne*, f.
Peru, n., *Pérou*, m.
Peter, n., *Pierre*, *Pierrot*, m.
philosophy, n., *philosophie*, f.
physician, n., *médecin*, *docteur*, m.
piano, n., *piano*, m.
picture, n., *tableau*, *portrait*, m.; *peinture*, *image*, f.
picturebook, *livre d'images*, m.
piece, n., *morceau*, m.; *pièce*, f.
pierce, v., *percer*.
pill, n., *pilule*, f.
pity, n., *dommage*, m.; *pitié*, f.
place, n., *endroit*, *lieu*, m.; *place*, f.
plan, n., *plan*, *projet*, m.
plate, n., *assiette*, f.
play, v., *jouer*.
to play the piano, *jouer du piano*.
please, v., *plaire* (*à*), *faire plaisir* (*à*).
if you please, *s'il vous plaît*.
pleasure, n., *plaisir*, m.
plentiful, adj., *abondant*.
pleurisy, n., *pleurésie*, f.
pluck, n., *courage*, m.; *bravoure*, f.
pluperfect, n., *plus-que-parfait*, m.
plural, adj. and n., *pluriel*, m.
pneumonia, n., *pneumonie*, f.
pocket, n., *poche*, f.
pocketbook, n., *porte-monnaie*, m.
poem, n., *poème*, m.
poet, n., *poète*, m.
polished, adj., *poli*.
polite, adj., *poli*.
politics, n., *politique*, f.
polytechnic, adj., *polytechnique*.
poor, adj., *pauvre*.
port, n., *port*, m.
position, n., *position*, f.
possible, adj., *possible*.
post, n., *poste aux lettres*, f.
postman, n., *facteur*, m.
post office, n., *bureau de poste*, m.; *poste aux lettres*, f.
potato, n., *pomme de terre*, f.
powerful, adj., *puissant*.
praise, n., *éloge*, m.; *louange*, f.
praise, v., *louer*.
pray, v., *prier*.
pray (they), v., *ils prient*.
prayer, n., *prière*, f.
preceding, adj., *précédent*.
precious, adj., *précieux*.
precise, adj., *précis*, *exact*.
precisely, adv., *précisément*, *exactement*, *parfaitement*.
prefer, v., *préférer*.
you prefer, *vous préférez*.
prepay, v., *affranchir*.
preposition, n., *préposition*, f.
present, adj., *présent*, *actuel*.
present, n., *présent*, *cadeau*, m. (gift).
at present, adv. loc., *à présent*.

presently, adv., *tout à l'heure.*
pressed, p.p., *pressé.*
prestidigitator, n., *prestidigitateur*, m.
pretend, v., *faire semblant, prétendre.*
pretty, adj., *joli, gentil*, m. ; *gentille*, f.
price, n., *prix*, m.
priest, n., *prêtre*, m.
principal, adj., *principal, premier.*
prison, n., *prison*, f.
prisoner, n., *prisonnier*, m.
private, adj., *privé.*
prize, n., *prix*, m.
probably, adv., *probablement.*
proclaim, v., *annoncer.*
prodigal, adj., *prodigue.*
produced, p.p., *produit.*
professor, n., *professeur*, m.
profit, n., *profit*, m.
progress, n., *progrès*, m.
project, n., *projet, plan*, m.
promise (I), v., *je promets.*
promised, adj., *promis.*
promptly, adv., *promptement.*
pronoun, n., *pronom*, m.
proposal, n., *proposition*, f.
proposition, n., *proposition*, f.
protect, v., *protéger.*
protector, n., *protecteur*, m.
Protestant, adj. and n., *protestant*, m.
proud, adj., *orgueilleux.*
proverb, n., *proverbe*, m.
Prussian, adj., *prussien.*
public, adj., *public*, m. ; *publique*, f.
punctual, adj., *ponctuel, exact.*
punctually, adv., *ponctuellement.*
punish, v., *punir.*
punishment, n., *châtiment*, m.; *punition*, f.
pupil, n., *élève, écolier*, m.
put! imper., *mettez!*
put, p.p., *mis.*
put up (at a hotel), v., *descendre.*

Q.

qualities (good), n. pl., *qualités*, f. pl.
quality, n., *qualité*, f.
quantity, n., *quantité*, f.
  great quantity, adv. loc., *foule*, f.
quarter, n., *quart*, m.
question, n., *question*, f.
  to ask a question, *faire une question.*
quick, adj., *vif, vite.*
quick, quickly, adv., *vite, vivement.*
quiet, n., *tranquillité*, f.
quinine, n., *quinine*, f.
quit, v., *quitter, laisser.*
quite, adv., *tout, tout à fait.*
quite well, adv. loc., *assez bien, très bien.*

R.

railway, n., *chemin de fer*, m.
rain, n., *pluie*, f.
raise, v., *lever, soulever, élever.*
rapidity, n., *rapidité*, f.
rare, adj., *rare ; saignant* (of meat).
raspberry, n., *framboise*, f.
rather, adv., *plutôt, assez.*
read, p.p., *lu.*
read, v., *lire.*
  I read, pres. indic., *je lis.*
  you read, pres. indic., *vous lisez.*
real, adj., *réel.*
really, adv., *réellement, en effet, vraiment.*
reason, n., *raison, cause*, f.
reasonable, adj., *raisonnable.*
recall, v., *rappeler.*
receive, v., *recevoir.*
received, p.p., *reçu.*
recently, adv., *récemment.*
reckoning, n., *note*, f.
recognized, p.p., *reconnu.*
recovered, adj., *rétabli* (in health).
redden, v., *rougir.*
redoubtable, adj., *redoutable.*

reënforcements, n. pl., *secours*, m. pl.
reflect, v., *réfléchir*.
refresh, v., *rafraîchir*.
refuse, v., *refuser*.
regret, v., *regretter*.
regular, adj., *régulier*.
reign, v., *régner*.
reigned, p.p., *régné*.
relate, v., *raconter*.
related, p.p., *raconté*.
relative, adj., *relatif*.
relative, n., *parent*, m.
religion, n., *religion*, f.
rely, v., *compter*.
remain, v., *rester*.
remained, p.p., *resté*.
remark, n., *remarque*, f.
remark, v., *remarquer*.
to make remarks, *faire des observations*.
remove, v., *déménager*.
render, v. tr., *rendre*.
rendered, p.p., *rendu*.
renders (he), v., *il rend*.
rent, n., *loyer*, m.
repast, n., *repas*, m.
replace, v., *remplacer*.
reply, n., *réponse*, f.
reply, v., *répondre*, *répliquer*.
representative, n., *représentant*, m.
reproach, n., *reproche*, m.
reptile, n., *reptile*, m.
reputation, n., *réputation*, f.
rescue, v., *sauver*.
reserved, adj., *réservé*.
resigned, p.p., *résigné*.
resolved, p.p., *résolu*.
respect, n., *respect*, m.
respectful, adj., *respectueux*.
response, n., *réponse*, f.
restless, adj., *agité*.
retiring, adj., *réservé*.
return, n., *retour*, m.
returned, p.p., *revenu*, *rentré*.
review, n., *récapitulation*, f.
reward, n., *récompense*, f.
rheumatism, n., *rhumatisme*, m.
ribbon, n., *ruban*, m.
rich, adj., *riche*.
rifle, n., *fusil*, m.
right, adj., *juste*.
right, adv., *droit*, *tout droit*.
right, n., *droit*, m. ; *raison*, f.
to be right, *avoir raison*.
ring, n., *bague*, f.
ring finger, *annulaire*, m.
ripe, adj., *mûr*.
rival, n., *rival*, m.
road, n., *chemin*, m. ; *route*, f.
roast, adj., *rôti*.
rob, v., *voler*.
robust, adj., *robuste*.
rocking-chair, n., *berceuse*, f.
rod, n., *barre* (*de fer*), f.
Roman, adj., *romain*.
Roman, n., *Romain*, m.
roof, n., *toit*, m.
room, n., *chambre*, *salle*, f.
rooster, n., *coq*, m.
rope, n., *corde*, f.
rose, n., *rose*, f.
royal, adj., *royal*.
rub, v., *frotter*.
rubber shoes, n., *caoutchoucs*, m. pl.
ruby, n., *rubis*, m.
rule, n., *règle*, f.
ruler, n., *règle*, f.
rumor, n., *bruit*, m.

S.

sacred, adj., *sacré*.
sad, adj., *triste*.
sadly, adv., *tristement*.
sadness, n., *tristesse*, f.
safety, n., *sécurité*, f.
said, p.p., *dit*.
sailor, n., *marin*, m.

Saint Helena, n., *Sainte-Hélène.*
salmon, n., *saumon*, m.
salt, n., *sel*, m.
salubrious, adj., *salubre.*
salute, v., *saluer.*
same, adj., *même.*
all the same, adv. loc., *tout de même.*
it's all the same to me, *cela m'est égal.*
satisfied, adj., *content, satisfait.*
Saturday, n., *samedi*, m.
saucer, n., *soucoupe*, f.
save, v., *sauver.*
saved, p.p., *sauvé.*
say, v., *dire.*
it is said, *on dit.*
they (people) say, *on dit.*
saying, n., *proverbe*, m.
says (he), *il dit.*
scarcely, adv., *ne . . . guère, à peine.*
scarlet fever, n., *fièvre scarlatine*, f.
school, n., *école, classe*, f.
schoolroom, n., *salle d'étude*, f.
sciatica, n., *sciatique*, f.
science, n., *science*, f.
sea, n., *mer*, f.
seaside, n., *bord de la mer*, m.
seaside resort, n., *ville d'eau*, f.
season, n., *saison*, f.
seat, n., *siège*, m.
seaworthy, adj., *solide.*
second, adj., *second, deuxième.*
secretly, adv., *secrètement.*
security, n., *sécurité*, f.
see, v., *voir.*
I see, *je vois.*
we see, *nous voyons.*
you see, *vous voyez* or *tu vois.*
seen, p.p., *vu.*
seize, v., *saisir.*
self, adj., *même.*
self, pron., *se, soi, soi-même.*
sell, v., *vendre.*
sell again, *revendre.*
send, v., *envoyer.*
I shall send, *j'enverrai.*
sent, p.p., *envoyé.*
September, n., *septembre*, m.
serious, adj., *sérieux.*
servant, n , *serviteur*, m.; *domestique*, m. and f.
serve, v., *servir.*
service, n., *service*, m.
set out, p.p. *parti.*
set out, v., *partir.*
seven, adj., *sept*
seventeen, adj., *dix-sept.*
seventeenth, adj., *dix-septième.*
seventh, adj., *septième.*
seventy, adj., *soixante-dix.*
seventy-eight, adj., *soixante-dix-huit.*
seventy-one, adj., *soixante et onze.*
several, adj. and pron., *plusieurs.*
severe, adj., *sévère.*
severely, adv., *sévèrement.*
shameful, adj., *honteux.*
she, pron., *elle.*
shed, v., *répandre.*
sheep, n., *mouton*, m.
shepherd, n., *berger*, m.
sherbet, n., *sorbet*, m.
shining, adj., *brillant.*
ship, n., *vaisseau, navire*, m.
shirt, n., *chemise*, f.
night shirt, *chemise de nuit*, f.
shoe, n., *soulier*, m.
low shoe, *soulier découvert.*
shop, n., *magasin*, m.; *boutique*, f.
shore, n., *bord de la mer*, m.
short, adj., *bref, court, petit.*
short-sighted, adj., *myope.*
show, v., *montrer.*
shut, p.p., *fermé.*
shut, v., *fermer.*
Siberia, n., *Sibérie*, f.
sick, adj., *malade.*
side, n., *côté, bord*, m.
silent, adj., *silencieux, muet.*

silk, n., *soie*, f.
silver, n., *argent*, m.
similar, adj., *semblable*, *pareil*.
simple, adj., *simple*, *naïf*.
simply, adv., *simplement*.
since, adv., *depuis*, *puisque*.
since, conj., *dès que*.
since, prep., *depuis*, *dès*.
sing, v., *chanter*.
singular, adj. and n., *singulier*, m.
sir, n., *monsieur*.
sirs, n. pl., *messieurs*.
sister, n., *sœur*.
sit down! imper., *asseyez-vous!*
sitting, seated, p.p., *assis*.
situated, adj., *situé*.
six, adj., *six*.
sixteen, adj., *seize*.
sixth, adj., *sixième*.
sixty, adj., *soixante*.
skate, v., *patiner*.
skillful, adj., *habile*.
skin, n., *peau*, f.
sky, n., *ciel*, m.; *cieux*, pl.
slate, n., *ardoise*, f.
sleep! imper., *dors*, *dormez!*
sleep, v., *dormir*.
sleepy (to be), v., *avoir sommeil*.
sleeve links, n. pl., *boutons de manchettes*, f. pl.
slept, *dormi*.
slice, n., *tranche*, f.
slow, adj., *lent*.
  is slow, *retarde*.
  to go too slow, to be slow, *retarder* (of watches).
sluggish, adj., *indolent*.
slumber, n., *sommeil*, m.
small, adj., *petit*.
smallpox, n., *variole*, f.
smell, v., *sentir*.
smoke, n., *fumée*, f.
smoke, v., *fumer*.
smuggler, n., *contrebandier*, m.; *contrebandière*, f.
snow, n., *neige*, f.
so, adv., *si*, *ainsi*.
so . . . as, *aussi . . . que*.
sober, adj., *sobre*.
society, n., *société*, f.
sock, n., *chaussette*, f.
soft, adj., *mou*, *mol*, m.; *molle*, f.; *tendre*.
soil, v., *salir*.
soirée, n., *soirée*, f.
sojourn, n., *séjour*, m.
sold, p.p., *vendu*.
soldier, n., *soldat*, m.
sole, adj., *seul*.
solid, adj., *solide*.
some, adj., *quelque*.
some, part. art., *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*.
somebody, pron., *quelqu'un*, m.; *quelqu'une*, f.
sometimes, adv., *quelquefois*.
somewhere, adv., *quelque part*.
so much, many, adv., *tant*, *tellement*.
son, n., *fils*, m.
song, n., *chant*, m.; *chanson*, *histoire*, f.
song book, n., *cahier de chansons*, m.
soon, adv., *bientôt*, *tôt*.
  as soon as, adv. loc., *aussitôt (que)*, *dès que*.
sore throat, n., *mal à la gorge*, m.
sorrow, n., *chagrin*, m.; *douleur*, *peine*, f.
sort, n., *sorte*, *façon*, f.
so soon, adv. loc., *sitôt*.
sound, n., *son*, m.
sparing, adj., *économe*.
sparrow, n., *moineau*, m.
speak, v., *parler*.
special, adj., *spécial*.
sphere, n., *balle*, f.
spill, v., *répandre*.
spirit, n., *esprit*, m.
splendid, adj., *splendide*.
spoiled, p.p. as adj., *gâté*.
spoken, p.p., *parlé*.

spoon, n., *cuiller*, f.
spot, n., *endroit*, m.
spread, v., *répandre*.
spring, n., *printemps*, m.
square, n., *place*, f. (of a town).
stamp, v., *affranchir*.
star, n., *étoile*, f.
stay, n., *séjour*, m.
stay, v., *rester*.
stayed, p.p., *resté*.
steal, v., *voler*.
steeple, n., *clocher*, m.
stick, n., *bâton*, m.; *canne*, f.
still, adv., *encore*, *cependant*.
stocking, n., *bas*, m.
stone, n., *pierre*, f.
stool, n., *tabouret*, m.
store, n., *magasin*, m.; *boutique*, f.
storekeeper, n., *marchand*, m.
storm, n., *orage*, m.
story, n., *histoire*, f.
stout, adj., *fort*, *gras*.
straight, adv., *droit*.
straightforward, adj., *franc*.
straight on, adv. loc., *tout droit*.
stranger, n., *étranger*, m.; *étrangère*, f.
strawberry, n., *fraise*, f.
stream, n., *ruisseau*, m.
street, n., *rue*, f.
strength, n., *force*, f.
stretch, v., *étendre*.
strict, adj., *sévère*.
string, n., *corde*, f.
strong, adj., *fort*.
structure, n., *construction*, f.
stud, n., *bouton*, m. (*de chemise*, *de manchette*).
studious, adj., *studieux*.
study, n., *étude*, f.
study, v., *étudier*.
subject, adj., *sujet*.
subject, n., *sujet*, m.
subjunctive, n., *subjonctif*, m.
succeed, v., *réussir*.
succeeded, p.p., *réussi*.
success, n., *succès*, m.
succession (in), adv. loc., *de suite*.
succor, n., *secours*, m.; *aide*, f.
such, adj., *tel*, *pareil*.
sudden, adj., *soudain*.
suddenly, adv., *soudainement*.
suffering, n., *douleur*, f.
sugar, n., *sucre*, m.
sultry, adj., *lourd*.
sum, n., *somme*, f.
summer, n., *été*, m.
sun, n., *soleil*, m.
Sunday, n., *dimanche*, m.
sung, p.p., *chanté*.
superior, n. and adj., *supérieur*, m.
supper, n., *souper*, m.
support, v., *appuyer*.
sure, adj., *sûr*, *certain*.
surely, adv., *assurément*.
surroundings, n. pl., *environs*, m. pl.
suspend, v., *suspendre*.
Sweden, n., *Suède*, f.
sweep, v. *balayer*.
sweet, adj., *doux*, *douce*.
sweetness, n., *douceur*, f.
swim, v., *nager*.
system, n., *système*, m.

T.

table, n., *table*, f.
tablecloth, n., *nappe*, f.
tailor, n., *tailleur*, m.
take, v., *prendre*; *mener*, *conduire* (of persons).
  will take, *prendra*.
take away, *enlever*, *emmener* (of persons).
take care of, *soigner*.
taken, p.p., *pris*.
taken away, *enlevé*.
talkative, adj., *bavard*.
tall, adj., *grand*, *de haute taille*.
tallow, n., *suif*, m.
task, n., *devoir*, m.

taste, n., *goût*, m.
taught, p.p., *enseigné*.
tax, n., *impôt*, m.
taxgatherer, n., *percepteur*, m.
tea, n., *thé*, m.
teach, v., *enseigner*.
teacher, n., *maître*, m.
tell, v., *dire*, *raconter*.
temper, n., *humeur*, f.
ten, adj., *dix*.
ten, n, *une dizaine*, f.
tender, adj., *tendre*.
tense, n., *temps*, m.
terrible, adj., *terrible*.
Texas, n., *Texas* (*le*).
thank, v., *remercier*.
thank you! *merci!*
that, adj., *ce*, *cet*, *cette*, *ce . . . là*, etc.
that, conj., *que*. [*celle-là*, *cela*.
that, pron., *celui*, *celle*, *celui-là*,
that, rel. pron., *qui* (subj.), *que* (obj.).
the, def. art., *le*, *la*, *l'*, *les*.
of the, *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*.
to the, *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, *aux*.
theater, n., *théâtre*, m.
thee, pron., *te*, *toi*.
their, adj., *leur*, *leurs*.
theirs, pron., *le* or *la leur*, *les leurs*, *à eux*, *à elles*.
them, pron., *eux*, *elles*, *les*.
of them, *en*.
to them, *y*. [*mêmes*.
themselves, pron., *eux-mêmes*, *elles-*
then, adv., *alors*, *ensuite*, *puis*, *donc*.
there, adv., *là*, *y*.
there is, there are, *il y a; voilà* (pointing out).
these, adj., *ces*, *ces . . . ci*. [*celles-ci*.
these, pron., *ceux*, *celles*, *ceux-ci*,
they, pron., *ils*, *elles*, *eux; on*.
thin, adj., *mince*, *maigre*.
thine, pron., *le tien*, *la tienne*, *les tiens*, *les tiennes*, *à toi*.
thing, n., *chose*, *affaire*, f.
think, v., *penser* (*à*), *réfléchir*.
do you think? *pensez-vous?*
I think (that), *je pense*, *je crois* (*que*).
one would think, *on dirait*.
third, adj., *troisième*.
thirst, n., *soif*, f.
thirteen, adj., *treize*.
thirty, adj., *trente*. [etc.
this, adj., *ce*, *cet*, *cette*, *ce . . . ci*,
this, pron., *celui-ci*, *celle-ci*, *ceci*.
thither, adv., *y*.
thorn, n., *épine*, f.
those, adj., *ces*, *ces . . . là*.
those, pron., *ceux*, *celles*, *ceux-là*, *celles-là*.
thou, pron., *tu*, *toi*.
thought, n., *pensée*, f.
thoughtless, adj., *étourdi*.
thousand, adj., *mille*.
thousand, n., *millier*, m.
thousandth, adj., *millième*.
threaten, v., *menacer*.
three, adj., *trois*.
through, prep., *par*, *à travers*.
throw, v., *jeter*.
thrown, p.p., *jeté*.
thumb, n., *pouce*, m.
Thursday, n., *jeudi*, m.
thus, adv., *ainsi*.
thy, adj., *ton*, *ta*, *tes*, *votre*, *vos*.
thyself, pron., *toi-même*, *vous-même*.
ticket, n., *billet*, m.
railway ticket, *billet de chemin de fer*, m. [m.
theater ticket, *billet de théâtre*,
tie, n., *cravate*, f.
till, prep., *jusqu'à*.
time, n., *temps*, m.; *fois* (in numbering), *heure* (o'clock), f.
at the same time, adv. loc., *à la fois*, *en même temps*.
from time to time, adv., *parfois*.
in time, adv. loc., *juste*, *en mesure*, *à temps*.

timid, adj., *timide.*
tired, adj., *fatigué.*
title, n., *titre*, m.
to, prep., *à; en* (before names of countries).
to him, her, it, them, *y.*
toast, n., *pain grillé*, m.
to-day, adv., *aujourd hui.*
toe, n., *orteil*, m.
told, p.p., *dit, raconté.*
tolerance, n., *tolérance*, f.
tolerant, adj., *tolérant.*
to-morrow, adv., *demain.*
tone, n., *ton*, m.
too, adv., *trop, aussi.*
too much, many, adv., *trop.*
tooth, n., *dent*, f.
toothache, n., *mal aux dents*, m.
torment, v., *tourmenter.*
torn, p.p., *déchiré.*
towards, prep., *vers, envers.*
town, n., *ville*, f.
to go to town, *aller en ville.*
toy, n., *joujou*, m.
transitive, adj., *transitif.*
translate, imper., *traduis, traduisez.*
travel, v., *voyager.*
traveler, n., *voyageur*, m.; *voyageuse*, f.
treacherously, adv., *perfidement, traîtreusement.*
tree, n., *arbre*, m.
trembling, pres. p. as adj., *tremblant.*
tried, p.p., *essayé.*
tropical, adj., *tropical.*
trouble, n., *trouble*, m.; *peine*, f.
trouble, v., *troubler; donner du mal, de la peine.*
trout, n., *truite*, f.
true, adj., *vrai.*
truly, adv., *vraiment.*
trumpet, n., *trompette*, f.
trunk, n., *trompe* (of an elephant); *malle*, f.
truth, n., *vérité*, f.
in truth, adv. loc., *vraiment.*
try, v., *essayer, tâcher* (*de*), *chercher* (*à*).
Tuesday, n., *mardi*, m.
tune, n., *mélodie*, f.
out of tune, adv. loc., *faux.*
turn, n., *tour*, m.
in his turn, adv. loc., *à son tour.*
turn, v., *tourner.*
turned, p.p., *tourné.*
turquoise, n., *turquoise*, f.
tutor, n., *précepteur*, m.
twelve, adj., *douze.*
twelve o'clock, n., *midi, minuit*, m.
twentieth, adj., *vingtième.*
twenty, adj., *vingt.*
twenty-first, adj., *vingt et unième.*
twenty-one, adj., *vingt et un.*
twenty-two, adj., *vingt-deux.*
twin, n., *jumeau*, m.; *jumelle*, f.
twine, n., *corde*, f.
two, adj., *deux.*
two hundred, adj., *deux cents.*
two hundred and one, adj., *deux cent un.*

U.

ugly, adj., *laid, vilain.*
ulterior, adj., *ultérieur.*
umbrella, n., *parapluie*, m.
unbound, adj., *non relié, broché.*
uncle, n., *oncle*, m.
underdone, adj., *saignant.*
understand, v., *comprendre.*
understood, p.p., *compris, entendu.*
undertaking, n., *entreprise*, f.
unfortunate, adj., *malheureux.*
ungrateful, adj., *ingrat.*
unhappy, adj., *malheureux.*
unhealthy, adj., *malsain.*
uniform, adj., *uniforme.*
United States, n. pl., *États-Unis*, m. pl.
university, n., *université*, f.
unjust, adj., *injuste.*
unpunctual, adj., *inexact, qui n'est pas ponctuel.*
unpunished, adj., *impuni.*

until, prep., *jusqu'à*.
unwholesome, adj., *malsain*.
upon, prep., *sur*.
upright, adj., *juste, droit*.
useful, adj., *utile*.
usual, adj., *ordinaire, commun*.
as usual, adv. loc., *comme d'habitude*.

V.

vain, adj., *vain*.
in vain, adv. loc., *en vain*.
valet, n., *valet*, m.
valor, n., *bravoure*, f.
vanilla, n., *vanille*, f.
variable, adj., *variable*.
vegetable, n., *légume*, m.
venomous, adj., *venimeux*.
verb, n., *verbe*, m.
verse, n., *vers*, m.
very, adv., *très, bien, fort*.
very well, adv., *très bien, fort bien*.
vessel, n., *vaisseau, navire*, m.
vice, n., *vice*, m.
Vichy, n., *Vichy*.
victim, n., *victime*, f.
victor, n., *vainqueur, conquérant*, m.
victorious, adj., *victorieux*.
victory, n., *victoire*, f.
vigorous, adj., *vigoureux*.
village, n., *village*, m.
vinegar, n., *vinaigre*, m.
violin, n., *violon*, m.
violoncello, n., *violoncelle*, m.
visit, n., *visite*, f.
visit, v., *visiter, faire des visites*.
visited, p.p., *visité*.
voice, n., *voix*, f.
vulgar, adj., *vulgaire*.

W.

wait for, v., *attendre*.
waiter, n., *garçon*, m.
wake, v., *éveiller*.
walk, v., *marcher*.
walked, p.p., *marché*.
wall, n., *mur*, m.
want, n., *besoin*, m. [*besoin (de)*.
want, v., *vouloir, désirer, avoir*
he wants, *il veut, il désire*.
I want, *je veux, je désire*.
we want, *nous voulons, nous désirons*. [*désirez*.
you want, *vous voulez, vous*
wanting (to be), *manquer (de)*.
war, n., *guerre*, f.
warm, adj., *chaud*. [*sage*, m.
washing, n., *linge sale, blanchis-*
washstand, n., *lavabo*, m.
watch, n., *montre*, f.
water, n., *eau*, f.
way, n., *chemin*, m.; *voie, route*, f.
we, pron., *nous*.
weak, adj., *faible*.
wear, n., *usage*, m.
wear, v., *porter*.
weary, adj., *fatigué*.
weather, n., *temps*, m. [*temps*.
to be fine weather, *faire beau*
wedding, n., *mariage*, m.; *noce*, f.
Wednesday, n., *mercredi*, m.
week, n., *semaine*, f.; *huit jours*.
weep, v., *pleurer*.
weigh, v., *peser*.
it weighs, *il pèse*.
weight, p.p., *pesé*.
welfare, n., *bien*, m.
well, adj., *bien*. [health).
to be well, *être bien portant* (in
to get well, *guérir*.
to look well, *avoir bonne mine*.
well! interj., *eh bien!*
well-behaved, adj., *sage*.
well done, *bien cuit* (of meat).
well-educated, adj., *instruit*.
well-read, adj., *instruit*.
what, inter. pron., *que, quoi, qu'est-ce qui, qu'est-ce que*.
what, rel. pron., *ce qui, ce que*.

when, adv., *quand, lorsque.*
where, adv., *où.*
which, adj., *quel, quelle, quels, quelles.*
which, inter. pron., *lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles.*
which, rel. pron., *qui, que, ce qui, ce que.*
of which, *duquel, de laquelle, dont.*
to which, *auquel, à laquelle,* etc.
while, conj., *pendant que, tandis que.*
whist, n., *whist*, m.
white, adj., *blanc.*
who, demonstr. pron., *celui, celle qui.*
who, inter. pron., *qui, qui est-ce qui?*
who, rel. pron., *qui, lequel,* etc.
whole, adj., *tout.*
whole, n., *tout*, m.
wholly, adv., *tout à fait.*
whom, rel. pron., *que, lequel,* etc.
of whom, *duquel, de laquelle, desquels,* etc.
to whom, *auquel, à laquelle,* etc.; *à qui, à qui est-ce que* (inter. pron.).
whose, rel. pron., *dont, de qui, duquel,* etc.
whose, inter. pron, *à qui.*
why, adv., *pourquoi.*
wicked, adj., *méchant.*
wife, n., *femme, dame.*
win, v., *gagner.*
window, n., *fenêtre*, f.
wine, n., *vin*, m.
winter, n., *hiver*, m.
wipe, v., *essuyer.*
wise, adj., *sage, savant.*
wish, v., *vouloir.*
he wishes, *il veut.*
I wish, *je veux.*
we wish, *nous voulons.*
you wish, *vous voulez.*
wit, n., *esprit*, m.
with, prep., *avec.*
without, prep., *sans.*
woman, n., *femme.*
wonderful, adj., *merveilleux.*
wood, n., *bois*, m.
word, n., *mot*, m.
work, n., *travail*, m.
work, v., *travailler.*
workman, n., *ouvrier*, m.
world, n., *monde*, m.; *terre*, f.
not the least in the world, adv. loc., *pas le moins du monde.*
worse, adj., *pire, plus mauvais.*
worse, adv., *pis, plus mal.*
worst, adj., *le pire, le plus mauvais.*
worst, adv., *le pis, le plus mal.*
worthy, adj., *digne.*
write (they), v., *ils écrivent.*
writes (he), v., *il écrit.*
written, p.p., *écrit.*
wrong, n., *tort*, m.
to be wrong, *avoir tort.*

Y.

yard, n., *cour*, f.
year, n., *an*, m.; *année*, f.
yes, adv., *oui, si.*
yesterday, adv., *hier.*
yesterday, n., *jour*, m., *journée d'hier*, f.
yet, adv., *encore.*
yield, v., *céder.*
you, pron., *vous; tu, te, toi* (familiar).
young, adj., *jeune.*
young lady, *demoiselle, mademoiselle* (in addressing).
your, adj., *votre, vos; ton, ta, tes* (familiar).
yours, pron., *le, la vôtre, les vôtres, à vous; le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes, à toi* (familiar).
yourself, pron., *vous-même; toi-même* (familiar).
yourselves, pron., *vous-mêmes.*

Z.

Zealand, New, n., *Nouvelle-Zélande*, f.

INDEX.

The word (note) refers to footnotes exclusively.

A or **an**, indef. art., 33; where omitted, 41, 86 (note); rendered by *de*, 45.

A (from *avoir*), no accent, 35 (note); takes euphonic *t*, 37 (note).

À, prep., accented, 35 (note); *le* and *les* contracted with, 35; repetition of, 50; to translate *to*, *at*, *in*, before names of cities, countries, etc., 119.

Accents, 10; use of, 17.

Active voice contrasted with passive, 225.

Adjective, formation of fem., 42, 97, 189; formation of plur., 42, 97, 191; agreement of, 42, 189, 190, 191; qualifying nouns of different genders, 50; takes no capital in French, 95 (note); irreg. fem., 97; descriptive of material, 191; used as adv., 231.

Demonstrative, 69; table contrasting them with demonstr. pron., 195.

Indefinite, 108.

Numeral, cardinal numbers, 86; pronunciation of, 86 (note); *a* and *one* omitted before *hundred* and *thousand*, 86 (note); dates, 87; ordinal numbers, 92; how to form an ordinal, 92; English ordinals rendered by cardinals in French, 92; *than* rendered by *de* before a number, 88 (note); full list of, 192, 193.

Place of, when shorter than their noun; when denoting color, form, and nationality; when used adjectively; when two or more qualify same noun, 95; list of those usually placed before noun; change in meaning, if placed after, 191.

Possessive, 49; agreement of; repetition of, before every noun, 50; distinction between *ses* and *leur*, 50 (note); *mon*, etc., before fem. noun beginning with vowel or *h* mute, 50, 194; table of, contrasted with poss. pron., 194.

Adverb, how formed, 230; irreg. formation, 231.

Of negation; translation of *not*, 40; of *neither* and *nor*, 53 (note); *pas* dropped, 55 (note); *ne* placed between nom. and obj., 79; employment of, 113; *ne . . . guère*, *ne . . . plus*, etc., 113; omission of *ne*, 114.

Place of, can never separate nom. and obj. when latter is pron., 79; with verb, 66 (note), 231.

Age, how to tell one's, 87.

Aller, note on only reg. tenses of, 132; full conjug., 199, 200.

Alphabet, 9.

And, translation of, in numbers, 87.

Apostrophe, 11; vowels *a* and *e* in def. art. replaced by, 34; suppression of, in rendering poss. in French, 36; *e* in French monosyllables replaced by, 40.

Article, indef., 33; def., 34; repetition of, 39, 183; before titles of rank or profession, 42 (note), 183; table of, 182; employment of, 183; distinction between *le* art. and *le* pron., 157.
Partitive, translation of *some* or *any* before noun, 43; rendered by *de* instead of *du*, etc., 45; not used after *de* meaning *of*, 45 (note); table of, 182.
As soon as, followed by pres. implying fut., requires *aussitôt que* or *dès que*, with fut., in French, 123 (note).
At, before names of countries, towns, etc., 119.
Au, for *à le*, 35.
Aussi, *as*, in negative sentences replaced by *si*, 67.
Aussitôt que, requiring fut., 123 (note).
Aux, for *à les*, 35.
Auxiliary verbs, 36; with passive voice, 225.
Avoir, as auxiliary, 36; implying possession, 37; pres. indic. of, 37, 40; past indef. and its employment, 46; agreement of p. p. used with, 64; used instead of *to be* in certain idioms, 84; fut., 89; impf., 111; cond., 117, 118; idioms formed with *que*, 122; imper., 160; conjugated in full, 202–210.

Be (to), in certain idioms rendered by *avoir*, 84; omission of, as auxiliary, 127; conjugation of, 210–212.
Beau, second m. form, 98.
Better, translation of, 114.
Bien, used for *beaucoup*, 103; comparison of, 114.
Bon, comparison of, 67, 114.

Capital letters, 11.
Cardinal numbers, 86; full list, 192. See also Adjective, *numeral*.
Ce, cet, cette, ces, 69; *ce*, pron., gender of, 130 (note).
Ceci and cela, 69.
Cedilla, 11; under *c* before *a*, *o*, and *u*, 15; in verbs ending in *cer*, 163.
Celle, 69.
Celui, 69.
Cent, no indef. art. before, 86 (note); takes *s* when multiplied and standing before noun, 87; when directly following *mille*, 193 (note).
C'est and ce sont, 71; with disjunc. pron., 81.
Ceux, 69.
Chaque, note on, 108.
Chez, with disjunc. pers. pron., 82.
Ci expressing nearness, 69.
Comparative, formation of, 66; of equality, 67.
Conjugation, four reg., 127, 128, 201; *1st conjug.*: pres. indic., 128, 129; impf., 132; fut., 134; cond., 135; *2d conjug.*: pres. indic., 137; impf., 140; fut., 142; cond., 143; *3d conjug.*: pres. indic., 145; impf., 147; fut., 149; cond., 150; *4th conjug.*: pres. indic., 152; impf., 154; fut., cond., 157; imper. of four conjug., 160, 161; peculiarities of 1st conjug., 163; number of verbs in each conjug., 201 (note); in full of *avoir*, 202–210; *être*, 210–212; *1st conjug.* in full, 213–215; *2d conjug.*, 216–218; *3d conjug.*, 219–221; *4th conjug.*, 222–224.
Conjunctive pronouns, definition, 54, 78; place of, 79; replaced by disjunc. pron., 82.
Consonants, 18–24; gender of, 9 (note); double considered as single, 26; pronunciation of *final*, 30–32.

Dates, translation of, 87; *on* before, never translated, 94 (note).
Days of the week, 93.
De, contracted, 35; used for poss. case, 36; used instead of *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, or *des*, for *some* or *any*, 45;

part. art. *de* not used after *de*, prep., 49 (note); repeated before each noun, 50; with compound substantives, 54 (note); for *in* after superlative, 67; translating *than* before a number, 88 (note); after nouns and adv. of quantity and measure, 103.
Déchoir, 150 (note).
Defective verb, definition, 201.
Definite article, 34; before titles with proper names, 42 (note), 183; with nouns in general sense, 70; employment of, 183.
Degrees of comparison, 66.
De la, de l', 35; as part. art., 43.
Demi, rule of agreement, 116 (note).
Demonstrative adjective. See Adjective.
Demonstrative pronoun. See Pronoun.
Des, for *de les*, 35; as part. art., 43.
Dès que, requiring fut., 123 (note).
Devoir, p.p. of, distinguished from *du*, art., 145 (note); idiomatic use of, 155 (note).
Did, translation of, 44.
Diphthongs, 15; French definition of, 15 (note).
Direct object, how to find, 225.
Disjunctive pronouns, definition, 58; pers., 81; replace conjunc., 82.
Do, as auxiliary, 44, 127.
Domestics, French, how they address their masters, 159 (note).
Dont, for *de qui* and *duquel*, etc., 54, 198.
Du, for *de le*, 35; as part. art., 43.
Dû, p.p. of *devoir*, distinguished from *du*, art., 145 (note).
Duquel, de laquelle, etc., for *dont*, 199.

E, open and closed, definition, 10 (note); elision of, in monosyllables, 40; *e* of *le* never elided before *onze*, 94 (note).
E mute, elision of, when speaking, 28–30; in certain verbs, 30; adj. ending in, 42.
Échoir, 150 (note).
Elision, of *i*, 11; does not occur before certain words, 20 (note); of *a* and *e* in def. art., 34; of *e* in monosyllables, 40; *e* not elided before *onze*, 94 (note).
Elle, conjunc. pron., subject, *she*, *it*, 78; disjunc. pron., *her*, 81; after *c'est*, 81.
Elles, conjunc. pron., 78; disjunc. pron., 81; after *c'est* and *ce sont*, 81.
Employment of moods and tenses. See under heading of various moods and tenses in the grammar.
En, pron., meaning *of it*, etc., *some* or *any*, 105, 106; its place, 106.
En, prep., governing pres. p., 98 (note).
Ès, in university degrees, 183.
Est-ce, for *sont-ce* in inter. sentences, 71.
Est-ce que, with monosyllabic verbs, 152 (note).
Être, pres. indic., 41; past indef., 60; ten p. p. requiring, and agreement of p. p. used with, 63; fut., 76; impf., 100; cond., 117, 118; imper., 160; conjugated in full, 210–212.
Eur, substantives ending in; most of them used as adj., 185.
Eux, disjunc. pron., 81.

Feminine, of adj., 42, 97, 189, 190; list of irreg. fem. of adj., 97; table of endings, 183; of nouns representing animate objects, 184.
First and its compounds, 92.
Foreign nouns, 188, 189.
Fou, second m. form, 98.
From before names of countries, towns, etc., 119.
Future tense, after *quand*, *aussitôt que*, *dès que*, 123 (note). For future of various verbs, see Conjugation.

Gender, 33; of consonants, 9 (note); of pron., adj., or part. referring to two nouns, 50; table of fem. terminations, 183; of nouns representing animate objects, 184; names of professions, 186.
Gens, its gender and that of adj. qualifying it, 191.

H aspirate, list of words beginning with, 20.
Have (to), as auxiliary, 36; implying possession, 37; with certain p.p. rendered by *être*, 63; conjug. in full, 202-210.
Health, translation of *better* and *worse*, 114.
How long, translation of, 103.
Hyphen, 11; in inter. form of verbs, 37 (note); in certain French numerals, 87.

I, elision of, in *si*, 11, 117 (note).
Il, conjunc. pron., subject *he*, *it*, 78.
Ils, conjunc. pron., *they*, 78.
Il y a, conjug. of, 121, 122; distinguished from *voilà*, 122.
Imperative, use of *moi* with, 82; of *avoir* and *être* and the four conjug., 160; no 3d pers., 161; place of pron. in, 161.
In, after superlative, 67; translation of, before names of countries, cities, etc., 119.
Inanimate objects, gender of, 33.
Indefinite adjective. See **Adjective**.
Indefinite article, 33; omission of, 41; translation of *a* or *an* after negative verb, 45.
Indefinite pronoun. See **Pronoun**.
Indirect object, how to find, 225 (note).
Infinitive, endings of the four conjug., 127; rendering English pres. part., 134 (note).
Irregular verb, definition of, 201.

Je, conjunc. pron., subject, *I*, 78.

L', before vowel or *h* mute, 34.
Là, added to noun to express distance, 69.
Le, la, les, 34; *le, la, les*, pron., representing thing spoken of, in answer to question, 114 (note); art. distinguished from pron., 197.
Le mien, le tien, etc., 73.
Lequel, laquelle, etc., translating *which* followed by *of*, 58; agreement of, 58; used for *que*, 199.
Leur, adj., distinguished from *ses*, 50 (note); pron. always invariable, 79.
Linguals, 17, 28.
Lui, conjunc. pron., as ind. obj., 78; disjunc. pron. after prep., 81; after *c'est*, 81.
L'un l'autre, l'un et l'autre, etc., 109.

Mal, comparison of, 114; compared with *mauvais*, 114.
Mauvais, comparison of, 67, 114; compared with *mal*, 114.
Me, French conjunc. pron., 78.
Measure, nouns and adv. of, 103; expressed by *en*, 105.
Même, with disjunc. pron., 82.
Mieux, used for *better* in speaking of health, 114.
Mille, takes no indef. art., 86; written *mil*, in dates, 87; *mille, cent*, etc., 193 (note).
Mine, etc., 73; poss. pron., 73; translation of expressions like *a friend of mine*, 75 (note).
Moi, toi, etc., disjunc. pron., employment of, 81, 82; with *c'est* and *ce sont*, 81; with imper. aff., 82.
Moi-même, toi-même, etc., 82.
Mon, etc., 49; for *ma*, 50.
Monsieur, madame, mademoiselle, before names of relatives, 74.
Months, names of, 87.

More, not followed by *than*, translation of, 105 (note).
My, etc., 49; **myself**, etc., 82.
My own, etc., translation of, 75 (note).

Nasals, 16, 28.
Ne, with *ni*, 53 (note); omitted when *personne* and *rien* stand alone, 54 (note); without *pas*, 55 (note); place of, 79; when dropped with adv. of negation, 114. See also **Adverb.**
Negation, adverbs of. See **Adverb.**
N'est-ce pas? at end of sentence, 98.
Ni requires *ne*, 53 (note).
Not, translation of, 40.
Noun, formation of plur., 34, 52, 187, 188; compounds with *de*, 54 (note); used in general sense, 70; list of irreg. plur., 97; of quantity and measure, 103; with two plur., 188.
Nous, conjunc. pron., 78; disjunc. pron., 81.
Nouveau, second m. form, 98.
Numbers, cardinal, 86, 87, 192; pronunciation of certain numbers, 86 (note); ordinal, 92, 193.

Object, agreement of p.p. with, 64; place and agreement of, when pron., 79; how to tell dir. and ind., 225 (note).
Of the, 35.
On (French), expressing *one*, *people*, *we*, *you*, *they*, 84; may be changed to *l'on*, 85 (note).
On (English), before days and dates, not translated in French, 94 (note).
One, before *hundred* and *thousand*, not translated, 86 (note).
Onze, no elision of *e* mute before, 94 (note).
Ordinal numbers, 92, 193. See also **Adjective**, *numeral*.
Orthography, 9–11.
Oui, replaced by *si*, 114; but not after *n'est-ce pas?* 115.
Own, adj., translation of, 75 (note).

Participle, referring to nouns of different genders, 50; place of, when used as adj., 95.
Past, with *être*, 63; ending in *é* (acute), fem. of, 63 (note); agreement of, 63, 64; with *avoir*, 64; general rules, 229.
Present, never used with *être*, 127; English, rendering of, 134 (note).
Partir, distinguished from *quitter*, 129 (note).
Partitive article, 43, 45. See **Article.**
Passive verb, full conjug., 226–228.
Passive voice, rendering into French, 84; general rules, 225.
Past indefinite, note on use of, 46.
Past tense, translation of, into French, 127.
People, translated by *on*, 84; by *monde*, 103 (note).
Perfect tense. See **Past indefinite.**
Personal pronouns. See **Pronoun.**
Personne, omission of *ne*, 54 (note).
Petit, comparison of, 67, 114; compared with *peu*, 114.
Peu, comparison of, 114; compared with *petit*, 114.
Pis, for *worse* in speaking of health, 114.
Plural, of nouns, formation, 34, 52, 97, 187, 188; of adj., 42, 97, 191; list of irreg. plur. of nouns, 97; nouns with two, 188.
Plusieurs, no fem. form, 85 (note).
Politeness, formulas of, 44.
Possessive adjectives. See **Adjective.**
Possessive case, rendered by prep. *de*, 36.
Possessive pronoun. See **Pronoun.**
Preposition, government of infinitive by, 98 (note); never used at end of clause in French, 232.
Presque, elision of *e* in, 93 (note).

Pronoun, agreement of, 74; definition of, contrasted with adj., 194.
Demonstrative, 69; table of, compared with demonstr. adj., 195.
Indefinite, *on*, 81; place of *tout* with respect to verb, 108; list of, 109.
Interrogative, *qui* and *quoi*, 53; *lequel*, etc., 58.
Personal, standing for two nouns of different genders, 50; list of, 78, 79; order of two, before verb, 79, 195; disjunc., definition of, 81; governed by prep., 82; with imper., 82; place of, with imper., 161, 196; order of precedence, 196; distinction between *le*, pron., and *le*, art., 197.
Possessive, 73; agreement, 74; table of, compared with poss. adj., 194.
Relative, *qui* and *que*, 53, 54; place of, 54; *of which*, *of whom*, and *whose* rendered by *dont*, 54, 198.
Pronunciation, 12–26.
Punctuation, 11.

Qualifying adjectives. See Adjective.
Qualifying adverb, how formed, 230.
Quand, requiring fut., 123.
Quantity in pronunciation, 26–32; general rules, 27.
Quantity, adv. of, 103; nouns of, 103.
Que, rel. pron., 53, 54; inter. pron., 56; forming idioms with *avoir*, 122; *que* and *qui* contrasted, 197.
Qu'est-ce que and **qu'est-ce qui**, 198.
Question, way to put a, 65.
Qui, rel. pron., 53, 54; inter. pron., 56; *à qui* used interrogatively, 56; *qui* and *que* contrasted, 197; *de qui* distinguished from *dont*, 198; *à qui* contrasted with *auquel*, 199.
Qui est-ce qui and **qui est-ce que**, 197.
Quitter distinguished from *partir*, 129 (note).
Quoi, inter. pron., 56; rel. pron., referring to whole clause, 198.
Quoi que (in two words), *whatever*, 199.

R, pronunciation of, 32.
Recapitulations, Lessons I.–IV., 38; V.–IX., 47; X.–XIV., 61; XV.–XX., 76; XXI.–XXIV., 90; XXV.–XXVII., 101; XXVIII.–XXX., 111; XXXI.–XXXIII., 124.
General Recapitulation Exercises, —on number: *l'éléphant*, 166; *les hommes charitables*, 167; on gender: *le hibou*, 168; *l'empereur et la petite paysanne*, 169; on person: *réflexions personnelles d'un écolier*, 171; *le Tasse*, 172; *la religion*, 173; *aveux d'un coupable*, 174; *l'éléphant*, 175; on the interrogative negative: *avantages de la propreté*, 177; *utilité des montagnes*, 178; on the imperative: *conseils aux écoliers*, 179; *aphorismes moraux*, 180.
Relative pronoun. See Pronoun.
Rien, omission of *ne* with, 54 (note).

S, retention of, before *y* and *en*, 165 (note), 200.
'S, s', the English sign of possessive, rendering of, into French, 36.
Salutation forms, 59.
Second, compared with *deuxième*, 92.
Ses, distinguished from *leur*, 50 (note).
Si, *i* of, elided, 11, 117 (note); for *aussi* in negative sentences, 67; used instead of *oui*, 114; neither fut. nor cond. to be used after, in sense of *if*, 128.
Signs, orthographical, *diæresis*, 10; *apostrophe*, *cedilla*, *hyphen*, 11.
Similarity of English and French words, 232; of English and French terminations, 233.

Some or any, translation of, 43; after negation, 45; before adj., 45; when translated by *en*, 105.
Son, 49; for *sa*, 50.
Sound, *duration of*, 26, 27.
Subject, place of pron. as, in inter. form, 37 (note); agreement of p.p. with its, 63; place of, in questions, 65; place of, when pron., 79.
Substantive. See **Noun**.
Superlative, formation of, 66; translation of *in* after, 67; with *c'est* and *ce sont*, 71.
Syllables, *division into*, 25, 26.

T, euphonic, in inter. form of verbs, 37 (note).
Te, pers. pron., 78.
Than, translation of, after superlative, 67.
The. See **Article**, *definite*.
There is, there are, etc., how expressed in French, 121, 122.
This, that, these, those, adj. and pron., 69.
Time, how to tell, 93.
Title, before proper names, 42, 183; *courtesy*, before names of relatives, 74; of sovereigns, how translated, 92.
To, before names of countries, cities, etc., 119; to the, 35.
Ton, 49; for *ta*, 50.
Tonic accent, 28; contrasted with English, 32.
Tout, etc., 108; *tous*, pron., pronunciation of, 108 (note).
Tu, how used, 37 (note).

Un, une. See **Article**, *indefinite*.
Union *of words* in speaking, 30–32.

Verb, after prep. 98 (note); general rules, 127; number in each conjug., 201 (note); note on, ending in *evoir*, 221; similar in French and English, 233.
Auxiliary. See **Avoir** and **Être**.
Regular, terminations of infinitive, 127. See **Conjugation**.
Very, in *very many*, *very much*, 81 (note).
Vieux, second m. form, 98.
Vingt, when multiplied before noun, 87.
Voici and **voilà** distinguished from **il y a**, 122.
Vous, compared with **tu**, 37 (note); conjunc. pron., 78; disjunc. pron., 81; when used for *tu*, agreement of p.p. in passive voice, 226 (note).
Vowels, *single*, 12–14; *combined*, forming simple sounds, 14, 15; *combined*, forming diphthongs, 15.

We, translated by *on*, 84.
What, inter. pron., translated by *que* and *quoi*, 56, 198.
When, followed by pres. implying fut., 123 (note).
Which, rel. pron., translated by *qui* and *que*, 53, 54; *of which*, rel. pron., by *dont*, 54, 198; followed by *of*, by *lequel*, etc., 58; after prep. and referring to whole clause, 198; *to which*, by *auquel*, etc., 199.
Who, rel. pron. translated by *qui*, whom by *que*, 53, 54; inter. pron., both *who* and *whom*, by *qui*, 56; by *qui est-ce qui* and *qui est-ce que*, 197; by *lequel*, etc., 199.
Whose, rel. pron., turned into *of whom* for translation, 53, 54; inter. pron., translated by *à qui*, 56; rel. pron., by *dont*, *duquel*, etc., 198.
Wife, translation of, 107 (note).
Words, *union of*, in speaking, 30–32.
Words similar in the two languages, a list of, 232.
Worse, translation of, 114.

Y, pron., meaning *to it*, *to them*, etc., 105; adv. meaning *there*, 106; place of, 106.
Y a-t-il, conjugation of, 122.

Text-Books in French

FIRST LESSONS

Syms's First Year in French	$0.50
Syms's Second Year in French	1.00
Syms's Third Year in French	1.20
Fasquelle's Introductory French Course	.65
Bullet's First Lessons in French	.50
Dreyspring's Easy Lessons in French	.60
Worman's First French Book	.40
Worman's Second French Book	.40

METHODS

Muzzarelli's Academic French Course. First Year and Second Year. Each	1.00
Duffet's New French Method. (Hennequin)	1 20
Fasquelle's French Course	1.35
Gastineau's Conversation Method with the French	1 25
Languellier and Monsanto's French Course	1.45

READERS

De Fivas's Elementary French Reader	.52
De Fivas's Classic French Reader	1.05
Dreyspring's French Reader	.75
Fasquelle's Colloquial French Reader	.90
Worman's French Echo (Conversation)	.90

LITERATURE

Guerber's Contes et Légendes. Two Parts. Each	.60
Mairet's La Tâche du Petit Pierre. (Healy)	.35
Nodier's Le Chien de Brisquet. (Syms)	.35
Cremieux and Decourcelle's L'Abbé Constantin (François)	.35
Fontaine's Douze Contes Nouveaux	.45
Racine's Iphigénie. (Woodward)	.60
Duffet's French Literature	.72
Fenelon's Télémaque. (Fasquelle)	.90

Copies of any of the above books will be sent prepaid to any address, on receipt of the price by the Publishers:

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(72)

Modern French Texts

Comprising Selected Stories and Readings, carefully edited and accompanied by adequate explanatory notes and vocabularies. They are designed to be used in connection with the study of French, and as an introduction to general French Literature. The series includes;

Contes et Légendes .

By H. A. GUERBER, author of Myths of Greece and Rome, etc.
Part I—Linen, 12mo, 183 pages . . . 60 cents
Part II—Linen, 12mo, 192 pages . . . 60 cents

A collection of Fairy Tales and Legends told in such a pleasing way as to awaken the deepest interest and induce pupils to read to the end.

Mairet's La Tâche du Petit Pierre

Arranged for Reading Classes by Edith Healy.
Boards, 12mo, 140 pages . . . . . 35 cents

This charming story appeared in 1887, and its immediate success was so great that it received the honor of coronation by the French Academy.

Nodier's Le Chien du Brisquet, and Other Stories

Edited for School Use by L. C. Syms, author of First, Second, and Third Years in French. Boards, 12mo, 111 pages 35 cents

A selection of popular French stories by well-known authors, suitable for use in the second or third year of the French course.

L'Abbé Constantin

A Comedy in Three Acts by HECTOR CRÉMIEUX and PIERRE DECOURCELLE. Adapted from the romance of Ludovic Halévy. Edited for school use by Victor E. François, Instructor in French in the University of Michigan.
Boards, 12mo, 111 pages . . . . . 35 cents

Douze Contes Nouveaux

Edited, with Notes and Vocabulary, by C. FONTAINE, Director of French and Spanish Instruction in Washington, D. C., High Schools. Boards, 12mo, 168 pages . . . 45 cents

A collection of selected tales from the writings of Theuriet, Blacke, Halévy, Rameau, Chotel, Véron, Chènevière, France, Coppée, and Arène.

Racine's Iphigénie

Edited by Benjamin Duryea Woodward, B. ès L., Ph.D., of the Department of Romance Languages and Literatures in Columbia University. Cloth, 12mo, 198 pages . . . 60 cents

Copies of the Modern French Texts will be sent prepaid to any address, on receipt of the price by the Publishers:

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(92)

Modern German Texts

The texts of this series have been carefully selected with regard to the interest of the story and the style of language. They are set in large, clear type, uniformly bound in specially designed flexible covers, and furnished at a moderate price.

ARNOLD Ein Regentag auf dem Lande. Edited by A. J. W. Kern	$0 25
BERNHARDT. Im Zwielicht. Vol. I.	.65
Im Zwielicht. Vol. II.	65
BERNHARDT. Freudvoll und Leidvoll	.65
BERNHARDT. Es War Einmal	.65
EBNER-ESCHENBACH. Krambambuli and— KLAUSSMANN. Memoiren eines Offizierburschen } Edited by A. W. Spanhoofd	.25
FREYTAG. Die Journalisten. Edited by J. Norton Johnson	.35
HEYSE. Das Mädchen von Treppi, and Marion. Edited by W. Bernhardt	.30
HILLERN. Höher als die Kirche. Edited by F. A Dauer	.25
LESSING. Minna von Barnhelm. Edited by M. B. Lambert	.50
RICHTER. Selections. Edited by G. S. Collins	.60
RIEHL. Die Vierzehn Nothelfer, and Trost um Trost. Edited by F. K. Sihler	.30
RIEHL. Der Fluch der Schönheit. Edited by M. A. Frost	.30
SCHILLER. Gustav Adolf in Deutschland. Edited by W. Bernhardt	.45
SEIDEL. Die Monate. Edited by R. Arrowsmith	.25
SEIDEL. Der Lindenbaum, and Other Stories. Edited by Ernst Richard	.25
SEIDEL. Herr Omnia. Edited by J. Matthewman	.25
SEIDEL. Leberecht Hünchen und andere Sonderlinge. With Vocabulary. Edited by W. Bernhardt	.50
SPYRI. Rosenresli, and Der Toni Von Kandergrund	.25
STIFTER. Das Heidedorf. Edited by Max Lentz	.25
STORM. Immensee. Edited by F. A. Dauer	.25
VOLKMANN-LEANDER. Träumereien. Edited by A. Hanstein	35
ZSCHOKKE. Der Zerbrochene Krug. Edited by B. Roelker	.25

Sent, prepaid, to any address on receipt of price.

American Book Company

New York • Cincinnati • Chicago

(or)

Germania Texts

Edited by A. W. SPANHOOFD

These Texts include important and interesting chapters from the works of the best German authors, and are intended for advanced students in Academies, Colleges, Universities, and German-American schools, who wish to make a thorough study of German Literature. They are issued in pamphlet form at a uniform price of ten cents.

The series embraces the following works:

1. Bürgers Lenore. With Sketch of Bürger's Life and Works and Extracts from ERICH SCHMIDT's celebrated essay.
2. Vergleichung Goethes und Schillers; Lessings und Herders. G. G. GERVINUS.
3. Klopstocks Bedeutung fur sein Zeitalter. C. L. CHOLEVIUS.
4. Reineke Fuchs. H. KURZ.
5. Die Krönung Josefs II. GOETHE. With Notes.
6. Lessings Dramaturgie. G. G. GERVINUS. Lessings Minna von Barnhelm. H. KURZ.
7. Meier Helmbrecht. Dr. H. KHULL.
8. Wieland. From GOETHE's Gedächtnisrede.
9. Wielands Oberon. H. KURZ.
10. Schiller's Lied von der Glocke. With Notes. A. W. Spanhoofd.
11. Matthias Claudius als Volksdichter. W. HERBST.
12. Schiller's Kraniche des Ibykus and Eleusische Fest. With Notes. A. W. Spanhoofd.

Copies of any of the Germania Texts will be sent prepaid to any address, on receipt of the price (10 cents) by the Publishers:

American Book Company

NEW YORK • CINCINNATI • CHICAGO

(72)

Text-Books in German

METHODS

Edgren and Fossler's Brief German Grammar	$0.75
Ahn's German Grammar	.70
Bernhardt's Deutsches Sprach- und Lesebuch. Parts I. and II. Each	1.10
Dreyspring's Easy Lessons in German	.60
Dreyspring's Cumulative Method	1.20
Keller's First Year in German	1.00
Keller's Second Year in German	1.20
Worman's First German Book	.30
Worman's Second German Book	.40
Worman's Elementary German Grammar	1.00
Worman's Complete German Grammar	1.40

READERS

Eclectic German Readers

German Primer (Deutsche Fibel)	.20
German First Reader (Erstes Lesebuch)	.25
German Second Reader (Zweites Lesebuch)	.35
German Third Reader (Drittes Lesebuch)	.42
German Fourth Reader (Viertes Lesebuch)	.60
German Fifth Reader (Fünftes Lesebuch)	.72
German Script Primer (Schreib und Lesefibel)	.20
German First Book (Erstes Schulbuch)	.20
German Primer and First Reader (Fibel und Erstes Lesebuch)	.20
German Advanced Fourth Reader (Höheres Viertes Lesebuch)	.60
Dreyspring's First German Reader	.60

LITERATURE

Keller's Bilder aus der Deutschen Litteratur	.75
Bernhardt's Litteraturgeschichte	.75

Modern German Texts: Carefully selected with regard to interest and style, and supplied with notes, vocabularies, etc. Price List of these texts furnished on application.

Sent, prepaid, to any address on receipt of price.

American Book Company

New York • Cincinnati • Chicago

Text-Books in German

METHODS

Edgren and Fossler's Brief German Grammar	$0.75
Ahn's German Grammar	.70
Bernhardt's Deutsches Sprach- und Lesebuch. Parts I. and II. Each	1.10
Dreyspring's Easy Lessons in German	.60
Dreyspring's Cumulative Method	1.20
Keller's First Year in German	1.00
Keller's Second Year in German	1.20
Worman's First German Book	.30
Worman's Second German Book	.40
Worman's Elementary German Grammar	1.00
Worman's Complete German Grammar	1.40

READERS

Eclectic German Readers

German Primer (Deutsche Fibel)	.20
German First Reader (Erstes Lesebuch)	.25
German Second Reader (Zweites Lesebuch)	.35
German Third Reader (Drittes Lesebuch)	.42
German Fourth Reader (Viertes Lesebuch)	.60
German Fifth Reader (Fünftes Lesebuch)	.72
German Script Primer (Schreib und Lesefibel)	.20
German First Book (Erstes Schulbuch)	.20
German Primer and First Reader (Fibel und Erstes Lesebuch)	.20
German Advanced Fourth Reader (Höheres Viertes Lesebuch)	.60
Dreyspring's First German Reader	.60

LITERATURE

Keller's Bilder aus der Deutschen Litteratur	.75
Bernhardt's Litteraturgeschichte	.75

Modern German Texts: Carefully selected with regard to interest and style, and supplied with notes, vocabularies, etc. Price List of these texts furnished on application.

Sent, prepaid, to any address on receipt of price.

American Book Company

New York • Cincinnati • Chicago

To avoid fine, this book should be returned on
or before the date last stamped below

50M—9-40